

# HEROIC JAPAN

A HISTORY OF THE WAR BETWEEN

CHINA & JAPAN

BY

F. WARRINGTON EASTLAKE, Ph.D.

AND

YAMADA YOSHI-AKI, LL.B.

PRINCIPAL OF THE CHAUTAUQUAN ASSOCIATION OF JAPAN

LONDON

SAMPSON LOW, MARSTON & COMPANY

(LIMITED)

St. Dunstan's House

FETTER LANE, FLEET STREET, E.C.

© 1897

UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY

## PREFACE.

---

THE compilation of the present volume was begun shortly after the battle of Port Arthur, and the last word was written on September 2nd of the present year. The undertaking has been of great magnitude, and this for several reasons. In the first place, no precise, correct History of the War has as yet been published in any language. There are numerous Japanese compilations and one or two of foreign authorship. But all these were compiled when the actual facts were still, to a very great extent, unknown, and are therefore marred by serious errors in many particulars. But so far as the present work is concerned, it is absolutely authentic; for not only have the Imperial Household, Foreign, War, and Navy Departments given the authors free access to all documents, but every word in the book has been thoroughly and repeatedly revised by the Authorities concerned, several chapters having thus been written and re-written six and even more times. More than this, the authors have had personal interviews or communication with the Commanders of the various Regiments; with most of the officers and men whose deeds are enumerated; with the highest officials of the Bank of Japan, Red Cross Society, Japan Mail Steamship Company, etc., etc., in fact, leaving no stone unturned to make the whole narrative thoroughly trustworthy and free from error even in minutiae. To do this Mr. Yamada has travelled literally thousands of miles throughout the length and breadth of Japan. And just here it would be well to state the manner of collaboration. Dr. Eastlake, the American author, who had, from the inception of the War, been rendering into English and compiling, for local publication, from Japanese periodicals of various kinds, narratives of the heroic deeds and exploits

## PREFACE.

performed by the Army and Navy of Japan, conferred with Mr. Yamada, President of the Japan Chautauquan Association, as to the advisability of bringing out these storiettes in book form. Mr. Yamada, who was greatly desirous that the Occident should learn the truth about the War and that the labours of his countrymen should be represented with fidelity and exactitude, at once proposed to publish a book on the War, working as co-author with Dr. Eastlake. But upon questioning the Naval and Military Authorities in the early part of 1895, it was found that the larger portion of the narratives taken from Japanese newspapers and magazines was either incorrect or else quite unfounded; and, what was still more to the purpose, a vast quantity of fine material had never been published, some of the most touching or heroic stories being quite unknown even in Japan. And so it comes that most of the "Brave Deeds" published in the present volume are now made public for the first time. Immediately on learning the real situation, the test of rigid and impartial criticism was applied to what had already been laboriously compiled—with the result that one-half had to be expunged and the other entirely re-written. The authors have often groaned in spirit on learning that what they considered their best "bits" were untrue or not borne out by the facts. And we must give the utmost honour to the Army and Navy Departments for their excellent conduct in this context. Time and again have they had the authors ruthlessly strike out stories that had found ready credence the Empire over and been quoted and requoted in the columns of the foreign press at home and abroad. Nothing has thus been published but actual fact: fact abundantly proved and amply supported by many witnesses.

It was soon found that the mere compilation of heroic anecdotes was insufficient. There must be some outline sketch of each battle, or else the narratives would be unintelligible. And so the next step was the concluding to compile a short History of the War as a whole, the "Brave Deeds" to come at the end of each chapter. In May, 1895, it was confidently expected that the work would be completed in September of the same year. And yet nearly every word written up to that time has since had to be re-written, while a very large portion has had to be struck out. Moreover, the troops were then returning from the seat of war, and each Regiment as it came back was put to the interrogatory, entailing further and vast changes. In March of the present year, 1896, it was positively expected to publish in May, and announcements publicly made in that sense; yet from the various Departments, Societies, etc., manuscript kept pouring in: so that instead of being 400 pages long—as announced

in April—our book numbers 526 pages, and even then we have been compelled to add five appendices. We have, however, kept to the main idea of showing the heroic side of this great conflict : and just here an explanatory word is necessary. We do not—let us state it emphatically—we do not for a moment contend that the many score of “ Brave Deeds ” narrated prove the superiority of Japan to any other land. We have written these simply to show that the qualities of martial heroism, implicit soldierly obedience, unflinching sense of duty, noble unselfishness and deathless courage are to be found in this Empire of Japan. Withal there is one phase of bravery which seems peculiar to this country. It is this and this alone which we have tried to emphasize and thus bring to the notice of the world. Many of the anecdotes are simple and unassuming, nor do we claim for them great merit ; they are recorded to let the world see and know that the Japanese are, as a military people, the compeers of the most renowned nations of the Occident.

The authors are, at the same time, fully aware of the defects in a work of this kind. The present volume is the outcome of two full years of unceasing, painstaking labour ; yet it is compiled under pressure, and this may often be traced in the pages. Were we to begin to thank those who have been instrumental in assisting the compilation of this work, our list would be a long one. All that we can do here is express our profound gratitude to the five great Departments of State : the Imperial Household, Army, Navy, Communications, and Foreign Office.

A word in conclusion with regard to the names of places. We have given the Korean names as written by Koreans, the Chinese as pronounced by themselves. Where, however, a certain orthography has been widely adopted, though not representing the true sound of the ideographs, we have kept—in order to avoid confusion—to the received and popular form. In Chinese names we have hyphenated such terminal affixes as *shan* (mountain or hill) ; *tse, tsuen*, etc. (village) ; *ching* (or *chéng*, a walled city, a castle-town or bourg) ; *ling* (a mountain pass or hamlet) ; *ho* (river or stream) ; *tō, dō*, or *tao* (island) ; *fu* (city) ; *kau* (or *kow*, mouth—a harbour, port) ; and many other similar terminations. It must finally be noted that such syllables as *kia, kiao* or *kéao* are generally rendered with the softer *chia, chiao* or *cheao*. We note that we have given personal names as they are written in Japan : the surname preceding the given name. It is our earnest hope that this book, unpretentious though it be, will redound to the fair fame of Japan the world over ; that the West will now learn the true history of the great War, and give the victrix that credit which is so truly her due. With patriotic ardour as with admiring devotion has



this book been compiled. And as we write the final words and review in spirit the noble story of the War, to our lips also rises the cheer that so often sounded from the field of battle, above the roar of cannon and the roll of musketry : *Tennō Heika Banzai! Teikoku Banzai!*

F. W. EASTLAKE, Ph. D.

YAMADA YOSHI-AKI, LL. B.

September, 1896.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.



PREFACE

THE IMPERIAL RESCRIPT

TRANSLATION OF THE DIPLOMATIC CORRESPONDENCE

CHAP. I.

THE NAVAL BATTLE AT PHUNGDO .. .. . Page 1

CHAP. II.

THE BATTLE OF SŌNGHWAN .. .. . ,, 13

CHAP. III.

THE BATTLE OF PHYŎNGYANG .. .. . ,, 26

CHAP. IV.

THE SEA-FIGHT OFF HAIYANG .. .. . ,, 75

CHAP. V.

THE INVASION OF MANCHURIA .. .. . ,, 110

CHAP. VI.

THE TAKING OF KINCHOW .. .. . ,, 126

CHAP. VII.

PORT ARTHUR, THE GIBRALTAR OF CHINA .. .. . ,, 152

CHAP. VIII.

THE DEFENCE OF KINCHOW .. .. . ,, 182

CHAP. IX.

THE CAPTURE OF SUIYEN-CHING .. .. . ,, 200

CHAP. X.		
SHIRMISH BETWEEN RECONNOITRING PARTIES AND BATTLE		
OF TSAUHO-RAN .. .. .	Page	213
CHAP. XI.		
THE TAKING OF TOMUH-CHING .. .. .	„	221
CHAP. XII.		
THE CAPTURE OF HAICHING .. .. .	„	227
CHAP. XIII.		
THE STRUGGLE AT FUNGHWANG-CHING .. .. .	„	238
CHAP. XIV.		
THE BATTLE OF KANGWASAE .. .. .	„	246
CHAP. XV.		
THE BATTLE AND CAPTURE OF KAIPING .. .. .	„	256
CHAP. XVI.		
THE CHINESE ATTEMPTS TO RECAPTURE HAICHING .. .. .	„	277
CHAP. XVII.		
THE TAKING OF WEI-HAI-WEI .. .. .	„	297
CHAP. XVIII.		
THE BATTLE OF TAPING-SHAN .. .. .	„	341
CHAP. XIX.		
THE FIGHTING AT KWANTEN-SHWÊN .. .. .	„	351
CHAP. XX.		
THE BATTLE AND CAPTURE OF NEWCHWANG .. .. .	„	356
CHAP. XXI.		
THE TAKING OF YINGKOW .. .. .	„	374
CHAP. XXII.		
THE BATTLE AND CAPTURE OF TIENCHWANGTAI .. .. .	„	386
CHAP. XXIII.		
THE CAPTURE OF THE PESCADORES .. .. .	„	400
CHAP. XXIV.		
HIS MAJESTY THE EMPEROR .. .. .	„	407
CHAP. XXV.		
HEAD QUARTERS .. .. .	„	412

## CHAP. XXVI.

THE MEDICAL STAFF AND ITS WORK .. .. . Page 418

## CHAP. XXVII.

THE FIELD POST .. .. . ,, 427

## CHAP. XXVIII.

THE JAPAN STEAMSHIP COMPANY .. .. . ,, 435

## CHAP. XXIX.

THE BANK OF JAPAN .. .. . ,, 446

## CHAP. XXX.

THE RED CROSS .. .. . ,, 465

## CHAP. XXXI.

THOSE AT HOME .. .. . ,, 492

## CHAP. XXXII.

BRIEF NOTICE .. .. . ,, 502

## CHAP. XXXIII.

THE TREATY OF PEACE .. .. . ,, 516

## APPENDIX A.

THE TEXT OF THE TREATY OF PEACE .. .. . ,, 528

## APPENDIX B.

JAPANESE TEXT OF THE WAR SONGS .. .. . ,, 535

## APPENDIX C.

THE PORT ARTHUR STORY .. .. . ,, 541

## APPENDIX D.

THE EXTRAORDINARY SESSION OF THE IMPERIAL DIET .. .. . ,, 544

## APPENDIX E.

THE EMPEROR'S HOME COMING .. .. . ,, 549



## IMPERIAL RESCRIPT.

(*Translation.*)

**W**E, by the Grace of Heaven, EMPEROR OF JAPAN, seated on a Throne occupied by the same dynasty from time immemorial, do hereby make proclamation to all Our loyal and brave subjects as follows :—

We hereby declare war against China, and We command each and all of Our competent authorities, in obedience to Our wish and with a view to the attainment of the national aim, to carry on hostilities by sea and by land against China, with all the means at their disposal, consistently with the Law of Nations.

During the past three decades of Our reign, Our constant aim has been to further the peaceful progress of the country in civilization; and being sensible of the evils inseparable from complications with foreign States, it has always been Our pleasure to instruct Our Ministers of State to labour for the promotion of friendly relations with Our Treaty Powers. We are gratified to know that the relations of Our Empire with those Powers have yearly increased in good-will and in friendship. Under the circumstances, We were unprepared for such a conspicuous want of amity and of good faith as has been manifested by China in her conduct toward this country in connection with the Korean affair.

Korea is an independent State. She was first introduced into the family of nations by the advice and under the guidance of Japan. It has, however, been China's habit to designate Korea as her dependency, and both openly and secretly to interfere with her domestic affairs. At the time of the recent civil insurrection in Korea, China despatched troops thither, alleging that her purpose was to afford succour to her dependent State. We, in virtue of the Treaty concluded with Korea in 1882, and looking to possible emergencies, caused a military force to be sent to that country.

Wishing to procure for Korea freedom from the calamity of

perpetual disturbance, and thereby to maintain the peace of the East in general, Japan invited China's co-operation for the accomplishment of that object. But China, advancing various pretexts, declined Japan's proposal. Thereupon Japan advised Korea to reform her administration so that order and tranquillity might be preserved at home, and so that the country might be able to discharge the responsibilities and duties of an independent State abroad. Korea has already consented to undertake the task. But China has secretly and insidiously endeavoured to circumvent and to thwart Japan's purpose. She has, further, procrastinated and endeavoured to make warlike preparations both on land and at sea. When those preparations were completed, she not only sent large reinforcements to Korea, with a view to the forcible attainment of her ambitious designs, but even carried her arbitrariness and insolence to the extent of opening fire upon Our ships in Korean waters. China's plain object is to make it uncertain where the responsibility resides of preserving peace and order in Korea, and not only to weaken the position of that State in the family of nations,—a position obtained for Korea through Japan's efforts,—but also to obscure the significance of the treaties recognizing and confirming that position. Such conduct on the part of China is not only a direct injury to the rights and interests of this Empire, but also a menace to the permanent peace and tranquillity of the Orient. Judging from her actions, it must be concluded that China, from the beginning, has been bent upon sacrificing peace to the attainment of her sinister object. In this situation, ardent as Our wish is to promote the prestige of the country abroad by strictly peaceful methods, We find it impossible to avoid a formal declaration of war against China. It is Our earnest wish that, by the loyalty and valour of Our faithful subjects, peace may soon be permanently restored and the glory of the Empire be augmented and completed.

Given this 1st day of the eighth month of the 27th year of *Meiji*.

His Imperial Majesty's Sign-manual.

Countersignatures of all the Ministers of State.

The following are translations of the despatches laid by Count Ito before the House of Peers. They clearly show the progress of events leading up to the war :—

## No. 1.

*Chinese Legation, Tokyo, the 3rd day, the 5th month, the 20th year of Kwang-sü. (The 7th day, the 6th month, the 27th year of Meiji.)*

MONSIEUR LE MINISTRE,—*I have the honour to inform Your Excellency that I am in receipt of a telegram from His Excellency Li, Superintendent of Commerce of the Pei-yang, to the effect that in the Convention of the 11th year of Kwang-sü (the 18th year of Meiji) between China and Japan it is provided that should there arise in future the necessity on the part of China to despatch troops to Korea owing to the existence of any disturbance in that country, the fact shall be previously communicated to Japan and that the troops shall be withdrawn at once on the cession of the disturbance and none shall be left behind, and the telegram adds that a communication has been received from the Korean Government containing the following statement :—*

*The people in Chölla-do, who are vicious in habit, having, under the leaders of the Tong-Hak attacked and taken several towns and villages, proceeded northward, and took possession of Chhôngju. The Government troops which were despatched to suppress the revolt, have not been successful. If this disturbance continues to spread and is allowed to exist for a long time, much trouble may be given to China. When in the years 1882 and 1884 we suffered from internal commotions, the uprisings were in each case suppressed by the troops of China on our behalf. In accordance with those precedents we hereby present an earnest application for despatch of some troops to speedily suppress the disturbance. As soon as the revolt is quelled, we will request the withdrawal of the troops and shall not ask for their longer detention so that they may not suffer the hardships of being abroad for a long period.*

*The telegram further states that the application upon examination is found to be urgent both in words and in fact, and that it is in harmony with our constant practice to protect our tributary states by sending our troops to assist them. These circumstances were accordingly submitted to His Imperial Majesty, and in obedience to his will, General Yeh, Commander of the troops in Chili, has been ordered to proceed at once to Chölla and Chhôngju in Korea with selected troops, and to speedily suppress the disturbance in such manner as he may deem most convenient in order to restore the peace of our tributary state and to dispel the anxiety of the subjects of every nation residing in Korea for commercial purposes, and at the same time the General is commanded to return with the troops as soon as the desired object is attained.*



*The telegram finally declares that His Excellency the Minister to Japan is required to make communication in pursuance of the said Convention and is telegraphed to that effect and is accordingly instructed to at once communicate the matter to the Japanese Foreign Office.*

*In making therefore the foregoing communication to Your Excellency, I avail myself of the opportunity to renew to you the assurances of my highest consideration.*

(Signed)

WANG.

*His Excellency Monsieur MUTSU, H.I.F.M.'s  
Minister for Foreign Affairs.*

No. 2.

*Department of Foreign Affairs, Tokyo, the 7th day,  
the 6th month, the 27th year of Meiji.*

MONSIEUR LE MINISTRE,—*I have the honour to acknowledge the receipt of Your Excellency's note of to-day acquainting me, in accordance with the provision of the Convention of the 18th day of the 4th month of the 18th year of Meiji between our two Governments that Your Government have despatched troops to Korea.*

*In reply, I beg to declare that although the words "tributary state" appear in your note, the Imperial Government, have never recognized Korea as a tributary state of China.*

*I avail myself, &c., &c., &c.,*

(Signed)

MUTSU MUNEMITSU,

*Minister for Foreign Affairs,*

*His Excellency Monsieur WANG, H.I.C.M.'s E.E. and M.P.*

No. 3.

*Japanese Legation, Peking, the 7th day, the 6th  
month, the 27th year of Meiji.*

MESSEURS LE PRINCE ET LES MINISTRES,—*In pursuance of instructions which I have just received from His Imperial Majesty's Government, I have the honour, in accordance with the provision of the Treaty of the 18th day of the 4th month of the 18th year of Meiji between our two Governments, to acquaint Your Highness and Your Excellencies that owing to the existence of a disturbance of a grave nature in Korea necessitating the presence of Japanese troops there, it is the intention of the Imperial Government to send a body of Japanese troops to that country.*

(Signed)

KOMURA JUTARO,

*H.I.F.M.'s Chargé d'Affaires.*

*His Highness and Their Excellencies of the Tsung-li Yamén.*

## No. 4.

*Tsung-li Yamèn, the 6th day, the 5th month, the 20th year of Kwang-sü, (the 9th day, the 6th month, the 27th year of Meiji.)*

MONSIEUR LE CHARGE D'AFFAIRES,—*We have the honour to acknowledge the receipt of your note under date of the 4th instant (the 7th day, the 6th month of the Japanese Calender) informing us that you have been instructed by your Government to acquaint us, in accordance with the provision of the Convention between the two countries, that, owing to the existence of a disturbance of a grave nature in Korea, Japanese troops will be despatched to that country.*

*Our country has despatched troops to Korea in compliance with an application from that country, for the purpose of assisting her to suppress the insurgents, and the measure is in accordance with the practice hitherto pursued by our country in protecting tributary states. Besides the sole object being the suppression of the insurgents in the interior, the troops are to be withdrawn as soon as that object is attained. Although the condition of Finsen and Fusan is at present quiet and peaceful our vessels will be for a while stationed there for the protection of commerce carried on at these ports.*

*The sole object of your country in sending troops is evidently to protect the Legation, Consulates, and commercial people in Korea, and consequently it may not be necessary on the part of your country to despatch a great number of troops and besides, as no application therefore has been made by Korea, it is requested that no troops shall proceed to the interior of Korea so that they may not cause alarm to the people. And moreover, since it is feared that in the event that soldiers of the two nations should meet on the way, cases of unexpected accident might occur, owing to the difference of language and military etiquette, we beg to request in addition that you will be good enough to telegraph the purport of this communication to the Government of Japan.*

*Accept, Sir, the renewed assurances, &c., &c., &c.,*

PRESIDENT AND MEMBERS OF TSUNG-LI YAMÈN.

KOMURA, Esq.,

*H.I. F.M.'s Chargé d'Affaires.*

## No. 5.

*Japanese Legation, Peking, the 12th day,  
the 6th month, the 27th year of Meiji.*

MESSIEURS LE PRINCE ET LES MINISTRES,—*Having received your note under date of the 9th instant acquainting me that the despatching of troops to Korea is in accordance with the practice hitherto pursued by China in protecting*

her tributary states and that no necessary exists on the part of Japan to send a large number of troops there and requesting that those troops shall not be sent to the interior of Korea, I did not fail at once to communicate by telegram the purport of that note to my Government, and I have now the honour to inform Your Highness and Excellencies that I am in receipt of a reply by telegraph to the following effect:—

The Imperial Japanese Government have never recognized Korea as a tributary state of China. Japan dispatched her troops in virtue of the Chemulpho Convention and in so doing she has followed the procedure laid down in the Treaty of Tientsin. As to the number of troops, the Japanese Government are compelled to exercise their own judgment. Although no restriction is placed upon the movement of the Japanese troops in Korea, they will not be sent where their presence is not deemed necessary. The Japanese troops are under strict discipline, and the Japanese Government are confident that they will not precipitate a collision with the Chinese forces. It is hoped that China has adopted similar precautions.

I avail myself, &c., &c., &c ,

(Signed)

KOMURA,

H. I. J. M.'s Chargé d'Affaires.

His Highness and Their Excellencies of the Tsung-li Yamén.

No. 6.

Department of Foreign Affairs, Tokyo, the 17th day, the 6th month, 27th year of Meiji.

MONSIEUR LE MINISTRE,—I have the honour to inform Your Excellency that the following is a résumé of the proposals made in my interview with you yesterday to your Government on behalf of the Imperial Government in respect of the present events in Korea as well as with a view to the adjustment of her affairs in future:—

As to the present events, Japan and China to unite their efforts for speedy suppression of the disturbance of her insurgent people. After the suppression of the disturbance, Japan and China, with a view to the improvement of the internal administration of Korea, to respectively send a number of Commissioners charged with the duty of investigating measures of improvement, in the first place on the following general points:—

(a.) Examination of the financial administration.

(b.) Selection of the Central and Local Officials.

(c.) Establishment of an army necessary for national defence in order to preserve the peace of the land.

*In making the foregoing communication, I avail myself, &c., &c., &c.*

(Signed)

MUTSU MUNEMITSU,  
Minister for Foreign Affairs.

*His Excellency Monsieur WANG, H.I.C.M.'s E.E. and M.P.*

No. 7.

*Chinese Legation, Tokyo, the 18th day, the 5th month, the 20th year of Kwang-sü, (the 22nd day, the 6th month of the 27th year of Meiji).*

MONSIEUR LE MINISTRE.—*I have the honour to inform Your Excellency that I am in receipt of a telegram from my Government to the effect that having carefully considered the proposal made by your Government in respect to the events in Korea and the adjustment of her affairs in future, the Chinese Government would reply as follows:—*

*As the disturbance in Korea has already been suppressed, it is no longer essential to trouble the Chinese forces on Korea's behalf, and therefore no necessity exists to consider the proposition that our two countries shall co-operate in suppressing the disturbance.*

*In regard to the adjustment of Korean affairs in future, the idea may be excellent; but the measures of improvement must be left to Korea herself. Even China herself would not interfere with the internal administration of Korea, and Japan having from the very first recognized the independence of Korea, can not have the right to interfere with the same.*

*As to the withdrawal of troops from Korea after the suppression of the disturbance, provision on that subject exists in the Treaty of 1885, concluded between the two countries, and therefore it is not required to discuss the matter over again on this occasion.*

*The above has already been communicated to Your Excellency in our interview and in now repeating it for your further consideration, I avail myself, &c., &c., &c.*

(Signed)

WANG,  
H.I.C.M.'s E.E. and M.P.

*His Excellency Monsieur MUTSU, H.I.C.M.'s Minister for Foreign Affairs.*

No. 8.

*Department of Foreign Affairs, Tokyo, the 22nd day, the 6th month, the 27th year of Meiji.*

MONSIEUR LE MINISTRE,—*I have the honour to acknowledge the receipt of*

*Your Excellency's note of the 22nd instant, in which Your Excellency, in pursuance of instructions from the Imperial Chinese Government, rejects the proposals advanced by His Imperial Majesty's Government for the tranquillization and amelioration of Korea.*

*The Imperial Government, much to their regret, find it impossible to share the hopeful views entertained by Your Excellency's Government regarding the actual situation in Korea at the present time.*

*Sad experience teaches us that the Peninsular Kingdom is the theatre of political intrigues and civil revolts and disturbances of such frequent recurrence as to justify the conclusion that the Government of that country is lacking in some of the elements which are essential to responsible independence.*

*The interests of Japan in Korea, arising from propinquity as well as commerce, are too important and far-reaching to allow her to view with indifference the deplorable condition of affairs in that Kingdom.*

*In this situation an attitude of unconcern on the part of Japan would not only be a denial of the sentiments of friendship and good correspondence which the Imperial Government entertain for Korea, but it would be a censurable disregard of the law of self-preservation.*

*The necessity for the adoption of measures looking to the peace and tranquillity of Korea is, for the reasons already given, a demand which the Imperial Government cannot permit to pass unheeded, for so long as those measures are delayed so long will the cause of the disorder exist.*

*In the estimation of the Imperial Government therefore the withdrawal of their forces should be consequent upon the establishment of some understanding that will serve to guarantee the future peace, order, and good government of the country. That course of action is, moreover, it seems to His Imperial Majesty's Government, not only in perfect harmony with the spirit of the Tientsin Convention, but it accords with the dictates of reasonable precaution.*

*Should the Government of China continue to hold views antagonistic to those which I have frankly and in good faith presented to Your Excellency, it cannot be expected that the Imperial Government will, under the circumstances, feel at liberty to sanction the present retirement of their troops from Korea.*

*I avail myself, &c., &c., &c.*

(Signed)

MUTSU MUNEMITSU,  
*Minister for Foreign Affairs.*

*His Excellency Monsieur WANG, H.I.C.M's. E.E. and M.P.*

## No. 9.

*Japanese Legation, Peking, the 14th day, the 7th month, the 27th year of Meiji.*

MESSIEURS LE PRINCE ET LES MINISTRES,—*Having communicated to H. I. J. M.'s Minister for Foreign Affairs on the same day, the particulars of the statement made by Your Highness and Excellencies in my interview with you at the Tsung-li Yamén on the 9th day, the 7th, month, the 27th year of Meiji, I have the honour to inform you that I am just in receipt of a telegram from the Minister to the following effect :—*

*The disturbances which are of frequent occurrence in Korea have their source in the derangement of internal administration of that country. Consequently, the Imperial Government believe it best to encourage the Korean Government to eradicate the cause of disturbance by introducing internal administrative reforms and the Imperial Government considered that for the purpose of enabling Korea to accomplish the desired reforms, nothing would be better than the conjoint assistance of the Governments of Japan and China which have in common a vital interest in that country. Accordingly the Imperial Government proposed to the Imperial Chinese Government that such assistance be given to Korea; but, to their surprise, the Imperial Chinese Government definitely rejected the proposal of Japan and limited themselves solely to a request for the withdrawal of the Japanese troops from Korea. Recently Her Britannic Majesty's Minister at Peking, animated by friendship and goodwill towards Japan and China, tendered his good offices and endeavoured to reconcile the differences existing between the two countries, but the Imperial Chinese Government still continued solely to insist upon the retirement of the Japanese forces and manifested no disposition to acquiesce in the views of the Imperial Japanese Government. The only conclusion deducible from these circumstances is that the Chinese Government are disposed to precipitate complications; and in this juncture the Imperial Japanese Government find themselves relieved of all responsibility for any eventuality that may, in future, arise out of the situation.*

*In enclosing herewith the translation of the above telegram, I avail myself, &c., &c., &c.*

(Signed)

KOMURA,

*H. I. J. M.'s Chargé d'Affaires.*

*His Highness and Their Excellencies of the Tsung-li Yamén.*



## CHAPTER I.

### THE NAVAL BATTLE AT PHUNG-DŌ (*Hō-tō*).

---

#### I.—HOW THE WAR BEGAN.

THE position of the Korean Peninsula is of vital importance to both Japan and China. The possession of Korea by a foreign power, carries with it the command of the Gulf of Pechili, and therefore of the sea-route to the capital of China. Moreover it gives easy access to Manchuria, the cradle of the present Chinese dynasty. On the other hand, Tsushima, Japan's westernmost insular possession, is within a few hours' sailing of the Korean littoral, so that the retention or annexation of the Peninsula by either China or a European power, would be equivalent to Japan's having a possible foe and certain rival at her very gates. Under these circumstances, it was, and is, Japan's policy to recognize and encourage to the utmost Korean autonomy; as well as to ensure, by force of arms if need be, the independence of her weak and misgoverned neighbour.

Without referring to the history of the remoter past, the first occasion on which Korea came prominently to the fore in modern times was in 1868, when the Shōgunate was abolished in Japan and the supreme rule of the whole country restored to its lawful chief, H. I. M. the Emperor. An embassy was despatched at this time to announce the fact of the Restoration to the Korean Government; but the ambassador was refused an audience. This unwise act naturally gave great umbrage to the Japanese authorities, and there was much desire expressed to invade and humble the haughty Peninsular Kingdom. Happily, however, the views of the peace party finally prevailed, and Korea was left to



do and think as she pleased. Yet once again, in the summer of 1873, the war-spirit in Japan was fanned into vigour when Korea gratuitously insulted this Empire by declaring her scornful contempt for a nation which had discarded the majority of its national institutions and adopted, in their place, those of Europe and America. This speech cost Korea dear. Count (then Mr.) Soyejima was at once sent to China in order to ascertain the exact relations existing between the Chinese Empire and Korea; and it was on this memorable occasion that the Peking authorities, possibly in view of impending complications, positively denied that Korea was a tributary state or that China was Korea's suzerain. Two years later, in August 1875, a Japanese man-of-war engaged in surveying and taking soundings in Korean waters, anchored off a small island on the west coast, and was fired upon by the forts on the island. In consequence of this episode, an embassy was sent from Japan to demand satisfaction from the Korean Government. After many vexatious delays the Seoul authorities finally proffered an apology and, for the first time in the history of the Peninsula, a Treaty was concluded with Japan (February, 1876), wherein Korea assumed the attitude of a wholly independent power: thus confirming the statements made to Count Soyejima by the Chinese Government three years previously. The first article of this treaty explicitly states that "Chosön (Korea), being an independent State, enjoys the same rights as does Japan;" and these same words recur thereafter in the Treaties made with the United States (1882), Great Britain (1883), and other European Powers. "China did not, however, by any means intend that Korea should exercise the independence thus conventionally recognised. A Chinese Resident was placed in Seoul, and system of steady but covert influence in Korea's domestic and foreign affairs was inaugurated. Japan chiefly suffered by these anomalous conditions. China had always entertained a rooted apprehension of Japanese aggression in the Peninsula, and that distrust tinged all the influence exerted by her agents there. It would be an endless task to recapitulate the occasions on which Japan was made sensible of the discrimination thus exercised against her. Little by little this consciousness roused her umbrage, and although no single occasion con-

stituted a sufficient ground for strong international protest, the Japanese people gradually acquired a sense of being perpetually thwarted, baffled, and humiliated by China's interference in the Peninsular Kingdom's affairs."\*

In 1882, the maladministration of the Mins or members of the Korean Queen's family, who had for nearly eight years filled the highest offices of state, resulted in a revolt, in which principally the members of the older Korean army took part. Without going into particulars, it is sufficient to state that the revolting soldiers seized the King and effected the restoration of their former protector and commander, the Tai Wön-kun—less well known under his real name of Prince Heung-sön, father of the reigning King, and one-time Regent during the King's minority,—to power. The Japanese Minister at Seoul was compelled to make good his escape to Chemulpho, whence he sailed for Japan in a British man-of-war. On satisfaction being demanded for this outrage, the Tai Wön-kun temporized, and for a time war was imminent between Japan and Korea. But the Queen had appealed to Li Hung-chang for aid; so an army was sent by China into the Peninsula, the Tai Wön-kun was dethroned and carried off to Tientsin, while the hated Mins were once again restored to power and the Queen returned to Seoul triumphant. Shortly thereafter a new compact was made with Japan, Korea therein consenting to Japanese troops being stationed in Seoul, and further agreeing to pay an indemnity of 500,000 *yen*—a sum which, by the way, Japan received later on in part only.

Only two years later another great *émeute* took place, and on this occasion as on the former, the partisans of the victors, regarding Japan as the head and front of progressive tendencies, attacked and this time destroyed the Japanese Legation in Seoul, compelling its inmates to leave the city. Many Japanese residents of the Korean capital were killed by the Chinese soldiers—three thousand strong—who had hastened to the Palace under the leadership of the Chinese Resident, Yüan, and practically taken possession of the King's person, although it was given out that he had voluntarily placed himself under Chinese protection. The handful of Japanese soldiers, with the Minister and those Japanese residents

---

\* *Japan Mail*

who had escaped the massacre, fought their way to the sea: the story of their march through a hostile land and surrounded on all sides by watchful foes, being replete with striking incidents.

In consequence of the *émeute* and its fatal results, Count Inouye, then Minister of State for Foreign Affairs, was at once despatched to Korea, where he obtained a promise from the Government to rebuild the Japanese Legation at its own expense and send an embassy to Tōkyō in order to apologise. Yet as the attacks made on Japanese life and property in Seoul had been committed principally by lawless Chinese troopers, it was felt that satisfaction was due Japan from China as well as Korea. Accordingly Counts Itō and Saigo, Ministers of the Imperial Household and Agricultural and Commercial Departments respectively, proceeded to China, negotiations being promptly opened at Tientsin. On April 18th, 1885, the famous Treaty of Tientsin was concluded, by which each Power pledged itself not to send troops to the Peninsula without notifying the other, or, in the words of the third clause of this convention, "should in future there be in Korea any disturbance or important political affair, and should it be necessary for both Japan and China, or either one of them, to despatch troops, they should first mutually communicate on the matter, and, on the subsidence of the trouble, the troops should be at once withdrawn and not be permanently stationed." It was thus clear that the two Empires were placed on an equal military footing, and that China had no more suzerain rights over Korea than had Japan. The Peninsula was definitely recognized as an Independent State.

Things remained thus until the spring of 1894, when a serious insurrection broke out in Korea—a revolt directed against the notorious and tyrannical maladministration of the Mins, or members of the Queen's family. The insurgents, in a series of fights, proved themselves superior to the ill-disciplined and ill-equipped troops of the Government. Emboldened by success, the rebels marched into Chōllado and stormed its capital city, Chhōngju, on June 1st. Alarmed at the failure of their troops, the Mins had finally recourse to a familiar expedient: an appeal to China for aid. But this appeal did not emanate from the Korean Government as such; it was brought about by Min Ying-chōng, the most

powerful courtier of the moment, in concert with the Chinese Resident, Yüan. China had thus the opportunity for which she had long been waiting, and on June 8th despatched 1500 soldiers from Wei-hai-wei really to the help of the Mins, but nominally under the pretext of assisting to put down the insurrection. This was, however, in virtual defiance of one of the stipulations of the Treaty of Tientsin, although notice of this step was given by the Chinese Government to the Japanese Representative in Peking, according to the above-named convention.

During the interval immediately preceding these events, Japan had been rendered more than ever acutely sensible of China's arbitrary and unfriendly interference in the Peninsula. Twice the efforts of the Japanese Government to obtain redress for ruinous and unlawful trade prohibitions issued by the Korean authorities, had been hampered by the action of the Chinese Representative in Seoul; and once an ultimatum addressed to the Seoul Government as the sequel of a long and vexatious delay, elicited from the Viceroy Li at Tientsin an insolent threat of Chinese armed opposition. Still more strikingly provocative of national indignation was China's procedure with regard to the murder of Kim Ok-kyün, one of the leading spirits of the revolt against the pro-Chinese faction in 1884, and since then the *protegé* of Japan. The assassination had been planned by Koreans in Japan, where Kim was a political refugee. The unfortunate man had been inveigled from Japan to Shanghai, accompanied thither by a fellow-countryman, and then treacherously shot in a Japanese hotel. China, instead of punishing the assassin as any civilized Power must have done, conveyed him, together with the corpse of his victim, in a war-ship of her own to Korea: the murderer to be publicly honoured, the body to be brutally mutilated. From this incident alone might be truly inferred the hostile and uncivilized spirit of Chinese interference in Korea wherever Japan was concerned.\*

So soon as the news of the sending of troops was conveyed to Japan the Tôkyô Government immediately concluded that in the interests, first of the Japanese Empire, and secondly of civilization in the Far East, measures must be promptly taken to put

---

\**Japan Mail.*

an end once for all to the barbarous corruption and misrule that rendered Korea a scene of perpetual disturbance and effectually checked the country's capacity for maintaining its independence. As will be seen from the diplomatic correspondence published at the outset of this volume, Japan, never claiming on her own account rights or interests in the Peninsula superior to those possessed by China, was always prepared to work hand in hand with the Middle Kingdom in inaugurating and carrying out any efficient system of reform.\* Japan knew only too well the weakness of the Korean Government and its inability to quell the insurrection. Necessitated by the circumstances, recognizing that the problem called for a practical solution, and that, as the patience of the Japanese nation was exhausted, they could no longer afford to be the victims of Chinese dalliance and dilatoriness and must contrive a situation such as would not only place them beyond the reach of diplomatic obstacles but would also enable them to pursue their programme even in the event of China's refusal to co-operate, the Tōkyō authorities despatched four thousand Japanese troops, who were landed at Inchhōn on June 12th, with the immediate intent of protecting the Japanese Legation at Seoul and all Japanese residents in Korea. Due notice was, of course, given of this proceeding to China.

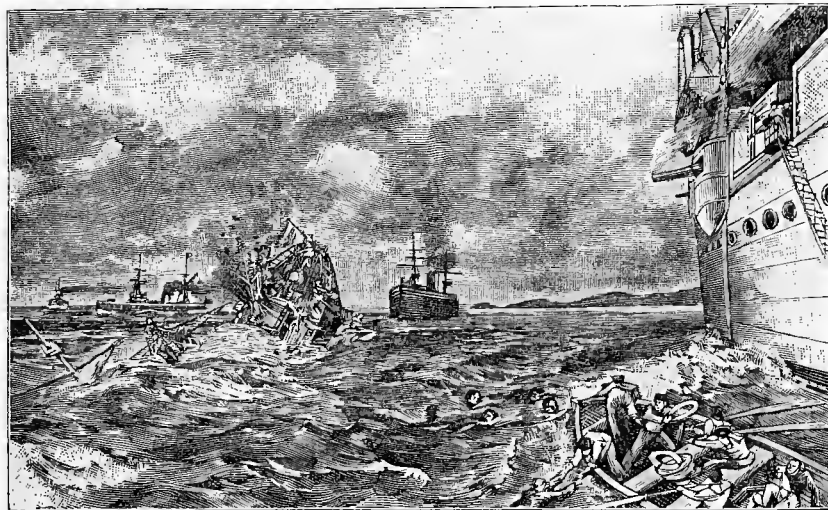
The insurgents, or Tonghaks as they were called, were simply a disorderly though desperate assembly of Koreans who had been compelled to take up arms by the heartless rapacity of their officials. They did not aim so much at a subversal of the Government as they strove to encompass the final downfall of the Mins. And as soon as the Japanese and Chinese troops were landed, the rebellion quieted down. This was effected not so much by actual force as by the timidity of the insurgents at the approach of the troops of the two Empires.

China now demanded that the Japanese soldiers should be withdrawn, alleging that the rebellion was entirely over. This demand had, however, a meaning of a very different nature from that which it expressed, and Minister Ōtori, who had been despatched to the Korean capital at the critical moment, positively refused to entertain the request, couched as it moreover was in

---

\* *Japan Mail.*

language of an unmistakable nature. A report then reached Japan that China had again sent troops to Asan, which lies south of Seoul, on June 27th. Despatches of a similar tenor then came thick and fast:—the Chinese Government had determined to take up arms against Japan; it was intended to take advantage of the situation by declaring a Chinese protectorate over Korea; that preparations were being actively made for a sudden attack on Japan; that both before and after July 21st Chinese troops had been flocking in steadily increasing numbers to Asan and Wiju; that some eight thousand Chinese soldiers were preparing to attack the Japanese troops stationed in and about Seoul. These reports were indicative of movements of a most serious nature, and so the Japanese Army and Navy were swiftly prepared to meet the gathering storm. Vice-Admiral Viscount Kabayama, Chief of the Admiralty Staff, at once repaired to the Admiralty Station at Saseho and set about the necessary arrangements.—And now for the story of the Naval Battle at Phungdō.



Rescue of foreign officers from the sinking *Kowshing*, by  
H. J. M. Naniwa.

## II.—THE FIRST NAVAL ENGAGEMENT.

ON July 23rd, the following Japanese war-ships left Saseho for Inchhön:—the *Yoshino*, *Naniwa*, *Akitsushima*, *Matsushima*, *Itsukushima*, *Hashidate*, *Chiyoda* and *Hiyei*. Of these the first three led the van, steaming ahead at full speed. At about 7 a.m. on the 25th they passed by Phungdō (lit. “Phung Island”) and Shopiole Island, when they sighted two Chinese men-of-war coming from the direction of Namyang Bay. These were the *Kwang-yi* and *Tsiyuen*, which had been despatched to convoy certain transports, on board of which were large numbers of Chinese troops destined for Asan. China had, at the time, not yet declared war against Japan, and as no open rupture had taken place certain forms of naval etiquette had still to be observed. Now on the Japanese side the *Yoshino* was flying an Admiral’s flag, Rear-Admiral Tsuboi



REAR-ADMIRAL TSUBOI.

being on board; yet as the Chinese war-ships drew near they not only did not salute but actually cleared for action, ran out their guns and beat to quarters. The Japanese ships were thus compelled to follow suit. The channel in which the Japanese vessels were being very narrow, it was impossible to continue steaming ahead; so, without taking any notice of the lack of courtesy on the part of the Chinese, the Japanese ships steered south-west, in the direction of the open water. Both fleets, however, were steadily approaching each other. Just at this moment the Chinese

ships opened fire on the Japanese, to which the three Japanese men-of-war made prompt and deadly reply. A fierce encounter ensued, lasting for about one hour and a half. Convinced that their enemies were more than their match, the Chinese then fled

in different directions: the *Tsi-yuen* to Chelung Bay, and the *Kwang-yi*, at reduced speed, to the eastward Korean littoral. The *Yoshino* immediately started in pursuit of the *Tsi-yuen* and continued to fire at her waterline, thinking to sink her. Several shots struck the doomed vessel which, apparently in a sinking condition, made for shallow water. It being no longer necessary to pursue her, the *Yoshino* turned and steamed back to the scene of the late conflict. During the course of the encounter, two other steamers had appeared at a distance in the offing. They were now approached and it was discovered that the one was the Chinese war-ship *Tsao-kiang*, the other being the *Kowshing*, a transport-vessel flying the British flag. On the latter were large numbers of Chinese troops, destined for Asan. So soon as the *Akitsu-shima* drew near, the *Tsao-kiang* hoisted a white flag in token of surrender: very probably because, seeing the flight of the two other Chinese vessels, her commander was convinced of his inability to cope successfully with the Japanese men-of-war. The *Akitsu-shima* hereupon took possession of the *Tsao-kiang*; a prize-crew was sent on board, with orders to follow in the wake of the victor.

In the meantime the *Naniwa* had signalled the transport to stop, which command was obeyed. The next thing was to make the *Kowshing* anchor, an order signalled from the *Naniwa* by firing two blank cartridges. The vessel was then instructed to follow the man-of-war to the main squadron, and Naval Lieutenant Hitomi lowered a boat and went on board the *Kowshing* to see this order enforced. He asked to be shown the ship's papers, and Captain Galsworthy, who was in command of the transport, made the following statement:—"The name of this vessel is the *Kowshing* and she is under charter of the Chinese Government to convey troops from Taku to Asan. There are eleven hundred Chinese soldiers on board, besides a quantity of rifles and ammunition. We have enough coal for a week's steaming and sufficient water for two days more." Lieutenant Hitomi then asked whether Captain Galsworthy was prepared to take any course indicated by the *Naniwa*? On receiving a reply in the affirmative, the Japanese officer at once returned to his own ship. Soon after this Captain Galsworthy signalled the *Naniwa*, requesting a boat to be sent. This request was at once complied with, and upon its return being inquired



into, the captain of the British transport stated that although he was personally willing to obey the commands of the *Naniwa*, the Chinese officers on board would not suffer him to do so, demanding that he should steer in the direction of Taku, whence they had come. He therefore begged permission to take this course. The Japanese lieutenant, who had come in response to his call, not being prepared to give an answer to this request, went back to the *Naniwa*. Meanwhile the Chinese soldiers on board the *Kowshing* had come upon deck and were clamoring vehemently, while angrily threatening Captain Galsworthy. This was sufficient to prove that it was out of the question to force the *Kowshing* to follow the Japanese fleet; so the *Naniwa* signalled the British captain to leave his ship. He replied by again requesting a boat to be sent, but the only answer made to this was that Captain Galsworthy and his officers should proceed at once to the *Naniwa* in one of their own boats. The captain signalled in reply that he was not allowed to come. By this time the tumult among the Chinese soldiers had assumed serious dimensions, the captain and his officers being threatened with instant death if they made any attempt to leave the vessel. Under the circumstances there was no help for it but to hoist the red flag at the foremast of the *Naniwa*, in token that firing was about to be commenced, while signals were once more made urging the captain to leave the *Kowshing* at all hazards. Captain Galsworthy hereupon summoned all the foreigners on board to the main deck, and bade them prepare to plunge overboard. No less than four hours had been spent in these fruitless signals and negotiations, as it was the desire of the Japanese fleet to make the Chinese surrender without bloodshed and then guide the *Kowshing* to a place of safety; yet the Chinese were unable to understand the generosity of the Japanese, menaced their commander, and refused point-blank to obey the instructions of the *Naniwa*. There was nothing for it but to sink the transport, and so in another moment a shell was fired at her engine-room with fatal precision. The ship began at once to founder, and soon disappeared beneath the waves, leaving only a cloud of smoke behind to mark the spot of her last plunge. Just before the ship was struck, the Chinese officers on board threatened the captain and his European aides with their rifles, saying that they should

be instantly shot if they made the least attempt to leave the ship. And so even after the *Kowshing* had been struck and while she was settling in the waves and all the Europeans had jumped overboard, the Chinese officers fired at them, wounding several. Boats were immediately launched from the Japanese men-of-war, and the captain, engineers and pilot were thus rescued. Those who had been wounded by the Chinese at the time of their plunging overboard, were sent on to the Naval Hospital at Saseho, where they were treated with the greatest possible care, for which they were afterwards profuse in their expressions of gratitude.\*

Early in the morning of the 27th, or two days after the battle, the *Naniwa* and *Maya*, of the Japanese fleet, sent out boats to look for the Chinese war-ship *Kwang-yi*, which had, on the day of the battle, fled in the direction of a shallow inlet. The vessel was soon found west of Caroline Bay, and completely destroyed. It is supposed that after receiving a shot in some vital part, the vessel made all speed for shallow water and was beached. The powder-magazine may thereupon have intentionally been exploded; or some fatal shell may have burst in her engine-room; or fire may finally have found its way to her magazine:—at all events not only did the greater part of the vessel show the ravages of fire but her back was broken, only about one-third of the upper deck—bearing traces of numerous hits—remaining above water. As to the *Tsi-yuen*, it is true that she managed to reach Wei-hai-wei, but in a pitiable condition. Nearly every gun on board had been destroyed, the deck torn up in places, and the gun-carriages in her fore beaten out of shape, while blood marked many places.

With regard to the Japanese men-of-war, the *Naniwa* received one shot in her side, as did also the *Yoshino*, but no material damage was done, neither was any one killed or even wounded.

Thus ended the first conflict in the war between Japan and China. It may be justly claimed to be one of the most unparalleled and ill-matched naval encounters the Orient has ever seen; for though the Japanese vessels were of a better type than the Chinese, the latter carried guns of much heavier calibre, so that there can be no doubt that the Chinese might have done serious damage to the

---

\* See the printed statements of Captain Galsworthy and others.

Japanese fleet, had their ships been fought with equal skill and courage.



CAPTAIN Tōgō, H. J. M. Naniwa.

The names of the three Japanese war-ships and their Commanders, are as follow:—

NAME.	TONNAGE.	COMMANDER.
<i>Yoshino</i> .....	4,150.....	Captain Kawabara.
<i>Naniwa</i> .....	3,650.....	Captain Tōgō.
<i>Akitsuishima</i> .....	3,150.....	Commander Uemura.

SPEED.

<i>Yoshino</i> .....	23 knots.
<i>Naniwa</i> .....	18 $\frac{3}{4}$ knots.
<i>Akitsuishima</i> .....	19 knots.

The captured gun-boat *Tsao-kiang* had eighty-two officers and men on board.

## CHAPTER II.

### THE BATTLE OF SÖNGHWAN (*Sei-kwan*).

---

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

TOWARDS the end of July, 1894, the Korean Government had so far acted upon the advice proffered by Japan as to consent to, and actually set about, certain vitally necessary reforms. The misleading counsels of the Chinese were disregarded at least in one serious point: the expulsion of the Mins or relatives of the Queen, the chief representatives of that fearful maladministration under which the country had so long been groaning. The immediate cause of this step was the determined attitude assumed by Mr. Ōtori Keisuke, the Japanese Representative at Seoul, who, on July 24th, had had literally to fight his way to an audience with the King, his escort having been fired upon by a crowd of Korean troopers stationed at the Palace Gate. A brief but decisive skirmish had ensued, seventeen Koreans being killed on the spot, while one Japanese horseman was fatally, and two foot-soldiers slightly, wounded. On finally meeting with Mr. Ōtori, the King repeatedly affirmed his desire to keep to the course mapped out by Japan, and it was on the following day, July 25th, that the order for the banishment of the Mins was given, all compacts with China being simultaneously abrogated. The King moreover requested the Japanese Representative to see that the Chinese forces stationed at Asan (Ashan or Gasan) should be compelled to return to their own country—a measure, which, under the circumstances, Japan was bound to take. She had from first to last treated with Korea as an independent kingdom, and it was nothing but China's unreasonable yet reiterated claim to the suzerainty of the Peninsula which had precipitated matters; not to speak of her positive refusal to coöperate with Japan in

bringing about the so urgently needed administrative reforms. China's position being that Korea was strong enough to effect single-handed the necessary reforms—a palpable impossibility—it devolved upon Japan to see that these reforms were carried out in truth and deed. And to this effect it was her evident duty to assist her weak and vacillating neighbour with force, if need be. Finally, if, as China had represented to Japan, the Tonghak Rebellion was crushed and Korea was really strong enough to look after her own affairs without the aid of either Empire, how was it that China not only kept a large force on Korean ground but was also sending, as speedily as might be, reinforcements of picked troops? With justice indeed could Japan construe such an act into a *casus belli*, for only one interpretation could possibly be put upon it: China's intention to settle by force the question of Korean proprietorship, and to make the wretched government-ridden people feel the full force of that tremendous sentence, *subjectos tanquam suos ; viles tanquam alienos*.

So soon as the King had definitely requested the Japanese Representative to set about the expulsion of the Chinese, Mr. Ōtori immediately despatched a message in this sense to Major-



MAJOR-GENERAL ŌSHIMA YOSHIMASA.

General Ōshima Yoshimasa, who had been sent in command of the Combined Brigade, at Manlichang. Major-General Ōshima had stationed one body of troops in Seoul (consisting of the Seoul Guard and the Inchchön Contingent), in order to prepare to receive the Chinese, who were marching overland to Phyöngyang; and with another body he broke camp and marched across the River Hangan at a place called Tongchanchin. After covering four miles the troops reached Kwochhön and encamped in the fields. Prior to this, Major Furushi Masatsuna, who had been stationed at Oruitong, midway between Seoul and Inchhön, in

command of the Advance Column, had pushed on to Suwön, where a juncture was made; for at dawn on the 26th the Main Brigade left Kwochhön and marched on to Suwön, which was only four miles distant. This town is the most important stronghold in the vicinity of the Korean capital, being encircled by walls of massive masonry. A good deal of foraging was done during the day, horses and oxen being bought up in quantities, while numbers of coolies were hired, liberal payment being made for their services. These same men had been cruelly treated by the Chinese, who had forced them to work without pay and had compelled many to take service under the Dragon Flag contrary to their inclination. The poor fellows were overjoyed at the considerate treatment accorded them by the Japanese, and worked with a will.

At four o'clock in the morning of July 27th the forces left Suwön, and this time a march of twelve miles was made, Chinwi being reached at half-past one in the afternoon. Shortly before sunset tidings of the naval engagement off Phung Island came in, which naturally roused the men to a pitch of patriotic pride and enthusiasm. Three ringing cheers\* of *Banzai!* were given, while every face beamed with joy. Between Suwön and Chinwi the road was narrow but offered no serious obstacle to an advance; the surrounding country was flat and covered with paddy-fields. A thunderstorm coming up at 2 p. m. greatly lessened the heat and cleared the skies, much to the comfort of the marching troops. During this march each soldier carried provisions for three days, and one hundred and thirty rounds of ammunition. This was put in a specially constructed bag of novel shape, to which the name of *gassai-bukuro* was given. The bag was made of light yet strong material, and offered no impediment to freedom of movement. The knapsacks and all else had been left behind at Yongsan, and it was for these reasons that the soldiers did not complain of fatigue, keeping fresh and bearing up so well in spite of the dusty marches, great heat, and the lack of proper drinking water. Camp was broken once again at 4 a. m. on the following morning. Passing through Chhilmönyok, the troops marched

---

\*The Japanese cheer of *Banzai*, literally "ten thousand years" is the national counterpart of *Hurra!* or *Vivat!* It is perhaps best translated by the old ceremonial salutation "Live forever."

on until they made a hill some six miles from Chinwi, a little to the north of Sosachan. The place was promptly occupied, and while this was doing some mounted scouts brought in the news that the Chinese were in force on the hills at Sönghwan; that they had built forts and breastworks and were there encamped. "Flags are flying every where and cannons have been set up in various places. There seem to be about 2800 Chinese stationed hereabouts, and their tents line the hillsides," was the report. Other scouts, who had been sent on to Asan by way of Phyöngtak, reported that the enemy had evacuated the former encampment there and gone eastward. It was thus manifest that the main portion of the Chinese forces had left Asan, but still kept the important post of Sönghwan. Sosachang—a hamlet of some 20 or 30 houses—was then made the temporary Head-Quarters, and each body was told off to a special post, while strict watch was kept over the enemy's movements.

Sönghwan is a small but important strong-hold, north-east of Asan and ten miles distant from this place. An irregular range of low hills runs from north to west back of the town, while paddy-fields lie to the northwards. The distance between the town and Sosachan is about three miles, the whole ground being cut up with paddy-fields, marshes and dikes. Through the broad open area above two miles in width, east and west run the bipartite Ansöng and another nameless stream, both of which debouch in the Gulf of Asan. The Chinese had taken every advantage of the irregularity of the country, and had built forts at the four corners of their camp, these protecting their tents draped with blue and white, which were snugly set up under the pine-trees. Blue and red flags were flying everywhere; trenches dug and earthworks thrown up, the latter being evidently of quite recent construction, as the earth was still dark and moist. About one mile from the smaller forts, there was, to the westward, a much larger one. It contained fourteen or fifteen tents over which many banners were floating, while one standard of unusual size was hoisted prominently in the centre. A narrow pathway led thence from the forts to Sosachang, crossing the rivers and paddy-fields; while the road to Asan went around the base of the Sönghwan hills, and was completely commanded by forts erected on the hillsides at short

intervals. The whole was, from every point of view, a most advantageous site for the Chinese, but without one factor in favour of their adversaries. Moreover, the enemy had erected a dam in the Ansōng River at a place called Kunmulpho causing the river to overflow at this point, so that the fields were completely submerged on either side of the narrow road. Finally, the Chinese could easily watch every movement of the Japanese, while they, in the hills and behind their forts, were concealed from observation. Sōnghwan was thus indeed a place easily defended but difficult to storm. The day, too, was oppressively hot, the thermometer reaching 97°; yet on the Japanese side there was little or no shade: even Major-General Ōshima could find no better protection from the burning rays of the sun than that afforded by two old pieces of matting. And after their rapid march the Japanese soldiers were suffering from thirst, yet no drinkable water could be procured; the muddy, slimy fluid in the fields scarcely served to do more than moisten their parched throats. Towards afternoon, however, a sudden shower came up, effecting an immediate fall in the temperature while it greatly helped to relieve the distress of the thirsty men. Nothing could, the participants say, have given greater or more welcome relief than this splashing, noisy shower, which seemed like a message of good-cheer from the mother-country.

Upon mature consideration it was deemed inadvisable to begin the attack by daylight. Major-General Ōshima divided his forces into two wings, the Right and Left. The Reserve force was to follow after the Left Wing, the Advance Column of which should start at midnight. At this hour, the little army was quietly roused and ordered to advance in utter silence. The night was a very still one, and so noiseless was the approach of the devoted troops that they might well have been taken for the shades of those Japanese warriors who, nearly three centuries before, had traversed in triumph this very road. But with what a difference! Then, clad in armor, carrying bows and quivers, and wielding trenchant blades; now, robed in the clothes of the once-despised West and bearing that most death-dealing invention of the century, the Murata rifle! Then, proceeding on a raid to satisfy merely the vain-glory of Hideyoshi; now, to fight for the pre-



servation of peace, the tranquillization of the Orient, and the salvation of Korea! The Left Wing—in reality the Main Body—set out under the personal command of Major-General Ōshima, followed by Lieut.-Colonel Fukushima Yasumasa, Major Nagaoaka Gaishi and other officers. The troops were marched to the leftward of Sosachang, in order to get at the rear of the enemy's flank. In this way they passed through the hostile line of pickets. The Right Wing, commanded by Lieut.-Colonel Taketa Shūzan, the Advance Column being formed by Captain Matsuzaki and his company, left the camp at Sosachang at 2 a. m. (July 29th). With the purpose of attacking the enemy in front, this body marched along the narrow road amidst the paddy-fields, and owing to the latter being submerged and the darkness of the night—not to speak of the ruts and broken places in the road itself—the advance was attended with great difficulty. The Advance Column made its way across the first and second bridges spanning the Ansōng, while the men under Lieut.-Colonel Taketa crossed



LIEUT.-COLONEL TAKETA.

the first bridge at 3.05 a. m. As they then reached a place quite different from the hill (Mt. Chupalli) which had been selected as a land mark, the Lieut.-Colonel feared that the Advance Column had mistaken the road. At this moment the Column in question came into collision with the enemy at the village of Kehliuntong, about thirty metres distant from the Right Wing. Fierce and rapid firing being heard, the Lieut.-Colonel dismounted and loudly called on his men to charge. The Advance Column was ordered by Captain Matsuzaki to spread out

in open order, and the men were kept firing rapid flank volleys. Some troopers under Lieutenant Tokiyama were sent to attack the enemy's rear, while other detachments were ordered to make a flank attack. After [a little while of furious fighting the enemy

began to give way, and the field was won. The sub-company under Lieutenant Tokiyama, which had been told to work around to the enemy's rear by the river, got into difficulties. On attempting to ford the stream, they found the banks precipitous and the water deep, and the Lieutenant and a dozen or more of his men were drowned.

At 4.10 a. m. the enemy's ranks were in utter confusion. They fled in the direction of the paddy-fields to the south and took the road to Sŏnghwan. In the fight that took place here, Captain Matsuzaki, the leader of the Advance Column, was struck down. The village was thus at the mercy of the Japanese ; there remained, however, the forts to be reckoned with. Leaving the village at 5.30 a. m., the Right Wing advanced along the narrow road amidst the paddy-fields, directing their course towards a hill on the right. Shortly after they reached a hill as high as that of Sŏnghwan, and halted for a moment. Just at this time the right-hand forts of the Chinese were furiously attacked by the Japanese Left Wing. The square fort on the farthest west side did not offer much resistance and soon fell into the hands of the attackers, who there captured three cannon, a quantity of small-arms, plenty of ammunition, and more than ninety tents. Leaving their dead and wounded behind them, the Chinese fled precipitately in the direction of Asan. This was at 8 o'clock in the morning. The movements of the Japanese Left Wing, from the time the camp was left at midnight, had been as follow :— With Major - General Ōshima in command and Lieut.-Colonel Nishijima, the reserve following, the Left Wing marched from Sosachang towards the forts on the enemy's right. Their objective was a hill to which they gave the name of *Keshi-bōzu*, or the "Poppy-priest," from a fancied resemblance of the summit to the fruit of the poppy. The real



LIEUT.-COLONEL NISHIJIMA.

name of the hill is Toklip-san, or "Independent Mountain," and it is one of the range of hills back of the centre of the Chinese camp. Skirting round the pine-grove north-east of Sönghwan, the troops finally reached a little plateau to the rear of the flank of those forts which had been erected on the "Poppy-priest." The cannon of the Artillery contingent were now brought into position and trained on the Chinese forts. While still on the march, the noise of the fusillade near the Ansöng had been heard, and the Japanese knew that their Right Wing had already engaged the enemy there. Despite the excitement of the moment, the utmost order prevailed and the work of bringing the guns up to the elevated ground and training them on the forts proceeded rapidly. This done, the firing began and shrapnel shells were dropped into Forts 1 and 2 on the Chinese right. At first the enemy replied, using percussion shells; but their aim was defective and the gunners failed to get the proper range. At the same time the Japanese deployed their line of battle, a manœuvre at once imitated by the Chinese, while the firing grew ever hotter and at closer quarters. The Chinese, to do them justice, fought well, but when the Japanese Left Wing and Reserve conjointly made a general attack, the fighting did not last longer than ten minutes. The two forts above-mentioned were captured at 7.20 a. m.

The Japanese Left now advanced to the attack of the remaining forts, but found this a task of no small magnitude, as the Chinese fought desperately. But just then the other, Right, Wing came up from the Ansöng and stormed the earthworks on the enemy's right. The battle now grew exceedingly fierce and the roar of the cannonade seemed to shake the very earth. What proved most deadly and surprising to the enemy was the Japanese shrapnel, for the guns were ably handled and every shot told. Before long, the five encampments, with the trenches, earthworks, forts and all, were taken by storm, and the enemy fled towards the hills to the west, leaving behind four cannon, and large quantities of stores, tents, arms, and ammunition. The large square fort fell at the same time, and thus the field of Sönghwan was triumphantly won. The Chinese rapidly retreated towards Asan, General Cheong in particular being in such a hurry to have nothing more to do with shrapnel that he even left his military journal behind him. On the

field were 110 Chinese dead, and over 500 wounded. The Japanese casualties amounted to 80 killed and wounded.

Although these forts and the all-important Sönghwan were now in the hands of the Japanese, the majority of the erstwhile defenders reached safety at Asan. It was therefore necessary to press on and capture this the enemy's Head-Quarters, where General Yang was in chief command. The Japanese troops had been marching or fighting for over eight hours and were sorely in need of rest; but although it was expected that the Chinese would make a much more determined stand at Asan, no time was lost in marching thither, for the moral effect of the victory at Sönghwan would surely be great. The defeated and flying Chinese were thus immediately chased, and at 4 p. m. after an exhausting march at full speed the Japanese Right Wing reached Asan. To their unbounded surprise, only a few stragglers were to be seen. The Chinese had instantly decamped on hearing what had taken place at Sönghwan, leaving stores, baggage and all else at Asan. Even most of the vaunting banners were still flying. Asan was thus taken without firing single shot.

At the same hour the Japanese Left reached a spot east of Kômshungtong, where they encamped. Early in the morning of the 30th the march was resumed, and Asan soon reached, where they found their comrades in joyous possession of the Chinese Head-Quarters. It was believed that nearly all the Asan contingent had been sent on to Sönghwan to stop the Japanese approach; but when the news of the fall of that stronghold reached the Chinese Commander-in-Chief, he had no stomach for further fighting and fled southwards, toward Konchu by way of Shingchanghyön. The moral force of the battle of Sönghwan had indeed proved singularly effective.

On July 31st the march back to Seoul was begun, the capital being entered on August 8th amidst enthusiastic demonstrations of joy. Japan's supremacy in arms had been triumphantly proved, and the result of the war was now only a question of time. The next step was to Phyöngyang which, if captured, would mean that China's misrule in Korea had ended forever.

---

## II.—THAT TRUMPETER!

It was in the battle of Sönghwan, the first encounter between the armies of the two Empires, that a trumpeter about whom much has been written died a death worthy of being immortalised in song and story. This was Kiguchi Kohei, a second-class private of the Twelfth Company of the 12st Regiment of Infantry. Kiguchi was a native of Nariha-mura, Kawakami-göri, Okayama Prefecture. On July 24th, 1894, the date of this memorable battle, he was one of the trumpeters in the company commanded by the ill-fated Captain Matsuzaki Nao-omi, who was attached to the van of the Right Wing.

On the morning of that day Captain Matsuzaki, leading the Advance Column, reached a village called Kehlungtong, about 600 metres from Ansöng. It was still very dark, it being about three o'clock, and Captain Matsuzaki feared that the connection between his column and the advance guard—a mere handful of ten men or thereabouts—might be lost or that they would miss the path. So he darted on to the rear of the advance-guard, followed only by Trumpeter Kiguchi as an orderly. No sooner had he reached the foremost file than the fighting began, the distance between them and the enemy being not more than twenty paces. None of their surroundings could be seen, owing to the intense darkness, yet the Japanese got occasional glimpses of the foe by reason of the flash of the cannon and the repeating rifles aimed at them from the houses in the village. With only twenty men about him, Captain Matsuzaki fought most valiantly, and finally, seeing that the combat was about to become general, ordered Kiguchi, who had not swerved from his side, to blow the charge. At a distance of ten paces from the foremost Chinese, Kiguchi raised his bugle to his lips and blew out clear and shrill the stern command to "Charge!" In an instant he was the target for a score of rifles, and a comrade saw him suddenly falter and then fall. Captain Matsuzaki met his death at the same moment.

How the contest ended all the world knows. The Chinese were utterly defeated, leaving over thirty dead on the field.

But must not this victory be in a measure attributed to Kiguchi's prompt obedience and unfaltering courage in the presence of certain death ?

At dawn, when the sun again made things visible and shone redly on the carnage of the night, Kiguchi's body was found where he had fallen. His bosom had been shattered by a bullet and death must have been almost instantaneous. But even in death he still grasped the bugle that had sounded the note of victory.

\* \* \* \* \*

The above are the simple facts of this story, which has been much misunderstood and erroneously narrated. A paragraph appeared soon thereafter in the Japanese papers locating the scene of the narrative at Phyöngyang, and giving the name of the bugler as Shirakami Genjirō. This was translated in the columns of the foreign press of Japan, and was thereafter copied the world over : Sir Edwin Arnold even writing one of his inimitable poems on the subject. Shirakami Genjirō was, however, quite another man. Not even a trumpeter, but a second-class private of the First Reserves, he was none the less a comrade of Kiguchi, and belonged to the Ninth Company, while Kiguchi was one of the Twelfth Company men. He also lost his life at Sönghwan, being similarly killed by a breast wound. Most regrettable is it that even the parents of Shirakami, who was also a native of Okayama Prefecture, were deceived in this matter ; and that they for a long time believed their son to be the hero of the story. Sir Edwin Arnold sent for documentary proof of what had occurred, but it was after the poem had been published and therefore no answer of a satisfactory nature could be forwarded. But all this does not detract from the real actor's devoted heroism. Whether Kiguchi or Shirakami, the deed is no less worthy of the chant of a poet's muse. Yet let honour be given where it is due.

---

### III.—NASU TORAFUSA.

WHEN the Seventh Company of the 12st Regiment, belonging to the Right Wing of Major-General Ōshima's Combined

Brigade, reached the vicinity of Ansöng-do, they—as has already been described—suddenly fell in with the enemy in the village by the river. It was then, it will be remembered, still quite an hour before dawn—3 o'clock, to be precise—and the darkness intense. Considerable confusion resulted from this pitchy darkness, numbers of men losing all connection with the files to which they belonged. Nasu Torafusa, a first-class private of this Seventh Company, by dint of repeated callings managed to get some 30 men together; and this little body he ordered to stop on the road to the village of Kehlungtong whence the Chinese were now running out. Lieut.-Colonel Taketa then tried, with his aides, to get the scattered men together. Sending his voice out into the darkness, he asked if any officer were thereabouts. No one replied. Then the Lieut.-Colonel cried again, “Is there no non-commissioned officer or first-class private within hearing?” This elicited a response from Nasu:—“Yes, here am I, Nasu Torafusa, a first-class private.” Rejoiced at finding some one in whom he could trust, the Regimental Commander told Nasu to use his men in bringing the Right and Left Wings together, making them converge so as to deliver a combined attack on the enemy. Nasu at once set about this, acting rapidly and intelligently, until he came across Sergeant Amano, to whom he relinquished the task. Nasu was now called up to be an orderly and go with a message to the Commander of the Third Battalion. He was bidden say that an attack should be made all along the line at dawn. Just as he was about to start on this mission, a loud cry of “Charge!” was heard, and the men of the other companies were dimly seen advancing at double-quick. Nasu joined these forces and charged with them into the enemy’s earthworks, but not before he had managed to send on the message to Third Battalion.

At dawn the whole Japanese line bore down on the enemy, and when the Chupalli high-ground was reached, the troops were exposed to a fierce fire from the enemy’s entrenchments about Söngwan. Nasu led, encouraging his comrades to energetic action, giving them as he did so the proper range and telling them how to sight their weapons. Just at this critical moment, a comrade had some mishap with his gun; Nasu lent his companion his own weapon, took the disabled gun himself and in this

rain of bullets calmly went to work to put the gun in order with the tools he carried. His skilled hands promptly repaired the the damage in the breach, and then he handed back the gun to its owner, reclaiming his own weapon and continuing to fire as calmly and steadily as if at the butts. The men could not thereafter say too much in praise of his hardihood and coolness under fire.

---



## CHAPTER III.

### THE BATTLE OF PHYÖNGYANG.

---

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

WHATEVER may have originally been thought of the result of the opening warfare between the two great Empires of the Far East, the result was no longer doubtful after the Battle of Phyöngyang. It was the decisive battle of the whole war; for not only did it drive the Chinese from Korean territory but it also proved that they were in no one point the equals of the Japanese. Those who had thoughtfully followed the history of the modern development of Japan, knew from the outset that there could be but one result. But "China's millions" were numerically so superior to the population of the Island Empire; China's resources so immeasurably greater; her credit so vastly larger; her territorial possessions so incomparably broader; her pretensions so haughtily prouder—that the nations of Europe might well have expected to see China crush with ease her pygmy foes: to see, in the contemptuous language of the Imperial Edict the generals of the Middle Kingdom succeed in "rooting the *Wôjen* from their lairs." But to those acquainted with the real condition of the two Empires, such a contingency never appeared probable or even possible. China's inherent weakness had been demonstrated again and again; Japan, the pioneer of civilisation in the Orient, was known to be a compact whole, her people the descendants of warriors, and as intensely patriotic as the most loyal of Western nations: reverencing the Emperor with an ardent fidelity, an adoring love, such as has never been and never can be found elsewhere. Moreover, Japan's soldiers, though comparatively few in number, were admirably drilled and as admirably equipped; their officers not money-grubbers or place-seekers,

but hard-working, conscientious men, who sought to win and had won the esteem and confidence of those they commanded. The Japanese have, finally, an inherent love for the battle-field and deem it an honour and glory to die for their country—facts which were incontestably proved hundreds of times during the course of the war, as this little book tries, however imperfectly, to show. With China, defeat meant simply a more complete exposure of national weakness, and the probability of her falling, in later years, an easy prey to a more warlike nation; with Japan defeat would have meant—and will ever mean—nothing less than annihilation, for her people will fight so long as there is left a man to hold a gun or wield a sword—or a woman to handle a halberd.

Sönghwan was the beginning of the end; Phyöngyang was the real end of the contest. After that, with but few exceptions, every battle was a foregone conclusion, even when the Japanese were outnumbered by their foes, ten to one. Here, once and for all time, it was proved that the Rising Sun of Japan was superior to the five-clawed Yellow Dragon:—the latter could scratch and snarl, but the rays of that glorious Sun might never be darkened by his spiteful fury.

\*            \*            \*            \*            \*            \*

A movement towards Phyöngyang was made by the Chinese early in July, some time before their crushing defeat at Sönghwan. For Phyöngyang is an important strongly walled castle-town in the province of Phyöng-an-do, one of the most fertile and beautiful of the Korean provinces. The town lies on the right bank of the Taidong River, a broad stream flowing into the Gulf of Péchili, and thus easily accessible for purposes of transport. Here the Chinese established themselves in force, after passing over the Manchurian frontier and through Wiju. Co-operating with Asan, Phyöngyang was made the base of supplies, and it was the evident intention of the Chinese, in case of the success of their plans, to march thence upon the devoted Korean capital like some tumultuous and destructive flood. The position was, from a Chinese standpoint, admirably selected and indeed all that could be desired. There was the river close at hand, with huge junks ready to do their bidding; they were plentifully provisioned, yet could draw on the stores of the surrounding country in case of

need ; finally, the city was so situated as to be extremely difficult of access to a hostile army, and the Koreans themselves, though treated with scant courtesy, were favourable to China's cause, being wilfully kept in ignorance of Japan's true labours in their behalf. On the other hand, to reach Phyöngyang the Japanese forces had to climb precipitous mountain-ranges and traverse roads where the mud was often knee-deep, the conveyance of stores and all warlike material being thereby rendered exceedingly difficult. Besides the outspoken hostility of the Koreans and their absolute unwillingness to render aid even when well-paid, were most unpleasant factors. With all this, perfect discipline was maintained in the Japanese ranks ; the soldiers were, one and all, inspired by the same ardent spirit of loyal enthusiasm ; so they made light of the difficulties of the march and bore their many privations and discomforts with uncomplaining cheerfulness.

Toward the last days of August, the Fifth Army Division, under the chief command of Lieut.-General Nozu Michitsura, was divided into four bodies :—



LIEUT.-GENERAL VISCOUNT NOZU.

1. The Wönsan Column, commanded by Colonel Satö Tada-shi. This Column left Wönsan on September 1st, and reached the upper part of the Taidong River, by way of Yangdok and Söngehhông ;

2. The Sangnyöng Column, under Major-General Tatsumi Naobumi. From Shingé this body passed through Shu-an and Samdung arriving finally at Kangtong ;

3. The Combined Brigade, under Major-General Ōshima Yoshimasa. The Brigade advanced towards their objective along the road which passes through Hwangju and Chunghwa ;

4. The Main Division, commanded by Lieut.-General Nozu

in person. The troops crossed the Taidong in its lower course at a place called Nokshapo, near Chhölto, a small island lying in midstream.

The general attack on Phyöngyang was, according to the plans of the Commander-in-Chief, to be made on September 15th, the idea being to storm the town from four sides simultaneously. The different Divisions were to act thus:—The Combined Brigade was to make a front-attack in order to direct the enemy's attention to that part and render it impossible to send troops to the aid of other points. The Sangnyöng Column should then approach from the north and deliver a fierce assault; while the Wönsan Column was to join the Sangnyöng men on the right, assist in the attack, and intercept the enemy's retreat in that direction. Finally, the Main Division was to attack the town from the south-west.



COLONEL UYEDA YUTAKU, CHIEF  
OF STAFF OF THE FIFTH  
DIVISION.

The Main Division started from Seoul on August 31st. The road was exceptionally fatiguing and great difficulties were experienced; however the First Column reached Hwangju on the 10th, while the Second made Pongshan on the same date. A report then came in from Major Baba Masao, of the Engineers, that ferry-boats were to be had in numbers near Chhölto Island, and that twenty-five junks were lying in the upper part of the Taidong. A party of Engineers was then sent on to Shipyipho, to make ready for the crossing of the stream, and on the next day, the 11th, the troops began to pass over the river. The stream at this point was over 2000 metres wide and very rapid, so that it took between two to four hours for the boats to go and come. For this reason only the men composing the First Column were sent across that day, the Artillery having perforce to wait until the 12th. When the Second Column came up on the following day (the 12th), it was found that some of the boats employed on

the preceding day were so badly damaged as to be useless. As it was thus impossible to get everything promptly across, the rest of the Division, all the baggage, stores, beasts of burden, etc., were left at Hwangju, while the Artillery camped at the ferry. On September 13th, the task of crossing the stream was resumed, but not finished. Those who had reached the opposite bank, pressed on towards Poshanching. The road was in a fearful state, being everywhere intersected by rivulets and indescribably muddy. It was not until the 14th that the whole Division crossed the Taidong, and on the same day Shachön was reached, a place eight miles distant from Phöngyang.

The Combined Brigade, under Major-General Ōshima, left Chunghwa on September 12th, and in the early forenoon reached an irregular range of hills north of Changtangtong, where the troops bivouacked for the night. The range here divides into two smaller chains, running north and south, the geographical features of the former being thenceforth of a different nature. The sloping road from Changtangtong leads on to Chunghwa and Phyöngyang, across the centre of the hills, which lie north and south. From a point north-west of the hills, another minor range goes on to the southern bank of the Taidong, and these little irregular-shaped mountains face the hills south of Phyöngyang, the valley between them being not more than 3000 metres broad. Between Changtangtong to the west and Tokiteh there is a constant succession of hills. To the right of the highroad, near Tokiteh, there is a pine forest; but this could afford little or no shelter to the Japanese troops, as shells from the cannon in the forts south of Phyöngyang might easily reach the forest. And with this one exception there was nothing to conceal the approach of the Japanese. They had thus to march in the open, within easy range of the Chinese guns. North of Tokiteh and built among the hills, were other Chinese earthworks, the site being admirably chosen to hold back a hostile army.

Passing by Tokiteh, there is a highroad leading to Suwankyo, some 50 or 60 metres to the north. And to the north again of this little village, the Chinese had thrown up earthworks. From Suwankyo the road runs along the left bank of the Taidong, on to Sönkyori, which lies 1800–2000 metres farther to the north. In

a small wooded place, about 300 metres from the ferry, the Chinese had built two forts, which were again protected by earthworks guarding the approach. Farther on to the north there were other forts of the enemy, commanding the highroad and facing the river. At their northwest extremity was a pontoon-bridge connecting with the south-eastern portion of the town of Phyöngyang.

Both on the 12th and 13th September the Japanese troops engaged in minor artillery "skirmishes;" but on the 14th, though the enemy kept firing away at the Japanese, they made no reply, reserving their strength for the next day, which was to become so memorable in the history of the two Empires.

But to return to the other Columns. The Sangnyöng Column marched from Namcheonchöm to Shingé, afterwards passing through Shu-an, Samdeung and Kangtong; and on September 12th they made good their crossing over the upper stream of the Taidong. On the following day they reached Kukchuhyön, when they bivouacked, awaiting impatiently the appointed date.

The Wönsan Column took, on September 13th, a route different from that chosen by the Sangnyöng Branch. At Sun-an, in the rear of Phyöngyang, they came across the Chinese local Commissariat and a sharp skirmish ensued; the enemy, some 200 strong, consisting of Infantry and Cavalry, were posted on the Yon-u-ri hills, a little south of Sun-an. After dislodging them, the Japanese bivouacked on the spot for the night. On the following 14th, the Column marched southward, leaving one battalion of Infantry (less two companies) to guard the place occupied the night before. Shortly after noon they reached the hill and village called Kampuk, the latter being hardly more than two miles distant from Phyöngyang. Here another, the last, halt was made, and everything put in readiness for the struggle of the ensuing day.

The castle-town of Phyöngyang, in the province of Phyöng-an-do, is an excellent specimen of the massive walled towns of earlier centuries, being built so as to withstand a prolonged siege. On the eastern and southern sides flows the many hundred metres broad and rapid Taidong; while on the right bank of the river,

and on a line with the castle, are some precipitous cliffs. To the north lie other hills, the highest of which is called Moktan-tei, literally "Peony Hill," and on this a temporary fortress had been erected, commanding the whole country round about. Taking due advantage of the natural features of the place, the Chinese had built redoubts, after a very solid and skilful fashion. Most of these were to the south-west of the castle, though several earth-works had also been thrown up on the Moktan-tei. In each fort there were field and mountain guns, besides gatlings. It was evident that the Chinese army resolved to take the offensive on this occasion; for they had erected two bridge-head forts on the left bank of the river in order to protect the pontoon-bridge, while in the pine-woods on the opposite side of the stream they had thrown up earth-works, a mile apart, intended to drive back an intruding force and co-operate with the forts on the right bank. Finally each small camp had a redoubt to protect it, and every post about the town was thoroughly fortified. In all, the Chinese earthworks numbered twenty-seven.

With regard to the number of the Chinese troops on the ground, there were four small armies, all composed of picked men and commanded by supposedly able generals. The names of the forces, their leaders, and their numerical strength, were as follow:—

NAME OF TROOPS.	COMMANDER.	NO. OF MEN.
Shengtse	Wei Jukwai	6,000
Etse	Ma Yukwan	3,000
Fung	Tso Paokwei	3,500
Moukden Shengtse	Nieh Kweilin	1,500
	Total	<hr/> 13,000

To this total should be added the number of the fugitives from Sönghwan and Asan, who must have been not less than 2,000 strong. Fifteen thousand is therefore a fair estimate of the strength of the Chinese forces.

At midnight of September 14th the Main Division left Shachön, arriving at 7 o'clock on the following morning at Sanchöntong, about two miles west of the town. It was now seen that each Chinese fort was surrounded by parallel trenches, the outermost being further encircled by a deep moat. On perceiving

the approach of the Japanese, the enemy immediately opened fire, which was as promptly replied to, and for a time the roar of cannon was tremendous. It was, however, soon evident that the enemy's earthworks were not to be silenced in a summary fashion, and so a bayonet charge was resolved upon. But just as the order was about to be given, some five hundred Chinese Cavalry dashed forth out of the smoke. A fierce fight ensued, the Chinese being driven back after losing 235 men killed and wounded, and 270 horses. At 9 a. m. another troop of Cavalry sallied forth from the Chhilsön Gate, and galloped on towards Samcheontung. Like their predecessors, they were also driven back, after suffering the loss of more than half their number. No less than three times thereafter did bodies of the enemy's horse make sorties from the An Gate (*An-mun*), intending to storm the high ground to the right of Samcheontung. In each case the attempt was frustrated by the quick firing and splendid marksmanship of the Japanese. A general fire along the whole Japanese line of battle was now directed against the forts, but without dislodging the enemy. Shortly after midday the firing ceased for a time, and the Japanese took advantage of the lull to narrowly observe the condition of the enemy, who, while still in possession of the forts, were evidently much demoralized and no longer able to assume the offensive. Dusk fell before a general attack could be launched against the forts, and in the meantime the Japanese had again and again to cross bayonets with bodies of Chinese soldiers, who sallied out of the town at intervals with the intent of breaking through the slowly narrowing Japanese line. There was no possibility of making for the city itself.

On the same day, September 15th, at 3 o'clock in the morning, the Combined Brigade silently marched on towards a place directly in front of the town-wall. Lieut.-Colonel Taketa Shūzan, with the Main Division, crossed the Shuman bridge and advanced along the high-road; Major Ichinohe Hyōe, in command of the Reserves attached to the Main Division, advanced from the right; Lieut.-Colonel Nishijima Sukeyoshi, who was commanding the Right Wing, pushed on to Sönkyori, a little to the north of the pontoon-bridge; Major Okuyama Gishō, with the Left Wing, crossed the Taidong to the south of Yangdok



Island, and reached the opposite bank in safety. Besides these forces, a Sub-company of the 1st Battalion, Eleventh Regiment of Infantry, took the road traversed by the Left Wing, acting independently of the rest, while a company of Cavalry attached to the Brigade followed after them. These two independent bodies pressed forward along the Kwachunchöm road to the right, intending afterwards to join the Sangnyöng Column. At dawn the Main Division, Reserves and Right Wing reached the enemy's tête-de-pont forts on the left bank of the Taidong. They met with a very warm reception, the Chinese firing a quick succession of volleys from their Mauser repeating-rifles. The Japanese being in the open and in plain view of their foes, there was no way to seek protection from the deadly missiles, which wrought great havoc in the attacking lines. The forts on the right bank of the river simultaneously opened fire on the assaulting troops, inflicting much damage. Unfortunately the Japanese Artillery, at this time, was far in the rear and the shells fired from their cannon failed to carry so far. They shifted their ground in consequence to a millet-field somewhat nearer, but only to go from bad to worse, for the millet-stalks prevented the proper sighting of the guns, while the ground was low. Many men were killed here. A section of the Right Wing now advanced, regardless of the storm of shot and shell, to a place midway between the enemy's earthworks, on the right side of the high-road and the outlying forts. With a cheer they charged the first or left-hand forts and, the Reserves coming up in time, succeeded in capturing it. The whole fire of the Chinese forts was now directed against this spot, and so fierce was it that the bold captors determined to die where they stood. Sub-lieutenant Teranishi Hidetake, who carried the regimental colours, tried to plant the flag the wall of the redoubt, while Lieut.-Colonel Nishijima Sukeyoshi sprang on the wall and loudly gave his orders. Lieut.-Colonel Taketa also called upon the troops to hold their ground, his presence and example encouraging them to renewed efforts. Despite the murderous fire to which they were exposed, the Japanese thus stood firm. A desperate attempt was made to carry the larger fort at the point of the bayonet, but, being exposed to a raking flank-fire, the Japanese were not successful in this. And it was even deemed advisa-

ble to evacuate the captured earthwork, on account of the too exposed position and the attendant loss of life.

The battle continued to rage till after midday, until in fine the attacking forces became weak because of thirst and hunger. For most of the soldiers were fighting these many hours on an empty stomach, no food having passed their lips since three o'clock that morning. Moreover, their ammunition was beginning to give out. Bayonets were then hastily fixed and preparations made to receive the enemy's charge along the line. In the direction whence the Wönsan and Sangnyöng Columns as well as the Main Division were trying conclusions with the enemy, the fight was now abating, the cannonade having ceased entirely. Major-General Ōshima Yoshimasa therefore judged that, on that side, hostilities had stopped for the time being. There was thus no reason to charge along the front, and so the word was passed for the men to fall back on their camps. The wounded being cared for and the dead carried away from the scene, the Brigade slowly withdrew, the enemy making no attempt to pursue. The attack of the Left Wing had meanwhile been frustrated, but in an unexpected manner. After crossing the Taidong and reaching the right bank, the forces were about to make an attack on the castle when their aim was rendered ineffective by a fire which the enemy had started on that side of the river, and also by another fire which suddenly broke out in the village on the left bank. The flames rapidly assumed such proportions and the smoke was so blinding that all advance became quite impossible. Relinquishing the intention of continuing the attack that day, the Left Wing fell back and awaited the morrow.

Turning now to the Sangnyöng Column and its story, it appears that camp was broken at midnight of September 14th. Crossing the little Hapchung, a highland facing the Chinese earthworks was made at 4.30 a. m. (September 15th). At this moment a thunderous discharge of cannon was heard, coming from the Wönsan Column, the Artillery of which body had been ranged on slope of Mt. Kampuk. Before commencing to fire, Major-General Tatsumi Naobumi sent some men to the rear, only a few hundred metres from the enemy's forts. These forts were on Moktan-tei, or "Peony Hill," a very strong place to the north



MAJOR-GENERAL TATSUMI.

of the castle and splendidly defended. On sighting the Japanese, the enemy at once opened a furious and well-sustained fire, causing many deaths among the advance section commanded by Major Tomita Harukabe. The Japanese were, of course, in the open and absolutely exposed to the hostile fire, so that it required dauntless courage and an iron will to press forward under such circumstances. Just then the Japanese Artillery came dashing up, and quickly

lining the guns back of the steadily advancing troop, opened a telling fire. By this time the Wönsan Column had arrived on the ground, and with the others delivered a general attack, the Wönsan men making for the earthworks on the enemy's left. A body of men under Major Tomita advanced towards the central forts; while another, larger section, led by Major Yamaguchi Keizō, of the advance guard, charged the forts lying on the enemy's right. The Japanese batteries were placed far to the rear of the advancing columns, yet their aim was superb,—the great shrapnel shells dropping one after another with fatal precision into the central forts. Flesh and blood could not stand it; after a short wavering the Chinese evacuated their forts, running anywhere and everywhere to get out of the range of those death-dealing missiles. The only fort which remained unshaken was the one already referred to on the summit of the Moktan hill, and to capture this Major Yamaguchi was ordered to charge with his command. Major Tomita was now told to lead his men round to the back of the castle, a direction also taken by Colonel Satō Tadashi, with two battalions of Infantry, The castle was thus exposed simultaneously to an attack from three sides. Colonel Satō's men suffered severely, the Chinese pouring volley after

volley from their Mauser rifles into the devoted ranks, killing or wounding more than 100 men. But hottest of all was the work that fell to the share of Major Yamaguchi's command. They were advancing from the front, in full view and easy range of the Chinese guns. The enemy's gatlings in particular wrought great damage at this point, the shot sweeping down the hill in iron streams, there being many more killed outright than wounded. But nothing could stop the oncoming Japanese. As the ranks thinned, the survivors closed up the gaps and finally drove the enemy from the foremost redoubts. Cannon were now hastily brought up from the rear and ranged on the earthworks which had just been captured, their fire being directed against the Hyönmu Gate (*Gembu-mon*). But when it was perceived how those who had gone to storm the redoubt on the Moktan-tei were suffering, the guns were instantly turned in that direction. A storm of shells soon battered the earthworks to pieces and effectually silenced the enemy's gatlings, to which they had attached such importance. After that, the work was easy. With ringing cheers Major Yamaguchi and his brave men carried the redoubt, and soon the Japanese flag was waving over its shattered walls.



MAJOR YAMAGUCHI KEIZO.

Having by this time got close to the walls of the town, the Wönsan and Sangnyöng Columns now exchanged volleys with the enemy posted on the walls and in the turrets. As the day wore on, the enemy showed signs of being eager to retreat. The body under Colonel Satō, which had attacked the castle from the rear, was fearfully cut up by the bullets which rained from the ramparts and turrets of the Hyönmu Gate. Seeing this, Major Moji Watarō, who was serving under Colonel Satō, called to Captain Atarashi Yasumasa and proposed to force a way into a

corner of the castle, and thus keep the Chinese from firing at the troops on Moktan-tei. The Captain at once sent for Lieutenant Mimura Ikutarō and ordered him to lead the forlorn hope against



COLONEL SATŌ.

the Hyōnmu Gate. With a handful of men—just sixteen, all told—the Lieutenant darted forward, scaled the walls, threw open the massive portals of the gate, and killed the Chinese in the ramparts above it. There were only 140 or 150 metres between the Lieutenant and the Chinese forces, so that he and his men were dreadfully mauled; but the Japanese Artillery promptly followed up the advantage and kept the Chinese from re-taking the Gate. In a few minutes more a Sub-company under

Lieutenant Morihisa and some soldiers belonging to the 10th Brigade came running up at full speed, and between them they held the Gate. Soon after the little troop was further joined by the Commanders of the 6th Company and 2nd Battalion, and the Second in Command of the Eighteenth Regiment.

At 4.45 p. m. the enemy's fire, which had hitherto been continuous, suddenly ceased, and a white flag was displayed above the walls. This did not, however, deceive Major-General Tastumi, for he was well acquainted with the frequent treachery in such signals; he did not, therefore, at once advance with his forces into the town. As however the silence continued and there appeared to be no further attempt at resistance, the Major-General entered the conquered town through the Hyōnmu Gate, accompanied by his adjutant, Captain Katsura Shinchō, and two bodies of soldiers under the command of Majors Tomita and Yamaguchi—who had done such good service on this great day. The little party marched along the walls until they reached the

gate of the inner castle. Had treachery been intended, it is evident that the Japanese would here have been shot down to a man, for beyond the gate there was a gentle slope, and on the left some precipitous cliffs overhanging the rapid Taidong; while high walls shut in the whole on the right. Just then a shower came up, with heavy thunder, completely obscuring the surroundings. Some Chinese now came forward and said that though they yielded themselves prisoners, it would be impossible to call the rôle of the soldiers in the town, owing to the heavy rain. They requested, therefore, that all matters connected with the capitulation be postponed until the following day. Adjutant Katsura was ordered to talk with the Chinese, but no conclusion could be arrived at. However Major-General Tatsumi thought it better to accede to the request of his beaten foes, and said that he would postpone occupying the city until the following day; they, the Chinese, should remain as they were and make no attempt at further resistance, or the walls should be shattered to the last stone. With all this, Major-General Tatsumi put no confidence in the promises of the Chinese, feeling sure that they would attempt run off; and his suspicion was shortly more than justified: for at about 9 o'clock in the evening the Chinese began to fly along the Wiju highway, trusting to luck and the darkness to effect their escape. But this step had been foreseen, and the wretched men found Colonel Satô and his Regiment prepared to intercept their retreat. Colonel Satô had posted bodies of his men on either side of the road, and these opened fire on the stream of Chinese fugitives, who fought with all the energy of despair. Despite the firing, batches of the enemy tried until dawn to break through that death-dealing line. When day broke the sight was a fearful one. The corpses were in literal heaps, and the whole place thereabouts strewn with dead and dying Chinese. In one place alone, back of Kichimyô on the outer line of pickets, there were over two hundred corpses counted, besides thirty dead horses. Elsewhere lay scores upon scores of dead.

The glory of the capture of this formidable town thus falls to the Wönsan and Sangnyöng Columns, although they would probably not have been so promptly successful had it not been for the desperate courage exhibited on that memorable 15th Septem-

ber by the troops composing the Main Division. Early in the morning of the following day, the two victorious Columns marched into and occupied the town, which presented an indescribable scene of confusion, dead bodies lying everywhere. At two o'clock in the morning of the same day the Main Division advanced to give what they intended should be the final attack; but meeting with no resistance entered the town from the Western Gate—and found, to their unbounded joy, that it had already been taken by their triumphant comrades. Giving three echoing cheers for the Emperor, Lieut.-General Nozu Michitsura, with his men, entered the inner castle at 7 o'clock. Before the Combined Brigade left their bivouac, a mounted messenger brought the great news that the city had fallen and the enemy fled; so Major-General Ōshima Yoshimasa marched into the town through the South Gate his troops being wildly jubilant and ever cheering for the Emperor as they marched through the fallen stronghold. It was a great day for the battle-worn soldiers.

The news of the battle reached Japan on the same day on which H. M. the Emperor, Commander-in-Chief of both Army and Navy, moved the Principal Head-Quarters to Hiroshima—and there were many who held the coincidence to be one of special significance. On the same day Lieut.-General Nozu, Commander-in-Chief of the Division, sent a body of soldiers to pursue the fleeing Chinese, of whom hundreds were shot down before they could reach a place of safety.

---

## II.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

### 1.—FAITHFUL UNTO DEATH.

PROMINENT among the many brave men who fell at Sönkyori was Captain Machida Saneyoshi, of the First Company, 11th Regiment. The southern tête-de-pont forts on the left bank of the Taidong, where such great carnage was noted, had a path leading to them for a distance 50 metres in front, with broader, slightly wooded, roads on either side. All else was a level plain. When the fight

here was at its greatest height and the bullets raining in a continuous stream on the attacking forces, Captain Machida ordered his men to follow, and led the way to those death-dealing redoubts. Emerging from the little wood already mentioned, the men boldly pressed forward until they were within fifty paces of the forts. The noise of the firing here was tremendous, so great indeed that even the loudest commands were inaudible; so the Captain ran forwards and then along the whole scattered line of his company in order to keep the men's eyes on him and make them take their cue from his actions. But now a bullet pierced his abdomen, passing clean through him with a great gush of blood. Placing his left hand on the gaping wound, he still kept moving on, flourishing his good sword with his right. A second bullet then struck his thigh, and several men sprang forward, wishing to take him to the rear. This the Captain positively refused to consent to, and he still kept calling to his men to advance. A third cruel bullet now hit his right shoulder, and, in an agony he fell crying, "Cut off my head! Never let my body be taken by the cruel enemy." His eyes still flamed with the fury of battle as he spoke, but these were his last words. Despite the storm of missiles some of his men lifted him from the ground and carried him back to where the Reserves were stationed. There he died of his dreadful wounds.

---

## 2.—TWO BRAVE SWIMMERS.

Two days before the attack on Phyöngyang, a Battalion belonging to the 11th Regiment received orders to form a junction with the Main Body of the Division. Going on to Yöngchinpho, on arriving at the bank of the river, no native crafts were found in which the Battalion might be ferried over. There was some perplexity at this, and Sub-Lieutenant Nakanishi Fukumatsu, with a few men, was sent out to reconnoitre and get a few boats if possible. After going a short distance they caught sight of some Koreans in two pretty large boats, rowing down stream and hugging the opposite bank. The clumsy craft were then about 2000 metres off. The Japanese at once called loudly to the boatmen and



beckoned for them to come at once ; the Koreans however paid no attention to their cries and gestures and kept going stolidly downstream. The exasperated Japanese then threatened them with their rifles, which caused the Koreans to spring with surprising agility on shore and make off as fast as their legs could carry them, of course leaving their boats behind. On this Hayakawa Saisuke, a first-class private, and Kusube Matsuji, a second-class soldier, earnestly begged the Sub-Lieutenant to let them swim the rapid stream and fetch the much-needed boots. This request was granted, both soldiers being known to be first-rate swimmers. Quickly divesting themselves of their upper garments, the two men plunged into the river, which was very rapid and about 400 metres broad at this point. In a little while both succeeded in stemming the swift current and reaching the other side, where they clambered without much difficulty into the boats and brought them across. With these craft as an aid, several other boats were requisitioned and the Battalion was quickly ferried across, without accident. Joining the Main Body at just the proper time, the Battalion did yeoman's service on that memorable 15th of September. That they did so was in no small degree owing to the skill and promptness of these two bold swimmers.

---

### 3.—A COOL SERGEANT.

ŌSHITA TATSUO, a First-Class Sergeant of the First Company, 11th Regiment, was also very conspicuous for cool bravery in the Sōnkyori affair. Not only were the Chinese in the southern bridge-head forts far in excess in point of numbers, but they were also behind massive ramparts ; whereas the Japanese were in the open without so much as a tree or bush to shelter them. Sergeant Ōshita was greatly vexed at this, and was, despite the hail of bullets, seeking for a better place for his men when a shot struck him in the right knee, causing him to fall. He determined in spite of his severe wound that he would not stay where he was ; so, crawling along, with great difficulty he reached his former station. There he made shift to bandage his leg himself, and

after stopping the hæmorrhage temporarily, hobbled back to where his men were fighting and resumed command, spurring his soldiers on to increased efforts. Every man was surprised at his fortitude and coolness, and the example thus set did not fail to have the desired effect.

---

#### 4.—A FAITHFUL ORDERLY.

WAKAMIYA SUETARŌ, a second-class private, acted as orderly to the ill-fated Captain Machida Saneyoshi, whose death has already been described. Where the Captain went there went also his trusty orderly. He ran hither and thither with the Captain's commands, his prompt valour being remarkable in this scene of dread. When the Captain fell, Wakamiya was the first to spring to his side. He tried tenderly to raise the fallen warrior to his feet, in order to carry him to the rear; but as he did so a bullet struck him in the throat and he fell. Wakamiya was immediately taken to the field-lazaret, and given all possible attention. Yet ten days later he succumbed to his wound, thus following his beloved officer into the world beyond the grave.

---

#### 5.—NO SALUTE NECESSARY.

THE Eighth Company of the 21st Regiment had been sent on to Naktong, to act as guards of the local military telegraphic station. Kohibara Matsutarō, a third-class private belonging to this company, was on one occasion ordered to repair to Teh-koo, on business connected with the local station. It was an oppressively hot day, and the road he had to traverse both long and difficult. Half-way to his destination, Kohibara suddenly met with Lieut.-General Nozu, Commander of the Fifth Division. In an instant the soldier wheeled and saluted with military precision. But Lieut.-General Nozu called the weary man to his side and began to talk familiarly with him. "You neet not," he began,

“salute any officer whom you meet on the road. It’s too much trouble. And what a hot, tiring day you have for your walk!” Grateful for such kindly words Kohibara replied, “No, General; I’m not feeling fatigued. Thank you, Sir.” “Keep up a bold heart,” the General concluded, “or you’ll never be able to perform any great deed. It will be an honour to me if you bear in mind what has been said.” The simple-minded soldier was much moved by these friendly words, and went his way with cheerfulness and alacrity, all his weariness forgotten. “The love of our superior officers for their followers,” adds the narrator of this little episode, “and the alacrity with which our soldiers are ever ready to sacrifice even life itself in the service of our country, are two of the most real and fundamental characteristics of the warriors of Japan.”.....

---

6.—FIRST COME, LAST SERVED.

THE First Battalion of the 21st Regiment was, as has been stated, very greatly cut up at Sönkyori, the fatal casualties being numerous. The surgeons worked amidst scores of more or less severely wounded men, the whole place looking more like a shambles rather than a field lazaret. Gamō Kotarō, a second-class soldier of the Third Company of this Battalion, was brought in, a bullet having penetrated his left thigh. Just as the surgeon came to examine his wound, another soldier, dreadfully hurt and his face covered with blood, was carried in on a stretcher. Gamō, lying flat on the ground, had caught sight of his wounded comrade and, turning to the surgeon, said: “I am less severely wounded than the man who has just come in. I can wait; please see to him first.” The surgeon was touched by the man’s fortitude and patience and did as he had been requested.—It is nothing much of a story; yet when we remember how severely wounded Gamō was and in what great pain he must have been, we must acknowledge that he had a great and kindly heart.

---

## 7.—THE ADVENTURES OF WADA SHÖTARÖ.

In the Seventh Company of the 21st Regiment, which formed part of the Sangnyöng Branch under Major-General Tatsumi in the advance on Phöngyong, was Wada Shötarö, a first-class private. On September 9th the Column reached Nyöngtong, from which place on to Kwanchangka in Phyöng-an-do, which was made on September 11th, Wada and his company marched on the left of the Column as a guard. Lieutenant Köchi Nobuhiko, of the Fifth Company, was about sending in the report of his reconnaissance in the neighbourhood of Namkang (on the upper Taidong), which he had made by order of the Division Commander; and on hearing this Wada requested that he might be selected as messenger, to carry the report. Chinese were everywhere, and the treacherous Koreans would be sure to do a solitary soldier some injury if possible; but in the face of all such perils Wada cheerfully volunteered, and had the pleasure of being selected for this adventurous service. Just where the Staff was nobody knew, so it behoved the messenger to be extremely cautious and keep his eyes open. He first changed his dress for that of a Korean, and then started off with an interpreter, Koda Hyöji by name. There being no ferry-boat in the tributary of the Taidong, the two men swam across, carrying their clothing on their heads. Passing through several unknown (to them) districts, they traversed the opposite range of lofty hills, and the next morning at 2 a. m. (the 12th) branched off from the main road to Chungwha, taking the direction of Shangwön. It was still pitch-dark and no one astir of whom they might make inquiries about the road. They turned into a millet-field for a brief sleep, and just then narrowly escaped being discovered by a number of Chinese horsemen passing by. At 7 a. m. they reached Shangwön and, avoiding as much as possible any conversation with the natives, pressed on towards Kantongpa. The interpreter now grew sick, and so bad did he appear that the two men had great difficulty in reaching Hwangju, where there was a Japanese commissariat-station. Here the sick man was left, Wada determining to press on alone. After getting all the information obtainable concerning the route to be taken,

the brave fellow started off, walked all the night through, and at 10 a. m. of the following day reached Shipyiphon on the Taidong. It was now flood-tide, so Wada was compelled to wait until the ebb at 4 p. m., when he crossed the stream with the aid of some Engineers belonging to the Japanese forces. The road then led to Wulkang, but was excessively miry and full of ruts, so that his progress was painfully slow. Being unacquainted with the language, he experienced much trouble in asking the route and was repeatedly led out of his way. At last at dawn of the 14th September he reached a village, where he inquired in writing the road to the Staff-Quarters. Unfortunately their replies were unintelligible; all that he could learn was that the Quarters had been removed to Pongshan, whither he now shaped his course. Overcome with fatigue and his two nights without sleep, he was compelled to take a short rest in a glen of a hill he was crossing, and there he ate the last morsels of food he had with him. After a nap of two hours' duration, the weary man took the highway and by dint of following the track of the horses and vehicles that had passed, reached Pongshan at noon. There a new disappointment awaited him, as he was told that the Staff had gone on to Shinhungton. Once more resuming his journey, Wada at last had the delight of handing in the precious report at 6.30 p. m. of that day. The Staff officers praised him for what he had done and asked various questions about the condition of the Sangnyöng Column, the transportation of provisions, etc. They told him to stay where he was until communication should be re-established with the Sangnyöng Column; but as the attack on Phyöngyang was settled for the next day, Wada refused this kindly proposal, stating that he was quite able to keep up with the rest. At 2 a. m. the following morning camp was broken. In spite of his necessarily great weariness, Wada marched with the van. The sound of heavy firing was now heard in the direction of Phyöngyang: the great battle had evidently begun. At 8 a. m. the men with whom was Wada, reached Pehsan, about 2000 metres north-west of the castle. There he joined with the foremost bands and was a prominent figure in the storm of shot and shell. Between himself and his comrades there was the river, separating them from the castle. Both banks of the stream were nothing more than

swamps, through which no one might hope to pass. The Japanese here were moreover exposed to a fierce enfilade from the Kangshöl and Chingsan roads. Staff-Major Semba Tarō, who was in charge of the topographical survey, called for Wada, in whose fidelity and patient endurance he had great faith, and said:— “Take a boat and, keeping out of bullet-range, go along the stream to see if you can find any likely ford; moreover, get near enough the castle on the south-west to find out whether the walls can be scaled.” Wada went at once, and, having procured a boat, crossed over to the opposite side, taking accurate soundings of the depth of the stream. On getting close to the western part of the wall, he was suddenly espied by the Chinese and made the target of a score of rifles. The scout withdrew uninjured, walked cautiously around to the south of the walls and reached a hill whence he enjoyed an unobstructed view of the enemy and their operations. He noticed that the shells of the Japanese guns were gradually breaking the walls and that on the south there was an open field flanked by Chinese earthworks. Retracing his steps he regained the river and his boat, and was shortly afterwards able to make a most interesting and valuable report. He had taken only one hour in reconnoitring the whole.

---

#### 8.—ONE AGAINST A THOUSAND.

THE Fourth Company of the First Battalion of this same Regiment was fated to suffer most severely at Sönkyori. It redounds to the credit of the Company that even after a large portion of the men had been either killed or wounded the survivors made several charges. When the enemy began their furious enfilade at the Japanese Left Wing, Sergeant Kawakami and the men under his command replied most steadily to the fire, until the soldiers under the stout-hearted Sergeant were shot down to a man. Great as had been the carnage, Kawakami was by no means dismayed. “How fortunate am I,” he exclaimed, “to have found so good a place in which to die for my country!” He then made, quite unaided

and alone, a dash towards the enemy, firing again and again as he ran forwards. He had not got far before he was killed.

---

#### 9.—A PROPHETIC LETTER.

IN the attack on Sönkyori, Fujiuchi Totarō, a second-class private of the Tenth Company, 21st Regiment, received a mortal wound in his breast. He called to a comrade and said, taking a blood-besmeared letter from beneath his coat, "Please see that this reaches my father. It is my most honorable destiny to die for my country; I knew before-hand what would befall me at Phyöngyang and have so stated in this letter, which was written while we were staying at Jinsen." He would have said more, but the blood gushing from his wound stopped the power of speech, and in a few moments he was dead.

---

#### 10.—A BIRDS-EYE VIEW.

THE greatest obstacle in the attack on Phyöngyang was the swift, deep and broad Taidong River, which had to be passed over before the siege of the stronghold could begin. Before reaching the stream, the Japanese Left attacked the enemy on the right bank, while marching towards a village south of Phyöngyang. The place was about 1200 metres distant from the enemy's nearest redoubts. The plain thereabouts was very flat, and fields of millet, grown very high, prevented the Japanese from seeing what the enemy were about. The Chinese soldiers took full advantage of this, to them, favourable position, and drew nearer, firing as they came on. The Commander of the Eleventh Company, 21st Regiment, was much vexed at this; and noticing a tall tree near at hand, called for a volunteer to climb it and thence inspect the enemy's movements. Ishizaki Sashirō, a second-class private, at once pressed forward, eagerly claiming permission to climb the tree, although he well knew that in so

doing he would be the target for scores of bullets. Permission being accorded, Ishizaki unstrapped his knapsack and laid aside his gun, and then nimbly climbed upwards. There he had an uninterrupted view and closely inspected the oncoming enemy and their movements. He stayed quietly in the tree for some time until he had seen all that was necessary; and in these ten minutes or thereabouts the tree was five times struck by bullets within two metres of where he was. Ishizaki paid no more heed to these deadly missiles than if they had been so many noisy wasps. Fortunately he received no hurt and descended in safety; but his escape was little short of miraculous.

---

#### II.—A FATAL RESCUE.

THE battle of Phyöngyang showed the Chinese leaders out-generalled at every point, and this at once settled the fate of the war. On no other occasion—with perhaps one exception, the battle of Kangwasæ—did the Chinese make anything like so determined a stand; nor did they fight anywhere else with such dogged persistence. But with such craven Generals, such carpet-knights, as Wei and Yeh (the former of whom has since expiated his cowardice on the scaffold), the Chinese troops could hope for nothing better than the defeat which actually overtook them.

Nothing could have been more sanguinary than the fighting about the bridge-head forts, especially the southernmost of the three. These were at the head of the pontoon-bridge spanning the Taidong. To suppress them was absolutely necessary, and here the Japanese, being few in number and fighting in the open, met with the most determined resistance. Particularly the Central Company of the 21st Regiment, which had advanced to within 30 metres of the forts, was exposed to a cross-fire which, added to the constant volleys from the enemy's magazine rifles, wrought great havoc in the Japanese ranks. The deep trench surrounding the forts as well as the massive nature of the walls made the place wellnigh impregnable, so that the Japanese, despite the utmost *elan* and dash, frequently fell back in confusion and



disorder. At 9 a. m. the enemy sallied out and made a desperate counter-attack on the Japanese Right, where was Sub-Lieutenant Tanabe Motojirō, with a small number of troopers. The conflict now grew exceedingly bitter. The invincible courage alone of the Lieutenant and his men succeeded in driving back the Chinese, but not until the young commander had received a severe wound in his right leg. There was no cover, no shelter; the wounded officer had nowhere to go. Seeing this, a soldier ran forward, caught the falling man and lifted him on his back despite the fierce fire going on about them. The rescuer was Matsubara Tokusuke, a first-class private of the First Company, First Battalion, 21st Regiment of the line. With the wounded officer on his back Matsubara then made a bold dash for safety, but a bullet struck him in the head, killing him instantly. Lieutenant Tanabe was, however, saved, as others now rushed forward to his aid.

Matsubara lies on the field where he fought so well; but his gallant deed lives after him.

---

#### 12.—TWO GALLANT MEN.

In the storming of the bridge-head forts Captain Hayashi Hisazane, Commander of the Second Company, First Battalion, 21st Regiment, was especially noticeable for his daring. The carnage on both sides was, at this point, very great, particularly in the vicinity of Sōnkyori, where the corpses lay thick everywhere and blood flowed like a river. One reason of this great bloodshed was that everything was in favour of the enemy; the Japanese had nothing but their personal valour to fall back upon. Captain Hayashi charged with his men until just under the walls of the forts. Suddenly a bullet struck him, inflicting a fatal wound; the Captain staggered, then fell on the edge of the trench surrounding the death-dealing redoubts. His orderly, Shioaku Masutarō, was soon at his side, although he himself had also been badly hurt. Crawling painfully towards the dying officer, Shioaku crouched beside him. "Here am I," said the

noble fellow, "your orderly Shioaku. As long as I live you shall not be touched by the enemy's swords." He tried to cheer the mortally wounded man, firing repeatedly until his last cartridge was exhausted. But his strength was rapidly ebbing away, and soon master and man lay dead beneath the shot-riddled ramparts.

\* \* \* \* \*

In Captain Hayashi's Company was one Funabashi Magoichi, a second-class private. He too was mortally wounded in the hail of bullets. Knowing that death was at hand, the undaunted man called to some of his comrades beside him and with his last strength drew the still remaining cartridges from his pouch and distributed them among his companions. "Pray," said he faintly, "take these and avenge my death on the enemy!" He had hardly spoken the words before he expired.

---

#### 13—HIS ONE REGRET.

SHORTLY after the outbreak of the war, Ōshima Ginsaku, a second-class soldier of the Second Company, 21st Regiment, was stationed at Naktong, in Kyongsan-do, there to guard the Telegraph Office connected with the military wire between Fusan and Seoul. Unfortunately while there he fell a victim to a prevalent disorder, and despite medical care rapidly grew worse. Just before the sick man relapsed into a final coma, he was asked by Sergeant Asahi Tōichirō whether he had any word to send home? adding that if he had, he, Asahi, would see that such a message reached its destination. "Thank you," faintly replied the dying man, "I have no message to send. What I most deplore is that I should have to die without encountering the enemy." Shortly afterwards the Messenger came. It was about dusk of September 3rd.

---

#### 14.—HARADA JŪKICHI AND THE HYÖNMU GATE.

In the march on Phyöngyang, the 18th Regiment of the line, belonging to the Third Division, composed the Wönsan Column.

The battle, it will be remembered, began on the dawn of the day on which the attack was made. After a most valorous struggle, the Regiment succeeded in capturing all three redoubts north of the castle. The enemy retreated, entering within the castle-walls, whence they shot from loopholes or from the towers above the gates. Here the Japanese fire was of little or no avail, the enemy being perfectly protected by the massive ramparts, whence their fire was very galling. This was particularly the case at the Hyōnmu Gate (*Gembu-mon*), on the brow of a very steep slope, which was most ably and fiercely defended. The troops under Colonel Satō seemed unable to do anything, and the casualties



THE OPENING OF THE HYŌNMU GATE (from a sketch taken on the spot by Lieutenant Mimura), AND PORTRAIT OF HARADA JŪICHI (specially taken for this book).

were beginning to grow very numerous, not a little disheartening the attacking columns. Major Moji Watarō with his Battalion now began to approach the gate from the north side. If only a corner could be broken down, he thought, or some one breach be made in the wall, it would be comparatively easy to rush in, repel the defenders, and thus put a stop to the terrible loss of life in the Japanese ranks. Calling up Captain Atarashi Yasumasa, he proposed that a violent attack should be made at one corner of the gate, which, as will be seen from the illustration, formed the base of a hollow square, the adjoining walls being the sides. In some angle thereabouts a breach must be made, he declared. The order was passed on to Lieutenant Mimura Ikutarō, who accepted the task with alacrity. With a handful of men he went forward, indifferent to the furious rain of bullets, and reached the base of the wall. Here he would at once have climbed up the solid stones forming the masonry of the wall, had not Harada Jūkichi, a second-class private belonging to the Lieutenant's Sub-company, begged to be permitted to scale the wall first on account of the great personal danger of the enterprise. The Lieutenant's life, he urged, was of greater value than his own. All this passed more quickly than it takes time to write it down, and the next thing was the surprising sight of Harada scaling the wall, closely followed by the Lieutenant and a few others. In a minute the task was over and Harada atop the ramparts, the Chinese appearing to be paralysed by the reckless audacity of the feat. Taking advantage of their confusion, Harada leaped into the midst of the crowd of soldiers, using his bayonet with herculean force, he himself being a man of unusual strength and activity. Lieutenant Mimura followed hard after, fighting with his naked sword and cutting down all opposition. In an instant they were down on the other side of the gate, while some of Harada's comrades were still fighting on the wall and others were coming up. The gate had been barricaded by logs and large stones, and these had to be removed before ingress or egress was possible. In consideration of his bravery, Lieutenant Mimura gave Harada the honour of flinging open the portals, and while the others kept up a steady fire on the enemy about them, or else fought hand to hand, Harada worked with a will, and shortly had the barricade

removed. The next thing was to break the huge iron lock, and this he effected with a large stone. A wrench, a great pull, a push,—and the massive portals of the great gate were flung open, the impatient Japanese outside pouring through with irresistible force, like some swift mountain-torrent,

“swollen high by weeks of rain.”

This was the beginning of the end; the Japanese were within the walls; the fortress fell and the great battle was decided.

\* \* \* \* \*

The deed has now become famous, the theme of a score of poems and ballads. It was soon noised abroad in Japan, published in the local foreign press and went thence on to Europe and America. But for many months most of the details given were inexact or downright mistaken. We have, however, made most minute investigations, and what has been written is based on Lieutenant Mimura's account as handed in to us, and the narratives of those who took part in the storming of the gate. That Harada Jūkichi performed a most valorous deed is true; but that the fifteen gallant men who followed the Lieutenant also merit the highest praise, is no less true. Two of these men were Sergeants, and were killed in the tower above the gate, fighting against overwhelming odds. The others had a most fierce combat with the foe, and it was little short of miraculous that they escaped being killed to a man. This can be attributed only to the astonishment of the defending Chinese, who were unaccustomed to dashing gallantry of such a kind. Yet as they awoke to a realization of what had been done, they fought determinedly with the little handful of heroes, inflicting on most scars which the survivors will carry to their dying day. Fearing that the ever-increasing numbers of their foes might dishearten his men, Lieutenant Mimura cheered them on to still greater exertions. To Sergeant Kakishima Yatarō he gave the order to bring up the rest of the Sub-company, for the men had not followed owing to the impossibility of hearing the Lieutenant's commands in the thunder of cannon and roll of musketry; the young officer moreover told the Sergeant to inform Captain Atarashi that the gate had been carried by storm. All this was said and done while the fight went furiously on. Harada Jūkichi had the distinction of

being selected to open the gate because the Lieutenant desired in some measure to reward him for his intrepid obedience; and while the bold man was doing this, the Lieutenant ordered the others to fire as rapidly and as steadily as possible on the closing-in Chinese, in order that Harada might do his work undisturbed. The removal of the barricade was no light task, yet promptly and dextrously accomplished, and the key of the citadel thus in the hands of the victorious Japanese.

---

15.—MISCELLANEOUS STORIETTES.

IN the attack on the town, Yamada Kinjirō, a third-class private of the Tenth Company, 18th Regiment—the one forming the Wōnsan Column—entered with his comrades the woods of Kijanyōng. The first section of this Company was afterwards sent on to the front of Kijamio, where the men had some very hard fighting to do. During the course of the fight, Yamada was severely wounded in the neck and leg, so that he fell to the ground. On the skirmish coming to an end, Yamada was found on the ground and carried off on a stretcher to the field-lazaret. Passing his Captain on the road thither, the former cried out to the still conscious and intensely suffering man, “Be firm!” To which Yamada replied, faintly yet audibly, “I am quite happy!” The weak voice found a prompt echo in the hearts of his comrades, stimulating them to renewed efforts.

\* \* \* \* \*

Uchiyama Umekichi and Katō Ki-ichirō, privates of second and third rank respectively, were in the thick of the hardest fight. So many fell that the party to which they belonged was ordered to retreat. To this the two men paid no heed, but stopped where they were, loading and firing with the precision of automata and thus covering the withdrawal of their comrades. It was not until they two had received a special command to come back that they slowly and calmly returned to their Company.

\* \* \* \* \*

Again, Imaizumi Takesaburō, a second-class soldier, was

badly wounded in the back. He left the field to get his wound dressed for the time being, then returned and fought to the end,—even taking part in the subsequent night-attack.

\* \* \* \* \*

Attached to the First Company of the 18th Regiment with the Wönsan Column, was Kikuchi Tarokichi, a private of the first-class. On reaching the Regiment's appointed station north of Phyöngyang, Kikuchi was noted for the bravery he exhibited in the battle that ensued. Implicitly obeying the instructions of his officer, he ran fearlessly hither and thither through the storm of bullets, gathering up and distributing the cartridges let fall by the wounded; informing his Sergeant and Lieutenant what effect the men's fire was having; and telling his comrades how to aim and what was the range. In the midst of all the noise and confusion Kikuchi was as calm as a summer-breeze, and materially heightened the effect of the men's fire by his careful and experienced injunctions. The Lieutenant was delighted with his cool and steady work.

\* \* \* \* \*

While the battle was raging to the north of Phyöngyang, Ōba Mampei, a private of the Second Class, belonging to the Sixth Company, 18th Regiment, received a severe wound in his left eye. Exhibiting no sign of pain or distress, he turned composedly to his comrades and said, "Boys, do your best!" and then walked off to get his wound treated.—Toyoda Saburō, a private of like rank in the same company, was at Kijanyöng when a bullet shot through his larynx. The wounded was a mortal one, yet he clapped his hand to the gaping orifice and cried out as well as he could to an officer standing close by, "I don't intend to die yet, Sir!" This he did to keep his comrades from losing heart, and the words had an excellent effect.

---

16.—"ALONE BUT STILL UNDAUNTED."

How hard the fighting in front of the two bridge-head forts at Sönkyori was, may be estimated from the fact that here the

Japanese lost no less than twenty officers and sub-officers killed. As has already been stated the havoc wrought in the ranks in one of the Sub-companies of the 4th Company, 1st Battalion, was fearful. Time and again the Japanese dashed forward, only to recoil from the ramparts, which seemed a wall of death-dealing fire. Finally the 4th Company was compelled to fall back on the Japanese line, leaving the majority of the men on the field. After the last charge, Inaba Saikichi, a private of the first-class, was seen left standing alone among the heaps of dead and wounded. He had himself received an injury which incapacitated him from any rapid movement, and so had determined to die fighting, covering the retreat of his comrades. Again and again he discharged his gun, keeping his face resolutely towards the enemy. But his comrades had not gone far before they saw him fall. He had been cut down by a Chinese sword.

---

17.—A LIFE FOR A GUN.

YOSHIDA ZENSHIRŌ, a first-class private of the Fourth Company, 1st Battalion, 21st Regiment, deserves recording in these pages, as an example of the soldier's love for his weapon. He had been sent, shortly after the battle opened, as one of a fighting body of scouts towards the enemy's line. After passing through a hail of bullets uninjured, several of his comrades dropping to rise no more, he made for the Japanese lines. But before he could reach comparative safety, he found that he should never be able to get back alive and make his report if he remained encumbered by his gun. Throwing this to the ground a distance of about 3 metres, he made a dash for the Japanese lines and had in a few moments the satisfaction of reporting all that had been seen and done. This over, without a word he began to run back towards the bullet-swept field where he had dropped his weapon. There were many other guns lying scattered over the field, but Yoshida, with true soldierly instinct, would have none but his own. He reached the spot, 'tis true, but was instantly killed by a bullet as he stooped to raise the precious weapon.—This is an



instance of the same stern martial spirit that held the Roman sentinel at his post before the Pompeian gate, while Vesuvius rained sulphurous fire upon the doomed city; that made Latour d'Auvergne carry the forty muskets out of the castle he had defended so heroically; that kept Nelson with his blazon of decorations on the quarter-deck of the *Victory*, despite the almost certainty of death.

---

18.—LAST WORDS.

DURING the night of September 15th-16th, Ōtani Tamigorō, a first-class private of the First Company, 21st Regiment, was one of the men engaged in hastily throwing up breast-works on the road leading to the Potong Gate, along which it was expected that the enemy might make an attempt to retreat. This, in fact, the Chinese did, and the night-combat here was fearful, the enemy fighting with desperation, knowing it was their last chance. The place where Ōtani was working was very much exposed, being within easy range of the hostile fire; but the brave fellow made light of this, stimulated his mates to greater efforts, and was every where at once. Before long a bullet struck him in the abdomen, inflicting a mortal wound. Some comrades gathering about him sought to carry him to the rear, but to this Ōtani would by no means consent. Lying prone on the ground, he continued to call out orders to the workers, until his strength failed him. Then seeing that his end was at hand, he said: "The end of the war is yet far off, and to die here at this time is really a pity. Yet as it is my country that I die for, my hope in coming here is more than fulfilled. It is evident that we have won a great victory, so why should n't I die cheering for my Emperor?" And so speaking, he raised a great cry of *Tennō Heika Banzai!*\* and then expired.

\*            \*            \*            \*

Takahashi Usaku, a second-class reservist of the Third Company, same Regiment, was sent out to reconnoitre just at

---

\* "His Imperial Majesty live forever!"

dusk of September 15th, when the firing of the combatants was gradually dropping off and a thunderstorm had come up. He set out with Nonami Heiji, a First Class Sergeant, in order to find out the disposition and intention of the enemy about the west gate. As they approached, some 200 Chinese suddenly rushed out of the gate and began firing rapidly at the scouts, who thought that the enemy might be coming to attack the Japanese outposts. The two men therefore turned and ran back to the Japanese lines, but not before Takahashi received a bullet in his left breast. With all his strength he continued to run towards the lines to carry his message, and when at last within hearing of his comrades cried aloud "The enemy come!" He dropped dead as he shouted out the words.

---

19.—ONE BRAVE MAN WORTH THIRTY.

AFTER the taking of the Hyönmu Gate and while the battle was still being fiercely contested, Ōta Masakichi, a private of the first-class, of the 18th Regiment, was told to look every now and then over the ramparts to see the condition of the enemy in the inner castle. Two men had already been picked off here, while doing this duty, by the enemy's sharpshooters; but nothing loath Ōta raised himself breast-high above the ramparts. An officer who saw him do this called out that he need not stay forever in that position: to take a quick look at intervals was all that was necessary. But to this well-meant advice Ōta rejoined, "Whether I am shot or not is a matter of destiny; I am not in the least afraid." This reckless boldness characterized his actions later on when he acted as orderly to the Commander of his Battalion. So bravely and successfully did he fulfil every duty that he won the praise of his superior, who said he felt safer with Ōta his side than if surrounded by thirty ordinary men.

---

## 20.—STUBBORN FIGHTERS.

SHIMADA ITARŌ, Sergeant of the Second Class, and Takakura Heijirō, a private of the first-class, belonged to the Fifth Company, Second Battalion, of the 21st Regiment; but for the time being were serving with the Fourth Company (First Sub-company). At 4 a. m., September 15th, they marched with the others towards the enemy's forts, and after taking the outer trench were not more than 10 metres distant from the foe. The Sub-company was on the left of the Main Body, *i. e.* to the farthest left of the whole line of attack, and cut off from immediate communication with the rest. At 9 a. m. the supply of ammunition ran short, and before this could be brought them the men were attacked on three sides: front, right flank, and from the opposite bank of the Taidong. To make matters still worse, the enemy in the fort in front now rushed out to charge the harrassed troop's left, firing at short range and most effectively. Sergeant Shimoda's section was in the most dangerous position of all. This did not however intimidate the Sergeant, who, with the skilful assistance of Takakura, kept the men from wasting their few cartridges and made them aim carefully. But no amount of bravery could keep them from the deadly bullets, which simply mowed down the men. At last only four soldiers were left un wounded. Calling to four other isolated combatants at a little distance, the Sergeant kept this little band at their post for over three hours. Then a ball struck the Sergeant in the back, severing his leather belt, while another almost simultaneously shot through his mouth, cutting a hole in both cheeks. No longer able to give commands, the Sergeant turned around to Takakura and tried to speak, but could only make a moaning sound, his teeth and tongue having been fearfully cut. Yet Takakura understood, and seeing that the injury was a mortal one, he urged the Sergeant to go to the rear. Instead of doing this, the brave man clapped his hands on his wounded cheeks and again essayed to speak. "Don't worry yourself about us", said Takakura quickly; "I'll take command and see that everything is done well. Go at once to the field-lazaret." Reassured by these words the Sergeant

marched painfully off, receiving two more wounds in his arms as he did so.

Takakura kept his word and held the place manfully. With his few troopers he successfully prevented the enemy from breaking into the Japanese line.

---

## 21.—A MIDNIGHT CAPTURE.

THE larger portion of the Third Battalion, 21st Regiment and the Eleventh and Twelfth Companies of the same Regiment, formed a special detachment acting as the Left Wing of the Combined Brigade under Major-General Ōshima. Shortly before the battle, this detachment had to cross the Taidong in order to reach the right bank and thence communicate with the Main Body of the Division. But they came to the very broadest part of the river, where the water was exceptionally deep, effectually checking any idea of fording the stream. The enemy had moreover with wise foresight collected all the available craft thereabouts on the opposite side, whence they kept firing incessant volleys at the Japanese as they came up. Under the circumstances, the Japanese were temporarily non-plussed. Just before midnight of September 14th, Major Okuyama Gishō, who was with the detachment, ordered First-Class Sergeant Kizane Shinjirō to swim the river and bring over as many boats as possible. Calling for volunteers the Sergeant soon had ten bold men with him, who rapidly divested themselves of their clothing and sprang into the chilly waves. By diving and swimming under water the men managed to avoid the enemy's bullets, and soon came back with no less than twelve native boats. In these the detachment was promptly ferried over, and afterwards took a prominent part in the battle.

---

## III.—THE ENGINEERING OPERATIONS AT SHIPYIPHO.

## I.—THE CROSSING OF THE TAIDONG.

SOME days before the attack on the castle-town, when the principal forces of the Fifth Division were about to take the route, Major Baba Masao, Commander of the Fifteenth Battalion of Engineers, was ordered to reconnoitre along the Taidong River, find a place suitable for crossing, and procure the boats necessary for the purpose of ferrying the Army across. In order to accomplish this by no means easy task Major Baba left the Main Body of the Division, taking with him as adjutant Lieutenant Takeda Makinosuke. Kōmshuyok was reached on September 5th. The Lieutenant was thereupon despatched to Chhōlto in order to get the needed boats and send them on to Nokshapho. Major Baba meanwhile followed the highroad, four mounted troopers acting as his escort, two interpreters also being with the party. On the 8th the Major rode into Hwangju. After most vexatious waitings and many hairbreadth escapes—no proper maps or Korean guides being obtainable—the Major concluded that Shipyipho was the place best suited for the crossing. This is where a tributary coming from Hwangju joins the main stream. Here the river is fully 2000 metres broad, with a difference of 5 metres in height at flood and ebb. The river moreover is very muddy and flows towards the sea at the rate of two metres a minute. But where the two streams meet the rush of the water along the low banks and in the centre of the river is very strong. Near the right bank there are numbers of water-worn boulders, quite hidden from view at flood-tide and forming a dangerous reef. Altogether the place is a highly unpropitious one; yet it is here only, at Shipyipho, that the opposite bank is broad and low, while all other place are quite unsuited for the landing of troops. True, the opposite shore was very muddy, but if it did not rain heavily there was no reason why the crossing should not be promptly effected. Finally the country on the other side was very bad and difficult to pass over, so that the Chinese had no idea that a crossing could here be attempted and therefore there were

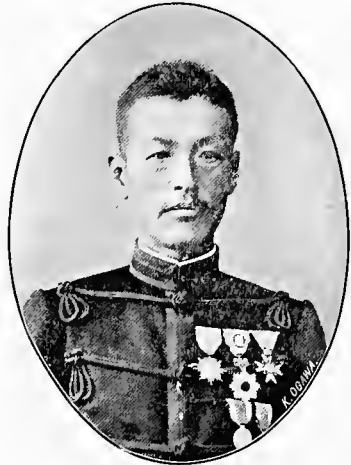
no scouts visible thereabouts and no provisions made to prevent the landing of the Japanese troops. And Major Baba rightly conceived that it was of great strategic value for the Army to approach Phyöngyang unperceived until the last moment. He therefore wired to the Division Commander that Shipyipho was, all things considered, the best place.

Now that the locality had been selected, it devolved upon the Major to see that the troops crossed safely and without mishap, so that they might appear suddenly before the doomed stronghold on the appointed day. The following three things were causes of great anxiety on his part:—(1) The Second Company of Engineers, who had set out after

the rest, had been selected for the work of looking after the crossing. He must now somehow contrive to bring up these men in a great hurry, so that they should be on the spot by September 10th. (2) The crossing had to be effected between the 11th–14th September, and during those days it was of the utmost importance that no rain should fall; else the left bank would become a veritable and impassable morass. Besides there was no shelter obtainable for the men or horses. (3) Somehow or other he must get enough boats to ferry the whole Army across.

With regard to the first point, the soldiers might come up in time if they marched all day and night; but the second was something beyond human control. While as to boats, there were none to be had anywhere in the neighbourhood, the Chinese having taken, burnt or hidden every one.

A detachment of telegraph-constructors now joined the Company of Engineers. The former took ship to Yöngshan, there to meet with the Main Body of the Company. At the latest, they had to get to Pongshan on the 8th; so again taking ship they left Yöngshan and reached Tongpa. After many privations,



MAJOR BABA MASAO.

and great discomforts—particularly the lack of food—the boat made Hwangju at 2. p. m. of September 10th. Without pause the men at once set out for Shipyipho, on arriving at which place, tired as they were, the order was given to assist the other Engineers in preparing for the crossing of the river. A little before this the First Sub-company had gone on to Shukheipho, to the left of Sha-in-kwan; while the Third Sub-company had turned to the left of Hwangju and marched to Nokshapho. In both cases the men were instructed to get all the native craft they could find and bring them back to Shipyipho as quickly as possible. The First Sub-company, under Lieutenant Hirao Jirō, started for Shukheipho on Sept. 10th; and on reaching that village, they despatched Kōtō Kisamatsu, a private of the first-class, accompanied by a Korean guide, on to Sōnglitom and Chhōnoppho, where some native boats were found, requisitioned, and sent on to Nokshapho. In the meantime the Main Body of the Sub-company got seven boats which had been discovered at Shukheipho and, embarking in them, went on to Chhōlto. This was at two o'clock in the morning of September 11th. At Chhōlto the Infantry had already found eight boats, and of these seven were hitched to the rest. The eighth boat had, most unfortunately, got into a cleft among some boulders and could not be floated until high tide. So this was left behind in charge of three soldiers, who were instructed to bring it on with the turn of the tide. Leaving Chhōlto at once, and being favoured by both wind and stream, the run to Shipyipho was made in rather less than two hours, that place being reached at 4 a. m. Here the tired men landed and made preparations for a much-needed breakfast. But just then a large junk was espied in the middle of the river, evidently bound northward. This was speedily boarded and found to be manned by Chinese, on one of whom was discovered the cipher used by the enemy in telegraphing. The junk, it appeared, was taking instructions and various necessary things up to the Chinese at Ph्योंgyang, so it proved an exceedingly welcome capture. The crew were made prisoners and the ship seized.

Turning back to the fortunes of the other sections of the Company, we find that they left Hwangju for Nokshapho at 2 p. m. of September 10th. The Third Sub-company was left

here, while the rest set out for Shipyipho overland. The road was not more than ten miles long, but exceedingly heavy and difficult to follow. After great exertions they came to a village east of Shipyipho at 10 p. m., and there made a brief halt, the men being quite worn-out with the march and their previous labour. After a few hours' sleep the troop again took the road, reaching Shipyipho at just four o'clock in the morning (September 11th), or when the other Sub-company came up with the boats they had found. They were more than surprised at the scene the river and its banks presented: the swift stream, the muddy flat, the hidden boulders. But the men knew that, despite all, the place had been wisely chosen, and so determined to show the stuff they were made of. All hands now set to work to repair the boats. Some were found to be quite useless and burnt at once; others were partially rotten and required extensive repairs. Yet all went on with the utmost despatch, and at 11 a. m., or less than seven hours after the work had begun, the impatient troops on the low, muddy bank began to be ferried across. The foremost body to cross the river was a Company of Infantry that had arrived the preceding night. As already described, these men belonged to the party of telegraph-constructors, so that the Company lacked a good many of its regular strength. Moreover the number of those falling sick was growing very large, some fifty men having been taken ill while on the road. The sixty soldiers of the Third Sub-company, who should have reached Shipyipho by midnight of the 10th, had not yet made their appearance owing to the late hour at which the tide became flood. The Division was now coming up rapidly, yet there were still ten old boats to be repaired: too leaky for use unless they received an extensive overhauling. To make things still worse, the delayed Third Sub-company did not get in until 7 o'clock in the evening (September 11th). The confusion at that hour was tremendous; but the sixty latest arrivals were soon at work effecting the necessary repairs and getting every thing in readiness for the crossing.

Now flood-tide set in. The best rowers were carefully chosen and distributed among the cranky boats. "Does the boat leak?" or "Have you all the oars and poles?" or "Have you the necessary hawsers?" were among the cries heard here and there. Each



officer had been apprised of the exact number of men each of the boats would carry; and to the soldiers themselves orders were issued such as "Don't stand up!" "Don't lean on one side of the boat!" or "If the boat tips, don't stir!" The current being rapid, they took advantage of this, letting the boats sweep several hundred metres up-stream with one current and as many again down-stream with another. In this way the boats slowly progressed towards the middle of the river, though here, owing to the fierce rush of water, the goal on the opposite bank was often lost sight of, the boats being swept down-stream. On such occasions the rowers had to exert their full strength in order to keep the craft from being carried too far away. Chilly as it was, the men were dripping with perspiration, and though they were parched with thirst there was no water for them to drink. Often, on reaching the opposite shore, far below the intended landing-place, the men were utterly exhausted; yet they might not stop, but keeping in the shallows had to row up-stream to the appointed place. Even this was not the end of their toil, for, after having landed their living freight, the rowers had to pull back to the opposite shore; and although the boats were empty, this was a most arduous piece of business, owing to the rapid current. That it took more than two hours to ferry back and forth—one trip—shows how extremely difficult the task was. In some instances the tide carried the boats several thousand metres off and very nearly capsized them. Boats meeting with such a fate took fully six hours to make the trip, and some of them were so much damaged thereby that they had to be hauled up for repairs before taking another load. The oarsmen had no time to stop even for a hasty meal.

The most troublesome passengers were the horses. To get them into the boats and then out on the other side was a heart-breaking business. Of course a temporary wharf had been erected on either bank, but the horses were startled by the sight and sound of the rushing stream, and therefore most difficult to handle.

The soldiers swarming on the near shore were now being ferried over steadily, yet their numbers seemed rather to increase than to decrease. The day appointed for the battle being near at

hand, the Engineers worked with desperation. As the hours flew by, some might be seen shouldering others, or trying to make recalcitrant horses enter and swim the river, or carrying huge loads hither and thither—in a word, doing everything they could think of to have the crossing go quickly. Their own lives were as nothing in comparison with the necessity for speed.

According to the predetermined arrangement, the whole body of troops got safely across. But owing to the small number of available boats, the Cavalry and Artillery requested permission to embark apart from the Main Body, contrary to the original programme. This caused some confusion, which was intensified by such questions as the alternation of the rowers; the drawing up of loads on the wharves and their subsequent discharge; the length of time the boats should wait for a turn in the tide; the exact number of men, horses, and stores to be ferried across; in what way the boats should be repaired; where each load should be placed, etc., etc. All these problems were quickly and cleverly solved by the superintendence, encouragement and advice of the officers; and yet the scarcity of men to do the work was sorely felt. Finally, provisions had perforce to be got for a certain detachment, and so in the midst of all this tremendous bustle and confusion a Commissariat body made its appearance and set to work. The heat in the daytime was most oppressive, the absence of anything like shade-trees being most painfully felt.

Under these circumstances the indefatigable Engineers worked without stopping until midnight, when the tide ebbed and no boat could get beyond the rocky shoal near the opposite bank. Leaving a few men on guard, the others turned in and slept the sleep of utter exhaustion. There was no time to go back to the village and rest under shelter; the men had to sleep when they were—anywhere on the muddy shore. At 3 a. m. the guard informed the weary men of the turn of the tide, and in an instant all were on their feet ready to set to work again. Hundreds of men and horses once more entered the boats, which were slowly rowed across. The Main Body of this Company of Engineers were now almost at the limit of human endurance, the many calls upon the men's strength having completely exhausted them. Yet the great duty of getting this Main Body of the Division across

in time to take honourable part in the battle, was so pressing and urgent that the men seemed to forget their mortal fatigue. And so at last the task was done, and well done. Seven thousand men and one thousand horses had they ferried across in less than 50 horses, losing only one horse and his groom, the animal having plunged overboard in midstream and drowned with the groom before help could reach them.

Nor must it be forgotten that the boats were of the clumsy and unwieldy native Korean make, urged forward by massive oars that had to be raised as high as the rower's head at every stroke. The oarsmen suffered very greatly from the use of these clumsy oars, whose weight and size tore the skin from their palms and made the blood flow. Yet not a man was heard to complain. With their bruised and bleeding hands they still kept at work. And so among the stories of Japanese pluck, energy and endurance cited in this book, surely the above particulars concerning this grand Company of Engineers deserve to take a high rank.

---

## 2.—PRESENCE OF MIND.

AT nine o'clock in the evening of September 12th the greater part of the Division had been successfully ferried across the Taidong. There remained however one boat containing three horse and their grooms, four Engineers being also on board as oarsmen. When the boat had just about passed midstream, one of the horses was startled by the noise of the rushing current, and began to plunge and kick. The equilibrium of the boat was thereby suddenly disturbed, the stern going under water, so that the restive horse and groom both fell into the stream. The boat now sank still more, throwing all its occupants into the water. The grooms were in a fine fright and began calling aloud for help, grasping the while the horses' tails to keep themselves afloat. But no one heard their cries, and even had they been audible no one could have gone to their aid; for the boat was far from land and the current very fierce where they were. Here however

Kawahito Yokichi, one of the Engineers on board, showed the value of presence of mind and good sense. "What are you afraid of, you cowards?" cried he; "grasp the side of the boat or the hawser and keep yourselves afloat! That is the way to help yourselves. The boat is full of water but still floats, and we can reach the bank if we keep on striking out with our arms and legs, no matter how fast the stream is or how distant the shore. If we desert the boat we shall be in a still worse plight." This authoritative voice was enough to bring the men to their senses. They did just as he had told them and the sequel was as Kawahito had predicted. The grooms held the bridles of their charges in one hand while grasping the gunwale of the boat with the other, and the Engineers swam with one arm and held the boat with the other. In this way they slowly passed through the worst part of the river and finally made the opposite bank—but not until they had been swept fully four miles down-stream.

---

#### IV.—THE WORK OF THE COMMISSARIAT DEPARTMENT.

##### I. GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

No sketch of the movements of the Japanese forces in Korea up to the date of the battle of Phyöngyang would be complete without reference to the excellent work done by the Etappe Department, in everything connected with the transportation of provisions, military equipment and all else of the kind.

When Major-General Ōshima Yoshimasa first landed his Combined Brigade at Inchhön, the state of affairs in Korea though troublous gave no indication of an immediate outbreak of hostilities. While the Brigade was encamped at Manlichang, about two miles south-west of Seoul, the Commissariat was stationed at Inchhön, this place being in direct connection by sea with Shimonoseki. In transportation overland advantage was taken of the good road between Inchhön and Yöngshan and the rapid current of the Hankang, which flows by the town of Kangwhafu. Thus things were kept going smoothly.

In consequence of the events which occurred on July 23rd at Seoul, the difficulties attending the transshipment of material were increased; but after the naval conflict off Phungdo the Japanese were in undisputed possession of the northern seas and had nothing to fear from any opposition on the part of the Chinese. So the work of sending provisions and military necessaries from Shimonoseki to Inchoon went on undisturbed.

The advance of the Combined Brigade on Asan being outside of the original programme, no proper commissariat organization had been made in this direction. But the Department made light of the distance of 40 miles, and the line was promptly laid open between Yöngshan and Chinwi. This was very cleverly and rapidly executed. There was, it is true, a lack of hands, but this defect was more than made up for by the increased diligence of the workers, who contributed in this manner so largely to the success of the Japanese arms at Söngwan. Never, in this connection, can the bold spirit and ardent diligence of Lieut.-Colonel Takenouchi Shösaku, Chief of the Etappe, be forgotten. He and his men did wonders, despite the open ill-will and rebellious tumult of the local Koreans.

When the march to Phöngyang began, the Combined Brigade had been increased to the size of a Division, and this, later on, became an Army. It was difficult to keep pace with this rapid increase in numbers, and so the development of the Commissariat and Transport Department was of necessity slow; indeed all was not in good working order until after the battle of Phöngyang. In a word, the Etappe which had been overburdened before was, when the forces began to start against this stronghold, compelled to do more than four times as much as before; the ratio being as 40 to 180, the increase in men and animals being as 5 to 1.

The main lines were as follow:—The work along the road from Inchoon to Yöngshan became vastly larger and more laborious, for from Yöngshan to Phöngyang the highway was lined with unending files of soldiers, horses, oxen, and carts of every size. This was made the main road of communication. The highway leading from Sangnyöng to Shanchöng was the artery connecting with the Japanese Right. As for water-routes there were two: the one the stream flowing to Yinchonchoon from

Hankang, the other the river running between Pyöknamtö and Chhölpé. Still another route was opened from Inchhön to Kaisöng, thence to Hwangju overland, where a special line of communication was established, connecting with the main route. Finally for the troops landed at Wönshan, the Songchön-Phyöngyang road was made the etappe line; while for the forces which entered Korea from Fusan, there was a special line between Fusan and Hankang, which was quite distinct from the Phyöngyang Commissariat. All the above routes were established only for the time being, and enormous difficulties had to be overcome in order to prevent the occurrence of any serious hitch. Koreans had to be engaged as bearers and workmen, much against their inclination, for they were wholly deceived as to the real intentions of China and therefore intensely pro-Chinese in their views. As fast as they were requisitioned they would escape or make the attempt, at all events, to run off—and this in spite of the wholly unaccustomed inducements of high wages and plentiful food. But, one after another, all difficulties were overcome, thanks to the untiring diligence, the sleepless nights and long days of toil on the part of the Commissariat Chief and his officers. So Phyöngyang was besieged, and so Phyöngyang, China's last hope in Korea, fell.

---

2.—LIEUT.-COLONEL TAKENOUCHI'S ADDRESS TO THE  
JAPANESE RESIDENTS AT INCHHÖN.

WHILE the Combined Brigade, after having landed at Inchhön, marched on to Manlichang, Yüan, the Chinese Resident at Seoul, was doing all in his power to have everything his own way. For some at the time inexplicable reason Yüan got the majority of the Chinese living in Seoul and Inchhön to return to their native country, great confusion thereby resulting among the shipping at Inchhön. It seemed as if a panic had broken out among the Chinese, and this feeling was not slow in having an effect on the Japanese residents as well. They, too, began to pack up and make ready for a hasty departure. But

this was not in accordance with the views of Lieut.-Colonel Takenouchi, Chief of the Commissariat at Inchhön, who immediately convened a meeting and addressed the Japanese residents there in a manner which will long be remembered. The substance of this great speech was shortly as follows:—"Dear Fellow-countrymen! When you saw your Chinese neighbours, residents of this town, making all speed to return to their native land, some of you—and not without reason—concluded that it would be better to go back to Japan at once. But I cannot praise such conduct. Let me tell you what I think you should do. His Imperial Majesty, our most benevolent Emperor, has sent troops across the broad seas to this land chiefly because he fears that the rebellious Tonghaks may do some injury to your lives or property; and thus desires to protect you from all danger. Gentlemen, pray think more deeply of what you owe to Japan. We soldiers are here, in accordance with the Imperial Mandate, to shield your lives and property. The rebellion of the Tonghaks has already been well-nigh quelled, while the intercourse between our country and this Kingdom is going on peaceably and uninterruptedly. Under these circumstances I think you would be acted very wrongly should you follow the



LIEUT.-COLONEL TAKENOUCHI,

example set by your Chinese neighbours, and, in consequence of baseless fears, start precipitately for Japan like any disorderly mob. This is decidedly not the way to show your obedience to the benevolent and merciful will of our Emperor. I hold that you should continue your ordinary daily work. This is certainly the best manner in which you, my countrymen, can testify your reverence for the Imperial will. Your actions at this juncture

must have an effect on the whole Japanese Empire. Therefore in all that you do take heed that you make no misstep, nor act rashly." These words moved many in the audience to tears, so powerfully were they delivered. The loyal and military orator then said: "Accidents cannot be foreseen. But even should there be a breach between the two great nations, no bullet can fly beyond a certain well-known limit. I firmly believe that should we even come to blows and a great war ensue, Iuchhön will not disappear behind clouds of smoke. Remember, gentlemen, how many people of other nations are living here. No matter how ignorant a certain government may be, they will not venture to make enemies of all the world. Some years ago when England and France fought as allies against China, Shanghai remained absolutely uninjured, reaping to the full the benefits of the law of neutrality." The speaker then quoted a number of pertinent passages from standard works on International Law, all tending to assure the residents of their safety. "What I have just cited," he continued, "will show you the law in the case, but if, despising such laws, unforeseen accidents should arise, we, the soldiers of Japan, are ready to sacrifice our lives—long since devoted to the service of our Emperor—in the endeavour to protect your lives and possessions. Under such circumstances I pray you, gentlemen, stay quietly where you are. More than this, there is one thing which I hope and expect from you. His Majesty's troops now landed in Korea will have even greater difficulties to contend with as the days go by. Should such a contingency ensue, I trust that you will ever be found ready to sacrifice your personal interest for the sake of your Emperor and your native land. Brother-countrymen, you may soon have an opportunity so show that valour, loyalty and righteousness which I know to be in your hearts. You are living in the promised time; now be careful and mindful of your great duties!"

This speech, of which the above is the merest outline sketch, lasted for two hours, and was only occasionally interrupted by outburst of enthusiastic applause. The words had the desired effect. The exodus of the Chinese continued, but not one Japanese citizen left his post. The little band of residents kept at their vocations as quietly as if Korea and Japan were at



peace with all the world. And when, later on, the Japanese forces pressed on to Phyöngyang and the prompt establishment of the line of communication was a work of tremendous difficulty, the water-route between Inchhön and Kaisöng was utilized and a commissariat station made at a place midway between Kaisöng and Hwangju. At this moment, when every willing hand was of the utmost importance, the Japanese at Inchhön came forward in a body, offering their willing services. They pulled, dug, lifted and altogether worked like the meanest coolies. Thanks to their untiring loyalty, the line of communication was rapidly put through,—a factor which contributed very greatly to the subsequent victory at Phyöngyang. Lieut.-Colonel Takenouchi's inspiring appeal thus bore good fruit.

---

### 3.—THE KOREAN RUNAWAYS.

THE Commissariat line of 40 miles in length, opened in consequence of the march of the Combined Brigade under Major-General Ōshima to Söngwan and Asan, as well as the 180-mile-line established for the troops going to Phyöngyang were very imperfectly organized, the service being attended with enormous difficulties owing to the lack of men. The situation was rendered still more complicated because of the daily escape of the levied coolies and horses. No matter how high the wage, the Koreans were always most difficult to deal with, and wholly untrustworthy. After a few preliminary arrangements at Inchhön, the *Etäpe*, for example, hired a number of coolies for the transport of ammunition. Each man's load was carefully made up and the time for the start of the long line of bearers determined upon. But when the hour came a number of the men mutinied, declaring that they knew they should be decapitated if caught carrying ammunition for the Japanese. Their example was immediately followed by the other coolies, so that, in a few moments, not a solitary Korean was left on the field. The next day the Japanese officers made another attempt to get the men to work, but they would listen to no persuasion, and the idea of sending the ammunition overland

in this manner had to be, though reluctantly, relinquished.

Things were even worse during the march against Asan. Here the hired Koreans not only made off at every opportunity, but even took their well-paid-for horses and oxen with them. It was not to be borne. The Japanese officers therefore requested the Korean authorities to levy the necessary number of men, and native constables and soldiers were at once despatched to collect the coolies. Numbers were indeed brought together and their half-hearted labours for a while superintended by Japanese belonging to the Commissariat; yet before Kwachhön was reached—six miles from Yöngshan—not one Korean was left. All had fled!

The same annoying experience was had with the Koreans engaged in the march against Phyöngyang. Thousands of coolies had been levied afresh, and all were subjected to several days' drill and training before their work began. Rules for their guidance were laid down and provisions made for their families if they so desired. The Japanese residents of Inchhön "buckled to" with a will and set the recalcitrants the best of examples; yet to the intense disappointment of the army officers, these Koreans followed the conduct of their predecessors in service and ran off whenever they got the chance. It was a heart-breaking business to work under such untoward circumstances. The amount of damage done by these cowardly men to the Japanese cause, was simply enormous, the subsequent privations of the Japanese forces being attributable solely to this factor. It is remarkable, not to say wonderful, that this did not deter the Army from going from victory to victory. The credit is in this instance ascribable to the superhuman efforts of the officers and men in charge of the Commissariat, ably seconded by Lieut.-Colonel Takenouchi's "recruits" from Inchhön.

---

#### 4.—WHAT THE COMMISSARIAT DID.

ALL through the war the Etappe had both hands full of arduous work; but surely never was human endurance pushed to a greater length than in the days immediately preceding the

battle of Phyöngyang. As has already been explained, the Combined Brigade rapidly swelled, by reason of reinforcements coming in quick succession from Japan, to a Division and from a Division to an Army. There was, however, no similar increase made in the organization of the Commissariat. Pushed to the utmost to make things run smoothly between Inchhön and Seoul—a distance of 23 miles—the same little body of officers and men now had to provide facilities of transport for provisions, ammunition, etc., the whole way to Phyöngyang—184 miles distant. Under these circumstances the organization could not well have been otherwise than incomplete; and to keep things going at all the Etappe had really to do the work of giants. Among the routes established by them and the various undertakings successfully accomplished, the following may be mentioned as showing the vastness of the work:—

1. Keeping up communication and transportation by land and water between Inchhön and Seoul;
2. Communication and transportation along the Phyöngyang highway;
3. Maintenance of the Commissariat and supply depôt between Kaisöng and Hwangju;
4. The water-route between Kaisöng and Hwangju;
5. Sending supplies to the troops landed at Wönsan;
6. Provisioning and otherwise assisting the southern depôt between Fusan and Hankang;
7. Forwarding of supplies and provisions to the workmen engaged in constructing the telegraph between Fusan and Seoul;
8. Provisioning and otherwise assisting the troops stationed at Seoul and that neighbourhood; and
9. Erecting barracks in the vicinity of Manlichang.

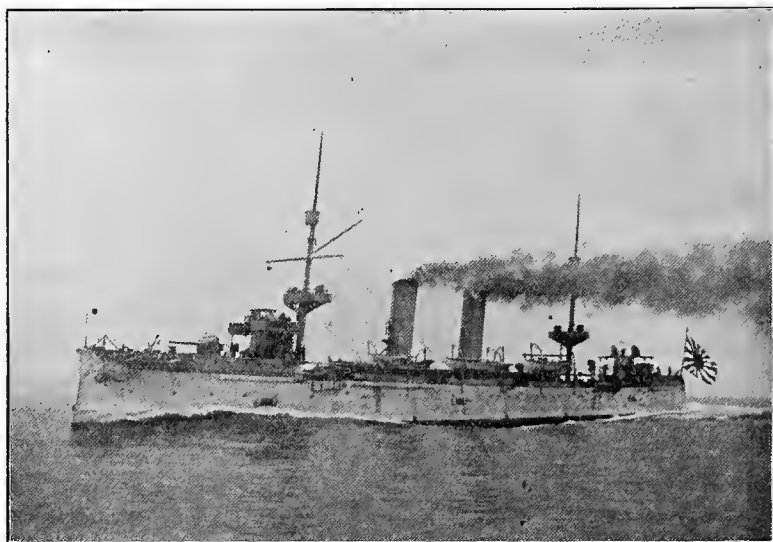
Of course the above by no means exhaust the list. The duties of each man, of each officer, were legion. That under such peculiarly trying circumstances no hitch occurred surely redounds to the credit of the energetic and loyal Chief, Lieut.-Colonel Takenouchi. Like Antæus, he appeared to increase tenfold in ability and ingenuity after each fresh demand made upon his strength and resources.

Of course after the sending of thousands of coolies from

Japan, things went much more smoothly. But the above brief description will show how great were the odds against which the Japanese had to contend, until after they had won the memorable battle of Phyöngyang and driven the Chinese from Korean territory.



LIEUTENANT MIMURA,  
THE HERO OF THE HYÖNMU GATE.



H. J. M. *Yoshino*.

## CHAPTER IV.

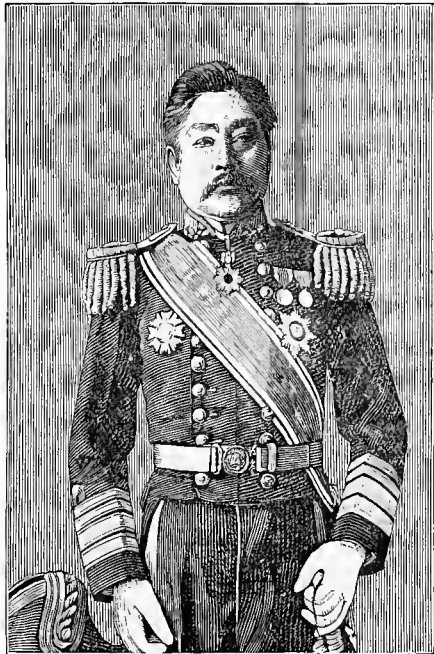
### THE SEA-FIGHT OFF HAIYANG.

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

THE victories achieved by the arms of Japan were very evenly divided between the two branches of the service. If the land-troops carried all before them at Phyöngyang, Kangwasae, Newchwang and a dozen other places, the fleet was no less successful off Phungdo, in the Yellow Sea, and at Wei-hai-wei. The naval engagement of the Yellow Sea, better known by the style of the Fight off Haiyang—an important island near the scene of the conflict—is unique in the annals of this century. For here, for the first time on record since the great change in naval construction, two fleets of the most modern and powerful type met in deadly warfare, the result being significant of the tremendous nature of the weapons now employed by “civilized” nations and the fury with which the battle was fought on both sides. It

was a deadly grapple between two ancient foes, with all the skill and one side and all the victory; though the Chinese did not fall behind in point of bravery and determined pluck. According to naval experts in this part of the world, the Chinese were defeated primarily because of their execrable tactics, and secondarily because they had no ships so swift as one or two of those on the Japanese side. Moreover the Japanese vessels fought intelligently, as a compact whole; while the Chinese war-ships, with the exception perhaps of the two great iron-clads, failed to work in harmony and at no time brought their full strength to bear on the foe. Yet Admiral Ting, the Chinese Commander, was a good sailor and able officer, no whit less brave and energetic than his adversary and quondam friend Vice-Admiral Itō. Errors of judgment, the want of absolutely devoted crews, faulty gunnery—these were pregnant causes of the Chinese defeat.

It was on September 16th, 1894, that the Japanese fleet left the temporary anchorage at the mouth of the Taidong River. The next day, after a fruitless cruise near the Korean littoral, the fleet made for the island of Haiyang, an island of importance, as already pointed out, and one which commanded the approach to the Kinchow Peninsula. The *Yoshino*, *Takachiho*, *Akitsushima*, and *Naniwa*, in the order named, forming the First Flying Squadron, led the van, the flag of Rear-Admiral Tsuboi Kōzō flying on the *Yoshino*. The follow-



VICE-ADMIRAL VISCOUNT ITŌ  
COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF  
OF THE COMBINED SQUADRONS.

ing, Principal, Squadron was composed of the *Chiyoda*, *Itsukushima*, *Hashidate*, *Hiyei*, and *Fusō*, with the *Matsushima* as flag-ship, Vice-Admiral Itō Sukehiro, Commander-in-Chief, being on board. Close behind followed the gun-boat *Akagi* and the ex-merchant-steamer *Saikyō Maru*, transformed into a cruiser for the time being. At 6.30 a. m. the island was sighted, and the harbour—a fine one there—shortly afterwards reconnoitred. No signs of the enemy being visible, a course was shaped for Takushan, and the fleet proceeded onwards after a short review, Talu Island being the objective. Steaming easily, the war-ships were enjoying the fine autumn day, when suddenly, at 10.50 a. m., thick smoke was seen on the port bow, low down on the horizon and north-east by east from the leading vessels. This was what the Admirals had long and impatiently been looking for; no doubt was entertained that the enemy were now close at hand. From the increasing volume of the smoke it was clear that the hostile war-vessels were numerous. Each ship therefore promptly cleared for action and beat to quarters.

The weather was exceptionally fine; the sea smooth and glassy, with just a faint ripple where the light breeze touched the surface. At five minutes past noon the *Matsushima* signalled to prepare to close with the enemy. The *Akagi* and *Saikyō Maru*, not being well protected, and the former a very slow boat, were ordered to go under the port bow of the Squadrons, thus getting out of the enemy's range. The First Flying Squadron steamed at full speed directly towards the enemy's centre, but gradually veered to port, so as to attack the Chinese left. Almost the same course was pursued by the Principal Squadron. The Chinese formation was an irregular wedge, the *Ting Yuen* and *Chen Yuen*—the two great iron-clads—leading, with the *Lai Yuen*, *Ching Yuen*, *Yang Wei*, and *Chao Yang* on the right and the *King Yuen*, *Chih Yuen*, *Tsi Yuen* and *Kwang Chia* on the left: ten men-of-war in all. Some distance off to the north, smoke was again visible, proceeding from the funnels of two or three Chinese war-ships kept in reserve. The distance between the fleets at this moment was 5-6000 metres, yet the Japanese war-ships were at once so turned that their flanks were at right angles with the advancing foe.

At 12.50 p. m. the *Ting Yuen*, though still 6000 metres off,

opened fire from her large guns, the other members of the fleet speedily following suit. The shells fell near but did not strike the Japanese ships, the sea about them being beaten into waves and fountains of angry water, so tremendous the impact of the missiles. This did not of course stop the steady, swift advance of the Japanese, who as yet had not fired a single shot. Five minutes later the distance between the two fleets was decreased to 3000 metres, and the hitherto silent men-of-war now burst into a thunderous roar of shot and shell that seemed to rend the very heavens. All the big guns on the Japanese vessels were directed towards the upper decks of the *Ting Yuen* and *Chen Yuen*, the rest of the Chinese ships being fired at with guns of smaller calibre. The Flying Squadron had by this time steamed past the enemy's front and was getting round to their starboard side; and just as the four fleet men-of-war approached the Chinese rear, the Principal Squadron, then at a distance of 4000 metres, rapidly assumed a wedge-shaped formation, thus sheltering the *Akagi* and *Saikyō Maru* on the starboard and taking the whole of the enemy's heavy starboard fire. At 12.58 p. m., a shell from the *Matsushima's* 32 centimetre gun crashed through the upper part of the Chinese flagship's—the *Ting Yuen's*—largest mast, so that the latter was no longer able to make signals to the rest of the fleet. Taking advantage of this accident, the Japanese Principal Squadron opened out and surrounded the Chinese ships, firing most fiercely the while. The enemy at a loss what to do, the flagship no longer directing them, steamed confusedly hither



CAPTAIN KAWABARA, COMMANDER  
H. J. M. Yoshino.



and thither, their formation being completely broken. Each acted independent of the rest, to the great loss of time and force. Some of the Chinese ships now caught sight of the *Akagi* and *Saikyō Maru*. Deeming these two an easy prey, they steamed towards them, entirely separating themselves from the rest. The Japanese vessels, on the other hand, maintained their original line and continued to fire at each ship with precision and terrible effect. Six of the ten Chinese ships had by this time caught fire, while the *Chao Yang* and *Yang Wei* got quite apart from the others. Some of the enemy's vessels approached the *Hiyei* and *Fusō*—both small war-ships—in the rear of the Principal Squadron. The *Hiyei's* position was, for a while, one of extreme peril, there being great danger of her getting rammed; yet with reckless bravery her commander thrust the ship directly between the powerful *Ting Yuen* and the *Chen Yuen*, this being the one possible chance of escaping destruction. The manœuvre was successful, and discharging her broadsides as she steamed ahead at full speed, the *Hiyei* pressed through and got to the rear of the attacking vessels. She had been severely handled in this running fight: her fore was shattered and the whole ship ablaze. Hoisting signals announcing her desperate condition to the flagship, the *Hiyei* steamed off to the north-east in order to effect repairs. The *Fusō*, meanwhile, unavoidably deserted by the *Hiyei*, veered to port, and, fighting her best with the enemy as she steamed on, succeeded in getting back to the Principal Squadron. The *Akagi*, smallest of the Japanese warships—a gun-boat of only 600 tons—had also fallen to the rear, owing to her low rate of speed. She now ported her helm and sought to get out of the *mêlée* by running the gauntlet of the *Ting Yuen* and *Chen Yuen*, it being the intention of her commander to join the *Hiyei*. This was perceived by the *Lai Yuen*, *Chi Yuen* and *Kwang Chia*, who immediately bore down upon her, firing furiously as they came on. A shell struck the *Akagi* at this moment, instantly killing her captain, Lieut.-Commander Sakamoto Hachirōta. Her main and lower decks were also much torn up and the steam-pipe fractured. Hasty repairs were made, and after having done the best to make good the damage the *Akagi* steamed southward as rapidly as possible. Other shells then struck her in several places, one

carrying away the main-mast. The *Lai Yuen* had now got within 300 metres of the apparently doomed vessel and with one of her big guns struck the bridge-rail, severely wounding Lieutenant Satō Tetsutarō, who had taken command. Of the quick-firing guns, No. 1 was managed by a signalman, all the gunners there having been shot down. But the *Akagi* had her revenge by planting a shell on the rear-deck of the *Lai Yuen*, a conflagration at once breaking out in consequence. The other Chinese vessels now closed round the *Lai Yuen* to render assistance. The *Saikyō Maru* then steamed rapidly ahead to carry the news of the peril of the *Hiyei* and *Akagi* to the Principal Squadron; and when the message was made out through the clouds of smoke, the flagship at once ordered the First Flying Squadron to proceed to the aid of their comrades. The order was promptly obeyed, the four fine warships immediately steering westward. They steamed directly for the *Lai Yuen*, *Chih Yuen* and *Kwang Chia*, keeping the enemy on their port bow as they approached. The gunners stationed there fired rapidly and with magnificent precision, handling their huge weapons with skill and judgment. At a distance of 2800 metres the cannon of the Flying Squadron proved too much for the three hostile vessels, which slowly turned and attempted to get back to their Main Squadron. This however the Japanese hindered them from doing, keeping a middle course between the three ships and the rest of their fleet; while the Principal Squadron, having come up to the rear, interposed between the Flying Squadron and the other Chinese vessels. The battle now reached its climax, the firing being stupendously heavy, the air dark with shot and shell, while the sun itself was obscured by the pall of smoke overhanging the whole dismal scene—man fighting to kill man! Just



COMMANDER SAKAMOTŌ,  
H. J. M. *Akagi*.

before this, when the Flying and then the Principal Squadrons had gone to the relief of the *Hiyei* and *Akagi*, the cruiser *Saikyō Maru* was left quite alone, despite which fact she kept up fighting with the enemy. At 2.20 p. m., a 30.5 centimetre shell from *Ting Yuen* struck and exploded back of the officers' ward on the *Saikyō*, causing great damage and cutting the steam-pipe controlling to the steering-gear. Signalling what had happened to the flagship, the *Saikyō* ran between the *Akitsushima* and *Naniwa*, getting on the port bow of the Chinese fleet, some vessels of which at once started to sink the injured cruiser, which did her best to get away from her opponents. About this time, moreover, the several men-of-war which the Japanese had believed to be the Chinese reserve, drew near. These were the *Ping Yuen*, *Kwang Ping* and two torpedo-boats. They could not come up with the Principal Squadron, on account of the Q.-F. guns, but noticing that the *Saikyō* was in great straits, the *Ping Yuen*, *Kwang Ping* and the two torpedo-boats started to sink her. Observing that *Saikyō* had very few guns, they approached her rapidly and began firing upon her, the *Saikyō* replying boldly with her Q.-F. guns. The torpedo-boats then sheered off towards the coast, while the Chinese men-of-war continued to approach until they got within 500 metres of the vessel. A torpedo-boat, the *Fuk-lung*, now suddenly appeared directly in front of the *Saikyō*, at which she discharged her bow-torpedo just as the *Saikyō* was turning to port. Turning again the brave ex-merchantman made directly for the deadly explosive, missing it by not more than one metre by a sharp turn to the larboard. The attacking boat then discharged her port-bow torpedo, at almost right angles to the *Saikyō*. Here skilful manœuvring could prove of no avail, and every one on board the cruiser expected to have the ship blown to atoms. But contrary to all expectation the torpedo passed harmlessly under the vessel, appearing a little later floating on the waves at a considerable distance to the east. Every body had been breathlessly awaiting the result of the torpedo-boat attack; and when the *Saikyō* was out of immediate danger the Chinese men-of-war surrounding her found themselves at close quarters with several Japanese war-vessels. The *Chao Yang*, which had first taken fire, now went down stern-foremost; while





the *Yang Wei*, seeing that her case was hopeless, ran towards the shallow water and beach of Talu Island.

A little before this, the *Ting Yuen*, which had failed to succeed in her attack in the *Saikyō Maru*, tried to get back to the rest of her comrades. Just as she was about passing in front of the Japanese Fleet, she suddenly changed her course and made as if she would either ram the *Matsushima* or else discharge a fish-torpedo at this the Japanese flagship. From doing either she was prevented by the violent fire poured from the *Matsushima's* batteries. Sheering off to starboard, the *Ting Yuen* shaped her course at right angles to the Japanese line. On her port-bow becoming visible another broadside was poured into her from the *Matsushima's* guns. As the *Ting Yuen* was not more than 1500 metres distant at the time, the effect of this broadside was tremendous, great holes being beaten into her side, whence volumes of smoke soon came pouring forth. A fire had started on board. In revenge, the *Ting Yuen* fired several rounds from her 26 centimetre guns, one shell entering the *Matsushima's* starboard quarter, plunging through the doctors' ward or surgery on the lower deck, severely shattering the steel fender, and after passing down the torpedo-tube finally destroying the barbette containing the 32 centimetre gun. Almost immediately afterwards a 47 centimetre shell tore through the *Matsushima* into her central torpedo-room, striking the main-mast and causing numerous fatal and other injuries. None the less it was evident that great confusion reigned on board the *Ting Yuen* in consequence of her adversary's steady fire.

The First Flying Squadron were now in hot pursuit of the *Kwang Chia*, *Lai Yuen* and *King Yuen*, which were doing their best to get out of the fight. The *Kwang Chia* ran to the north of Bucha Island, while the *Lai Yuen* headed for Talok: the *King Yuen* being thus left alone. The firing from the four vessels composing the Flying Squadron was then concentrated on the wretched *King Yuen*. She was already on fire, and now keeled over to port, turning completely over. The flagship then recalled the Flying Squadron from farther pursuit of the other two Chinese vessels, and the four swift men-of-war steamed obediently back to the Principal Squadron.

In the meantime the latter Squadron had been waging a furious war with the *Ting Yuen*, *Chen Yuen*, *Chih Yuen* and *Ping Yuen*, the best ships the enemy still had afloat. The *Chih Yuen*, trusting to her powerful frame, bravely attempted to run down some of her persistent adversaries; but the Flying Squadron coming up, the devoted vessel was made the object of a tremendous assault. Shot through and through, she listed to starboard and sank. This occurred at just 3.30 p. m. The Principal Squadron now concentrated their fire on the *Ting Yuen* and *Chen Yuen*, the destruction of one or both of these battle-ships being the great ambition of every vessel in the Japanese Fleet. At 3.30 p. m., just as the *Chih Yuen* sank beneath the waves, two shots from the 30.5 centimetre gun of the *Ting Yuen* wrought great havoc aboard the *Matsushima*, the lower deck on the port side being dreadfully cut up. One of the great shells struck the rear of gun No. 4, then glancing off burst through the upper deck and broke through the starboard quarter; while the other shattered the same gun's massive steel shield, bending the gun itself quite out of shape. Nor was this all: it plunged into a heap of ammunition, exploding the cartridge-cases and inflicting tremendous damage over all that portion of the flagship. The loss of life, too, was enormous in consequence, more than fifty being killed or wounded by the disastrous effects of this one missile. A fire broke out on the sorely-tryed *Matsushima*, which took quite half an hour to extinguish. The *Ting Yuen*, it was simultaneously observed, had again caught fire.

From first to last Vice-Admiral Itō, Commander of the Combined Squadrons, kept his place on the bridge. Yet his ship, the *Matsushima*, suffered most; the gunners were nearly all killed or wounded, their place being supplied by bandsmen.

The result of the great sea-fight was that the *Chao Yang*, *Chih Yuen* and *King Yuen* were sunk; the *Yang Wei* stranded; and the *Kwang Chia* and *Tsi Yuen* forced to run off to avoid sinking or capture. The remaining vessels, all more or less severely battered, steamed off in every direction, only the two great iron-clads continuing the combat. Yet the *Ting Yuen* was now wreathed in smoke from the fire on board and was thus incapable of prompt manœuvring; while the *Chen Yuen* which stood

by to assist her sister-ship, had a very narrow escape, the Japanese ceasing to fire only as the light died out in the western sky, at which time the *Chen Yuen* was quite a distance from Admiral Ting's flagship. The First Flying Squadron was then ordered to give over chasing the fugitives, for it was now 5.30 p. m. and growing very dark.

Taking advantage of the gathering dusk, the Chinese fleet—or rather what there was left of it—turned southward for Wei-hai-wei. To offer to pursue them would only have brought confusion upon the Japanese vessels, for the enemy had half-a-dozen torpedo-boats and these might have inflicted serious damage in the night-time. Moreover the *Matsushima* was indeed in an evil plight, so large a portion of her crew being *hors de combat* and the vessel greatly cut up from stem to stern. It was under the circumstances adjudged best to send the *Matsushima* back to Japan for repairs, and the flag of Vice-Admiral Itō was removed to the *Hashidate*. The Japanese Squadrons did what they could to keep a course parallel to that followed by the enemy, thinking to renew the engagement on the following day. At dawn nothing being visible of the Chinese fleet, the Combined Squadrons returned to the scene of the preceding day's conflict, passing by Wei-hai-wei *en route*. The *Akagi*, which had suffered very serious damage, alone returned to the former temporary anchorage for repairs, and with the exception of this gun-boat and the *Matsushima*, which had already started for Ujina, the Japanese Fleet was not much the worse for the fight of September 17th and quite ready to begin again. On reaching the neighbourhood of Haiyang Island, a thin line of smoke was seen on the distant horizon; but, chase being given, this shortly faded away and none of the enemy were to be seen anywhere. The *Chiyoda* was then commanded to destroy the *Yang Wei*, which had got into the shallows and was aground. This the *Chiyoda* did with an outrigger torpedo, shattering the vessel to atoms. The *Kwang Chia* had, on running off, made for Talien Bay, where she had struck a shoal. Being quite certain of capture if the vessel remained there, the Chinese blew up their ship, leaving only a few melancholy fragments above water.

After blowing the *Yang Wei* up, the *Chiyoda* rejoined the rest



at the temporary anchorage and naval station. Thither the *Saikyō Maru* and *Akagi* had already gone. The *Hiyei* which, it will be remembered, had had to steam off on account of the fire which raged on board, had come back here to extinguish the flames and effect a few most necessary repairs. This done the *Hiyei* had steamed back hoping once more to have a share in the fight. She arrived however too late to do this, much to the disappointment of her undaunted crew.

And so the Japanese had not lost a single vessel; even the unarmoured *Saikyō* was still afloat and ready to try conclusions with the enemy at any time. Concerning the great sea-fight most contrary reports appeared not only—as might have been expected—in the foreign press of China but even in some of the English papers published in Japan. The Japanese, it was confidently and frequently affirmed, had lost some of their best ships; or else these had been so roughly handled as to be useless in future.

Not one word of this was true. The narrative we have given is literally correct, and from this it will be seen that no one of the Japanese vessels was incapable of further fighting; true, the *Matsushima* went back to Ujina to effect repairs, but these were promptly finished and the flagship once again at sea. In the great attack on Wei-hai-wai, the *Matsushima* was very prominent. The victory of the Japanese was thus not only decisive but even overwhelming, the Chinese losing five out of the twelve vessels that had taken part in the conflict: three sunk, one blown up, and one abandoned by the Chinese themselves. The record is a great one for Japan.

---

This picture, by the same artist, represents the Sea-Fight at 12.53 p. m. The main force of the enemy is directed against the Japanese Principal Squadron. The vessel in the centre is the *Matsushima*, followed by the other warships composing the Squadron. The First Flying Squadron are veering to port. The vessels seen to either side of the *Matsushima* are the Chinese.

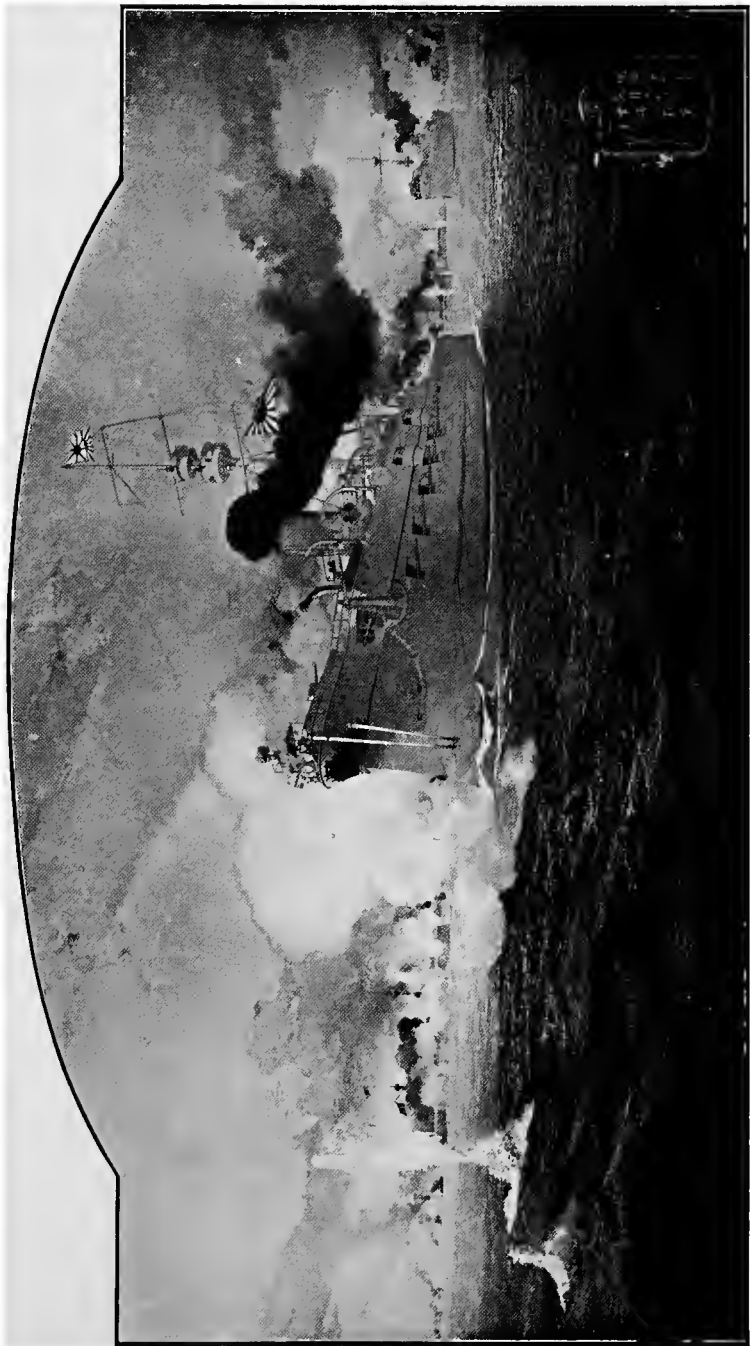


PHOTO-ENGRAVED & PRINTED BY K. OGAWA.



II.—THE *MATSUSHIMA'S* DESPERATE FIGHT.

THE *Matsushima* was the flagship of the Principal Squadron. An eye-witness of the damage done to the gallant ship in her desperate fight, reports as follows:—"As we approached the noble vessel, we observed a large rectangular hole on the port side forward, somewhat above the lower deck. On the upper deck on the starboard side, a 12 cent. gun was missing. It was said that a shell from one of the enemy's ships had struck the carriage and thrown the gun into the sea. Descending to the main deck we reached the hole already observed from a distance—a ragged tear, about fifteen feet by eight. Here a 12 cent. gun was lying bent and distorted, the carriage having been thrown forward a distance of at least 20 feet. It was at this place that the largest number of fatal casualties had occurred; for the guns being of the quick-firing type, a quantity of ammunition had been stored in their immediate vicinity. One of the enemy shells struck here, but without exploding. It hit however the cartridge-cases of some shells, causing an immediate and terrific explosion. About 100 officers and men were stationed here, and of these not one escaped uninjured, many being killed outright. At the same time the deck caught fire and the flames spread with such force and rapidity that the upper deck was completely burned through. Nevertheless the energy and heroic activity displayed by the crew were so great that the conflagration was extinguished in about 15 minutes after the outbreak. Most fortunate was it that the fire did not extend to the magazine, in close proximity, the escape of which is principally attributable to the heroism of the recruits who had joined the service in December 1893. One of these devoted men stripped himself of his clothing and with them kept the flames at bay; while the other diligently removed all inflammable material with the greatest possible speed. The two men were repeatedly told to leave this post of deadly peril, as there was serious danger of suffocation, yet they refused to heed the admonition, declaring their intention to die where they were. It may here be stated that the recruits as a body behaved exceedingly well. When the order to prepare for action was given,

many of the men hurried down into their quarters. The officers feared that some were thus about to play the coward, but these apprehensions were speedily removed by the reappearance of the men, all arrayed in their best uniforms, thus showing that they were determined to conquer or die; for it is a tradition with the *samurai* of Japan that a knight or warrior should be clad in his finest raiment at the moment of death. The members of the band similarly displayed remarkable courage. When the terrible explosion, referred to above, occurred, these noncombatants volunteered to fill up the vacancies occasioned among the marines, and discharged their unaccustomed duties with a determination and bravery that excited the admiration of all. It was indeed pleasant to hear the officers recount with pride and gratification the plucky behaviour of the men under them."

---

III.—HEROISM OF VICE-ADMIRAL VISCOUNT KABAYAMA ON  
BOARD THE *SAIKYŪ MARU*.

THE vessel carrying Vice-Admiral Viscount Kabayama on the occasion of the famous naval engagement in the Yellow Sea, was not originally intended for warlike purposes, being one of the mail-steamers belonging to the well-known Steamship Company of Japan, the *Nippon Yūsen Kwaisha*. But owing to the scarcity of transport and despatch vessels in the Japanese navy, she was chartered by the Government and temporarily supplied with a few guns. The *Saikyō Maru*, for so she is called, is a sister ship of the *Kōbe Maru*; 387 h. p. and 2913 tons burthen. Although thus nothing more than a transport hastily fitted out with guns for emergency, the *Saikyō* played a part by no means inferior to that of any man-of-war in the great sea-fight. This fact alone, if indeed any proof be needed, is sufficient to show that the Japanese Navy is not wanting in officers of commanding ability and ripe experience.

On the memorable day of the battle, when the contending squadrons of Asia's two greatest and oldest Empires drew within

3000 metres of each other, the *Matsushima*, at 0.23 p. m., signalled the Flying Squadron to open fire. For some time the thunderous roar of the great guns seemed to rend the very heavens, while the broad surface of the sea was covered with rolling smoke-clouds. The *Saikyō*, which was then following in the wake of the Principal Squadron, was far from being an idle witness of the scene. Armed with four Q.-F. guns, she discharged shell upon shell, with deadly precision. At first some of her officers felt rather uneasy, for the majority of her crew were nothing but ordinary merchant-seamen. It soon became manifest, however, that no anxiety need be entertained on this score; in fact from beginning to end of the battle these sailors worked with the intrepid valour of veterans. Moreover the Vice-Admiral took personal command of the ship and encouraged the men by his words and actions. Despite the shower of deadly missiles and the deafening noise of the combat, not a man lost his presence of mind or left his post. The coolness with which each one went about his appointed task, the skill displayed by the engineers in their arduous duties, as well as the utter disregard of their own personal safety manifested by all on board, were quite on a par with these qualities among men specially trained or educated for the navy.

The contest gradually grew fiercer; still the *Saikyō* kept on her course. Although at first in the rear of the Principal Squadron she now steered to port and advanced to attack the enemy. Just at this juncture it was noticed that one of the hostile vessels, the *Chao Yang* was on fire, and that three Chinese iron-clads were exerting their utmost strength to overpower the two smallest Japanese men-of-war, the *Akagi* and *Hiyei*. It was presently seen that the Flying Squadron was veering to the left while the



VICE-ADMIRAL KABAYAMA.

Principal Squadron steamed on to the right. A 15 centimetre shell, fired from one of the enemy's ironclads, struck the *Saikyō* at this moment. It burst through her wood-work and exploded with a fearful crash in the saloon, not more than two yards from the engine-room. The saloon was completely wrecked, and very great damage done by the same shell to other parts of the ship. Some commotion was, of course, caused among the inmates of the ship by the entrance of this great projectile, but, to the outspoken admiration of all, the Admiral did not exhibit the least surprise. Turning with an air of serene indifference to those about him he said, "It seems to me that a shell has just entered the ship somewhere." Other shots stuck the *Saikyō* in her hull, funnel, and elsewhere. One 15 cent. shell struck the poop, and then falling on the after-deck did heavy damage. But emboldened by the cool and intrepid bearing of the Admiral, the officers and men, nothing daunted, redoubled their energy and fought with desperate valour.

At 1.27 p. m. the *Saikyō Maru* found herself in the space between the Principal and Flying Squadrons. The enemy had by this time fallen into considerable disorder and continued the fight without any definite tactics. Now the *Ting Yuen* from behind, and another Chinese warship, the *Kwang Ping*, from in front, suddenly made for the *Saikyō*. The reason why they thus singled her out for a crushing attack may have been owing to an erroneous supposition on their part that she was a transport and had actually, at the time, a number of soldiers on board. With extreme difficulty but with admirable skill the *Saikyō* was extricated from this imminent peril, and steamed off to the starboard of the Principal Squadron.

Meanwhile the *Matsushima* had signalled to the Flying Squadron to repair with all speed to the aid of the *Hiyei* and *Akagi*, both of which were in extremities. At this stage of the fight the *Saikyō* appeared directly in front of the enemy's fleet. This was at about 2.22 p. m. The hostile warships, eagerly seizing the opportunity, fired their guns in the direction of the *Saikyō Maru*, a 30.5 centimetre shell soon striking her and penetrating the officers' messroom, besides severing the steampipe connecting with the rudder. The steam steering-gear was thereby rendered

quite useless. Having thus lost, for the time being, all free control of her movements, the *Saikyō* became entirely separated from the combined Squadrons and, passing between the *Akitsushima* and *Naniwa*, again neared the Chinese fleet. This once more exposed her to the full force of the enemy's fire. Relieving tackle was used, but, proving very difficult to handle, the ship's course kept much the same. Recourse was finally had to the hand-wheel, when, obeying the rudder at last, the *Saikyō* steamed forward at her highest rate of speed.

This was the culminating point of the battle, when it was at its fiercest. The *Saikyō Maru* continued to be a target for the enemy's big guns. The *Ping Yuen* and *Kwang Ping*, accompanied by several torpedo-boats, were now seen fast approaching. When at a distance of about 3000 metres from her port bow they sent forward a torpedo-boat, but before she succeeded in discharging a torpedo the *Saikyō* fired several well-directed shells at her adversary, which was thus frightened off, turned about, and eventually disappeared in the dense clouds of smoke enveloping the contending fleets. The two attacking war-vessels, however, kept steadily advancing until they were with 500 metres' distance of the *Saikyō's* port bow, when they began firing. Moreover, a torpedo-boat was again sighted, and this time just ahead. On reaching a proper distance, a torpedo was discharged from the starboard bow tube. At the moment the *Saikyō*, being compelled to answer the enemy's fire, had veered to port. But as the torpedo was seen coming on, the *Saikyō* was turned with her bow pointing directly for it, at full speed. The recoil of the water from the bow was sufficient to make the torpedo deviate by a hair's-breadth; in fact it missed the vessel by only one metre, or even less, passing harmlessly by to the starboard. It was the *Saikyō's* last chance and a desperate manoeuvre at best, but none the less successful. If it had struck her, she would have been blown to pieces in an instant. But another torpedo-boat was now discovered, stealing near. It was heading for the *Saikyō's* starboard quarter, and at a distance of not more than 30 metres when caught sight of. No possible movement of the helm could take the ship from the deadly weapon's path, and every one expected that the last moment had come. Vice-Admiral Kabayama, who was standing on



the bridge with six other officers, saw that nothing could be done. After fixing his eyes for a moment on the dreaded boat, he looked around with a slight smile and made a humorous remark to his officers, as if wholly indifferent to the vessel's extreme peril. The second torpedo was then discharged at close range, and as it left on its work of death and destruction, the Chinese raised shout of triumph and clapped their hands with anticipative joy. But for the second time and contrary to all expectation, the torpedo failed to hit its mark. Passing under the keel, it re-appeared floating harmlessly on the waves far to starboard. As soon as the situation was realized, every one on the *Saikyō* raised a ringing and prolonged cheer, with a great waving of hats and clapping of hands. Four excellent photographic views were taken during the engagement. From first to last the *Saikyō* received her full share of the enemy's attentions, very great damage being inflicted by the hostile shells. Yet only 11 men were wounded, and no one killed. The wounded men moreover all recovered later on.

How bitter the disappointment of the enemy at the failure of the torpedo-attack, is easily imagined. Utterly disconcerted by the cheers of the *Saikyō's* brave crew and her apparently miraculous invulnerability, the attacking Chinese withdrew from the unequal contest, and thereafter left their tiny foe unmolested. The *Saikyō's* last great escape occurred at 3.30 p. m. Shaping her course to the south, the *Saikyō* now moved out of the line of battle, at last reaching the temporary anchorage in safety, though sadly battered and bruised.

During the hottest part of the engagement Vice-Admiral Kabayama, whose daring and bravery were unrivalled on that memorable day, stood with six of his officers on the bridge, giving orders and inspiring the men with his own invincible spirit. It seems that he had been fully prepared for the worst from the very outset, and, more than once, when no other course than that of dashing in desperation against the enemy seemed possible, the Admiral remained as composed as ever, now looking calmly at an approaching torpedo-boat and then turning to his staff to crack a joke at the enemy's expense. Although the uniform worn by him was begrimed with smoke and powder, yet the Admiral never flinched and remained steadfastly at his post of extreme

danger. Especially admirable was the fact that he had some of his officers take photographic views of various phases of the sea-fight. Several pictures of unique merit were thus taken in all the bustle and excitement of the moment and despite the momentary expectation of being sent to the bottom. It should be finally added that the officers and men also preserved their usual cheerful equanimity throughout.

As already noted the "Saucy *Saikyō*," carried four guns of the quick-firing type, Ninety rounds were fired from each of these, or hundred and sixty in all.

---

#### IV.—BRAVERY OF COMMANDER SATŌ, NAVIGATING OFFICER OF THE *AKAGI*.

After the glorious death of Captain Sakamoto, the command of the *Akagi* fell to Navigating Officer Satō Tetsutarō. He filled his post ably and with invincible courage, and though wounded directed his ship with the cool skill of a veteran.

It was not until a number of his comrades-in-arms, Captain Sakamoto among the rest, had fallen either killed or wounded, that Navigating Officer Satō assumed charge of the little war-ship, In the heat of the encounter, he himself was wounded by a shell fired from the *Lai Yuen*. Happily, however, the injury was not a mortal one, and after hastily having the wound dressed, Navigating Officer Satō again mounted the bridge and actively continued giving the necessary orders.

Endowed by nature with an adventurous and invincible spirit, it was ever the gallant officer's ambition to enter the service of the navy, and after having gone through the ordinary educational course, he matriculated at the Naval College. While here, his courage and dauntless bearing were frequent themes for comment among his fellow-students. Indeed on more than one occasion his friends were compelled to remonstrate with him because of his recklessness where personal safety was concerned; but he was not the man to shape his conduct in accordance with the opinions of other people. Upon graduating from the Naval

College, he was ordered to a man-of-war and his first cruise was in the Indian Ocean.

One day, the officers being assembled on deck and chatting freely with each other, one of them suddenly said: "Well, boys, we talk about bravery; but I wonder if there is any one of us who would venture to jump overboard for a swim just now?" As the words left his mouth a huge swell lifted the ship, and it seemed as if the dark outlines of a shark were visible. For a moment there was no reply, then Lieutenant Satō called out, "I'll try, at any rate!" So saying he hastily divested himself of his clothing and to the consternation of his fellow-officers, plunged over the side. With ease and skill he swam here and there among the surges, then nearing the ship again seized a rope flung him and clambered on deck—without having met with any unpleasant experience. His reputation for dauntless courage was at once established and his comrades thereafter treated him with increased respect.

Endowed with a spirit so high, it is no wonder that Navigating Officer Satō is spoken of as one of the heroes of the sea-fight of September 17th.

---

#### V.—THE CRISIS OF THE FIGHT.

THE *Akagi*, as we have stated, was tremendously cut up by the hostile fire, Lieut.-Commander Sakamoto being killed while on the bridge giving orders and many others either slain outright or seriously wounded. Just at the worst moment, the mainmast was broken in two by one of the enemy's shells, a number of flags being carried away with the mast. Instantly three petty officers, Iwano Namisuke foremost, followed by Ueda Jūtarō and Ikemoto Nobuchika, ran forward with a small mast taken from one of the ship's boats. Careless of the hail of shot and shell, the three brave fellows fastened the spar to the stump of the broken mast, rigged up a tackle, and soon had a fresh banner flying in the breeze. This was done to encourage the men fighting so well, and to show the rest of the Fleet that, though

sadly mauled, the *Akagi* still had plenty of fight and pluck in her.—The incident stands out in fine contrast to the action, or rather inaction, of the *Ting Yuen's* crew; for, when her maintopmast had been shot away, so important for signalling purposes, no one made the least attempt to repair the damage, the resulting confusion among the other Chinese vessels being fatal to any hopes of victory.

\*                    \*                    \*                    \*                    \*

Isobe Ichijirō, a third-class engineer, was on the lower deck of the *Akagi* when a shell entered the engine-room and did much damage, four men being killed outright, while one other was severely wounded. Particularly the steam-pipe connecting with one of the boilers was severed, and hissing volumes of hot, blinding steam began to fill the room, hiding everything from view. Isobe, who was fortunately uninjured, ran at once for the Chief Engineer; but meeting with Iwano Namisuke—already referred to—the two came back together. Breaking open a port, Isobe soon fetched a blanket, with which he sprang into the steam, expecting nothing else than death. Getting near the damaged pipe, he rapidly and skilfully fastened the blanket about it, stopping the escaping steam and preventing the speed of the vessel from lessening. Thanks to this timely act, the *Akagi* successfully ran the gauntlet of her enemies.

---

#### VI.—DUTY ABOVE ALL.

At one moment a shell entered the officers' messroom on the *Hiei*, temporarily converted into the surgeon's ward, and either killed or wounded the whole medical staff. Dead or horribly injured men were lying in every direction. Some of the wounded were calling for aid, but there was none left to treat their injuries intelligently and the situation was a desperate one. From among a number of corpses on one side a faint groan was now heard; there was a movement, and then a horrible-looking man rose unsteadily to his feet. The hair of his head and eyebrows had been burnt off; his face so torn and bruised that it was no longer

recognisable. Yet fearing that no one but himself was left alive to look after the wounded, the dreadfully injured man staggered to his feet, and began speaking in husky tones to those who had now come into the room. This was Miyashita Sukejirō, a medical attendant of the first-class. That medicine, he said, was over there; of this not much was left, so please to be careful in using it, and so on. He was going on with his injunctions when Lieut.-Commander Sakamoto Toshiatsu, who had come into the ward, noticed the man's terrible condition. The latter continued speaking and even tried to render some assistance, when the Lieut.-Commander cried, "Sukejirō, your words and bearing show you to be a truly valiant man. I now know what a loyal subject you are of our Emperor. Even should you die I will see that every one shall remember your story." On hearing these encouraging words, the almost blinded hero replied with a sad smile, "Are you the Staff-Commander? As you see, I have been badly wounded by that shell. I am not at all unwilling to die, but I am quite dissatisfied with the fact that my hands and feet refuse to do my bidding and that I cannot therefore do my duty." His clenched teeth and quick gasping showed plainly how much he must be suffering. Of course his Commander would not let the brave fellow attempt to do anything more, and he was at once removed. It is pleasant to narrate in conclusion that Miyashita thereafter fully recovered at the Saseho Naval Hospital, and is now once again at his post.

---

#### VII.—MEDICAL INSPECTOR KAWAMURA

CHIEF SURGEON or Medical Inspector of the Combined Fleet, during the action, was Dr. Kawamura Hōshū. He was on board the *Matsushima*, the flagship, and did yeoman's service on this great day. Together with his assistants Dr. Kawamura was tending the numerous wounded in the surgery, when, without a moment's warning, a shell from the *Chen Yuen* pierced the *Matsushima's* bow and struck the 12 centimetre gun on the lower deck battery. A tremendous explosion ensued, with a thunderous

crash of iron and steel, the gun being completely shattered. The floor of the surgery was crushed in, and Dr. Kawamura thrown with fearful force against the ceiling. Losing consciousness for a while, the severely injured man gradually regained his senses to find that he could no longer stand, his whole body still trembling violently from the wound and shock he had received. He made shift to crawl from out the wrecked surgery and then met with a marine, who lifted him up and endeavoured to carry him to a place of comparative safety. After the marine had proceeded a few paces, the Doctor asked, "Aren't you a gunner?" "Yes, Sir," was the reply. "Then why are you not at your post?" was the unexpected rejoinder; "let me down at once and go to your post. There are others detailed for attendance on the wounded." "But, Sir," expostulated the gunner, "the gun which I serve has been shattered by a shell from the *Chen Yuen*." "I thank you for your well-meant intentions," the Doctor now said firmly, "but you need not attend to the wounded without special orders to that effect. I do not need your help." The gunner thereupon placed the wounded man on the deck and went his way, while the Doctor tried to remove his own shoes, his legs being severely injured. He fainted again while attempting to do this. An attendant then came up, took off the Doctor's shoes and socks and carried him into the Captain's room, now become the surgery. Calling for a bucket of sea-water, the Doctor dipped his feet in it to stop the hæmorrhage and then, despite his great pain and loss of blood, continued directing the surgeons in attendance on the wounded.



MEDICAL INSPECTOR KAWAMURA.

## VIII.—TWO HEROES.

As has already been noted, the two most powerful vessels in the Chinese fleet engaged in the fight were the iron-clads *Ting Yuen* and *Chen Yuen*, far superior in tonnage and armature to any one ship in the Japanese Navy. These two iron-clads were therefore the objects of general solicitude to both officers and men, the greatest efforts being made to render them *hors de combat*. One of them bore, after the battle was over, the marks of no less than three hundred missiles: proving how accurate had been the aim and how great the vigour of the attacking Japanese war-ships. In connection with this burning desire to either sink or cause the two iron-clads to surrender, the Commander of the *Matsushima*, the flag-ship, reports that a marine who had received no less than ten wounds and whose face was a mass of horrible burns from the conflagration that had broken out on board, happened to arrest the attention of Captain Mukōyama. The man was evidently dying, yet seemed eager to speak to his Commander. Bending to catch the faintly whispered words, the Captain was surprised to hear the question, "Has the *Ting Yuen* sunk yet?" Stirred to noble pity and admiration, the officer replied: "Do not be concerned; the *Ting Yuen* is disabled and we are now about to attack the *Chen Yuen*." On hearing these words the dying hero smiled. "Be avenged on her!" cried he, and breathed his last. That is the spirit which wins battles!

\* \* \* \* \*

A similar instance was recorded simultaneously on the *Akagi*. Hashiguchi Tōjurō, a seaman, had been mortally wounded and was at his last gasp. Turning with an effort to an officer standing near he put the question, "Has the *Ting Yuen* been sunk yet?" And on being told that the iron-clad was badly injured and on fire, the man exclaimed, "We have her at last!" and died.

---

 IX.—UNDAUNTED TO THE LAST.

AMONG the many incidents recorded of heroism on the part of

the Japanese seamen, here is one of exceptional interest. It was at the hottest moment of the conflict that a petty officer belonging to one of the smaller Japanese ships of war, was struck in the chest by a fragment of an exploded shell. This occurred just as the officer had mounted the railing in order to carry out a command, and the force of the blow was so great that he fell into the sea. In a few seconds thereafter the head of the desperately-wounded man was seen to rise once more and for the last time above the waves, when, with all his fast-failing strength, the dying hero cried out "NIPPON BANZAI! Japan for ever!" and then sank, to be seen no more.

---

X.—MINDFUL OF HIS DUTY TO THE LAST.

WHILE instances of individual heroism in this great fight are numerous, the subjoined is almost if not quite without parallel. The *Itsukushima* which was exposed to a very heavy fire throughout the engagement, was struck by a shell which burst between decks and fatally wounded one of the crew at work in the room where the torpedo-tubes were kept. A piece of shell struck him in the breast, piercing the lungs, whence a crimson flood immediately began to flow. Death was inevitable and at hand; yet with calm courage the wounded man took a key from his pocket and while holding it in his left hand waved his right to attract the attention of his companions. On one of them coming to him, the dying man said, with distinct utterance,—“This is the key of the tool-chest. If, after I am gone, this key could not be found, great confusion would surely ensue. I beg therefore that you will give this key to the officer entrusted with the charge of the chest.” His voice had grown gradually fainter during the delivery of this message, and he died as the last word fell from his lips, whence no sob or moan had come.

The hero's name was Yanagiwara Kujūrō, and he was a native of Funimitsu village, Waké District, Prefecture of Ehimé. He was only 29 years of age, and served on board the *Itsukushima* in the capacity of an armorer of the third class.



## XI.—A NOBLE REFUSAL.

IN her third direct assault on the enemy, the *Matsushima* approached the *Ting Yuen*, the latter bearing down upon her at full speed. For this reason rapid preparations were made for the discharge of a torpedo from the *Matsushima's* port quarter, and so all those having duty in this part of the vessel were quickly at their posts. Among the rest was Kitamura Tsunekichi, a sailor of the second-class. While waiting for the *Ting Yuen* to come within the proper distance, at 2.34 p. m., a 26 centimetre shell from the fore-turret of the *Ting Yuen* penetrated into the *Matsushima's* port torpedo-chamber, whence it glanced off, striking her barbette and giving the whole ship a tremendous shock. A most pestilent vapour, at the same time, exuded from the torpedo-room, and a cry of agony was audible. A marine crawled to the scene of the disaster and there found Kitamura, whose leg had been torn off by the shell. He did what he could to stop the hæmorrhage, but the gush of blood was so great that the bandage slipped off. A surgical attendant was then summoned, who might treat the case intelligently; but when he came Kitamura gasped out,—“Don't trouble yourself about me. Thrust your dirk into my body and throw me overboard! This is the best thing you can do.” His one idea was thus to let the medical assistant go to other men whose lives might still be saved: his own death being unavoidable. Such spirit is deserving of laudatory record.

---

## XII.—AN INTREPID BUGLER.

ANOTHER instance of heroic devotion to duty! Kimura Kumazō was the name of a bugler attached to the *Fusō*. While in the very act of blowing, a fragment of an exploded shell struck him on the right side of the abdomen, inflicting a dangerous and most painful wound. Nothing daunted, Kumazō extracted the piece of jagged iron with his own hand and kept to his post. Presently a surgeon's assistant approached him, noticing his

blood-stained uniform, and tried to bandage the wound, at the same time urging the injured man to go to the surgeon's ward. But the gallant bugler refused to do this; he thanked the assistant for his kind attentions yet insisted that it was his duty to blow the various signals until his strength utterly fail him. Shortly afterwards, most unfortunately, another shell struck his head from behind, killing him on the spot.

---

## XIII.—THE ONLY FATAL CASUALTY ON BOARD THE

*SAIKYŌ MARU.*

WE have already told of the many hairbreadth escapes of the *Saikyō Maru*, as well as of the manner in which she was riddled by the shot of her infuriated foes. Strange to say, not one life was lost on board, despite the furious bombardment. Stay,—there was one casualty. When the two great Chinese iron-clads were closing upon their pygmy adversary, one of the 30 centimetre guns of the *Ting Yuen* threw a shell into the *Saikyō's* saloon. It burst there with a frightful din and crash, causing scores of terrified rats to scamper out of their holes and rush frantically in search of less noisy quarters. Sad to narrate, one of these rats was struck by a splinter of shell and thus killed in the full flush of his youthful vigour. This was the only loss of life recorded on board the *Saikyō Maru*, despite her having been so long exposed to the hottest fire of the enemy and the attacks of their torpedoes. Rather small game to bag with a gun of 30 tons!

---

## XIV.—AN EYE-WITNESS'S CRITIQUE.

A most graphic and vivid description of the behaviour of the the *Matsushima* in this notable sea-fight, is given by Naval Lieutenant Kimura Kōkichi, to whose ready pen we are indebted for the following data. Lieutenant Kimura was, it should be stated, on board the *Matsushima* at the time, so was an eye-witness as

well as partaker in the scenes he so excellently portrays:—"Even at the most critical moment of the conflict no one was at all dismayed or discouraged; the gunners, despite such great loss of life in their ranks, stood without flinching by their great weapons, loading and firing without confusion and with all the steadiness of a parade. Some hold that there is always the temptation to overdo the firing with Q.-F. guns; but the Japanese in this engagement surely did not do this, for they never fired at the enemy until the aim was certain, and this even when a hostile vessel was quite close. Moreover after firing the cartridges were, despite the great peril, carefully picked up in order to go afterwards to the smith. They were neatly piled in out-of-the-way places and never tossed overboard, much to the gratification of the officers. It is also claimed that we made too little use of the great 32 centimetre guns; but the men entrusted with their handling were the best and most skilful gunners we had on board. If therefore they did not use the guns very often, this is only owing to the lack of proper opportunities for their use." . . . . . "Some minutes before the conflict actually began," continues Lieutenant Kimura, "the Second Captain, Commander Mukōyama Shinkichi, summoned all the officers into the principal wardroom and addressed them in the following words:—"I fear that, during the course of the fight, our men may lose heart at the sight of their comrades. You had therefore better see that all dead bodies are quickly taken to the bathrooms, where they will be out of sight." To this proposition all present consented. But after the fight had well begun the shells came thick and fast, causing many deaths and more severe wounds. There were so many fatal casualties that the corpses could not be carried below. Instead of being at all intimidated by this, the survivors at once stepped into the places of the fallen, even before any command to this effect could be given. The firing was never for a moment permitted to slacken. Even the non-combatants were stirred by the noble ardour of the fighting men, and begged for permission to join them. One man who had been shot in the abdomen and whose intestines were protruding from the gaping wounds, refused to be carried to the surgeon's ward, because, he said, he did not want to take any of the fighters from their work in order to carry

him below. Another, after having had his body burnt out of all recognition in attempting to extinguish a fire, stood by helping all he could till the flames were put out, when he died. A third, mortally wounded, man, whose every gasp brought forth a gush of blood, would not close his eyes until he had told a comrade where the key of an important locker was and what the locker contained. A chief gunner, whose under-jaw had been shot away and who could, of course, not utter a word, signed to a subordinate with a nod to take his place, and fell dead after he had placed the handle of the gun-lever in his subordinate's hand. But such instances of heroism were not confined to the *Matsushima*: they were repeated time and time again on every ship taking part in the conflict."

---

XV.—THE DISCIPLINE AND ORDER PRESERVED ON THE  
JAPANESE MEN-OF-WAR.

It is a fact which certainly deserves to be recorded that, even while engaged in actual hostilities with the enemy, the most rigid discipline and perfect order were preserved on the war-ships of the Japanese Fleet. There was not the slightest difference in regard to the observance of the ordinary rules and regulations: every one did his appointed duty without hesitation and without blundering. Whether in bringing up powder and ammunition, in adjusting the guns, in caring for the wounded, or in effecting temporary and needed repairs, no disorder was apparent. Everything went like clock-work. Even in such minor matters as cleaning or flushing the decks, personal cleanliness, the taking of meals, changing of watches, etc., there was not the slightest deviation from the regulations of every day. In a word with the sole exception of the observance of a time for recreation—an impossibility under the circumstances,—all proceeded as orderly as on occasions of ordinary drill. Whenever the seamen's time was not busily employed, some officer would read aloud to them the latest Imperial Rescript or exhort them to do their duty as loyal and patriotic sons of Japan. There was not a single instance of

cowardice or insubordination. All strove with equal and unflagging ardor to do their duty at all times and under all circumstances. What higher praise could be bestowed on these brave men? The old battle-song of England might well be applied to these gallant sailors:—

Hearts of oak are our ships,  
 Hearts of oak are our men!  
 We always are ready—  
 Steady, boys, steady!—  
 We'll fight and we'll conquer,  
 Again and again.

---

#### XVI.—THE GLORY OF THE JAPANESE NAVY.

(Translated from a printed report.)

IF we compare the relative strength of the contending Squadrons engaged in the great Battle of the Yellow Sea, we shall find that whereas the Chinese possessed twelve ships of war, besides four torpedo-boats—all of which belonged to the celebrated Northern or Peiyang Fleet—our two Squadrons were composed of only twelve men-of-war, including the *Saikyō Maru*—a mail-steamer and of course unarmored—without a single torpedo-boat. But not only in number of ships was the Chinese fleet far superior: even in the matters of tonnage and armament the advantage lay distinctly with the enemy. The Chinese had such iron-clads (barbette ships) as the *Ting Yuen*, *Chen Yuen*, *King Yuen* and *Lai Yuen* and *Ping Yuen*, the two first-named having each more than 3,000 tons greater displacement than any of the Japanese vessels. With the exception of one iron-clad corvette, the *Fusō*, whose speed (12 knots) was less than that of any of the Chinese war-ships, all the Japanese vessels were either cruisers, gunboats, or coast-defence ships. Despite this glaring disparity our ships fought with desperate valour for nearly five long hours on that bright September day. During this time we sank three of the enemy: the *Chao Yang* (cruiser, 1,350 tons, 16½ knots speed); the *King Yuen* (iron-clad, 2,850

tons,  $16\frac{1}{2}$  knots); and the *Chih Yuen* (cruiser, 2,300 tons, 18 knots). Three were set on fire: the *Ting Yuen* (iron-clad, 7,430 tons,  $14\frac{1}{4}$  knots): *Lai Yuen* (iron-clad, 2,850 tons,  $16\frac{1}{2}$  knots, sister to the *King Yuen*); and the *Kwang Chia* (cruiser, 1,296 tons,  $14\frac{3}{4}$  knots). This ship stranded on a reef near Talién Bay and was destroyed by her own crew. The remaining vessels of the Chinese fleet took to flight and were driven from the vicinity of Haiyang Island into the Gulf of Pechili, where they sought refuge at Wei-hai-wei. We remained in possession of Haiyang and the neighbouring islands. And all this without losing a single ship of our own—not even the little wooden mail-steamer! The *Matsushima*, *Hiyei* and *Akagi* were much battered, yet well able to fight despite their injuries.

Thus with a greatly inferior force we destroyed nearly the whole Peiyang Squadron, once the terror of the Eastern Seas, and humbled the pride of the Chinese Colossus.

The world-renowned battle of Trafalgar, where Lord Nelson won immortal fame, was fought before iron-clads or steam-vessels were even dreamed of. All the ships that took part in that wonderful engagement were like the invincible *Victory*: wooden sailing-vessels. Since that day little less than a century has passed by. During this time the world has witnessed more than one desperate naval encounter; but in none of these were fish-torpedoes used nor did so many as ten ships on each side take part in any action. The Naval Battle of Haiyang was thus on a gigantic scale: undoubtedly the greatest action since the invention of modern powerful and deadly engines of war. The battle was conducted on strictly scientific principles, as formulated by the genius of science, and in accordance with the most modern rules of warfare. It took place in Asiatic waters, was waged between the two great Empires of the Orient—and that in this greatest of scientific encounters victory rested with the arms of Japan, sheds an undying lustre on the Japanese Navy, fighting against so great odds. Japan has thus shown herself by actual prowess to be a nation that can no longer be slighted, and fully entitled to take not only the foremost rank among the powers of the East but also to hold a superior position among the Great Powers of the West.

## XVII.—A PLEASING INCIDENT.

AFTER the battle was over and the enemy in full flight for Wei-hai-wei, the clouds of smoke soon disappeared, the sea once more grew calm and still, and despite the growing dusk the atmosphere was clear and pure. The officers of each vessel gathered on the quarter-decks, their hearts filled with joy, and congratulated their lion-hearted captains. Looking towards the eastern horizon, where Japan lay far away, the whole fleet burst into a joyous song, the sonorous strains of the national anthem, *Kimi ga yo*, resounding far and wide over the peaceful sea, while the band of the *Matsushima* played the melody in unison with that glorious outburst of song. Suddenly in the still air was heard the sound of flapping wings, and, looking up, a fine falcon was seen to alight on the right of the main-topsail yard-arm of the *Takachiho*. Nomoto Gunzayemon, a second-class petty officer, at once sprang up the rigging, hoping to catch the noble bird. Evincing not the least perturbation, the falcon allowed the sailor to approach and seize it; and with the bird on his wrist Nomoto descended, greeted as he reached the deck with loud cries of "Heaven's Messenger!" The ship's carpenter at once made a roomy cage for the falcon, which seemed quite content with its surroundings and soon became tame. The cage was hung in the captain's cabin, and the propitious occupant treated daily to all sorts of dainties, rats being the food he particularly affected. On Naval Commander Saitō, a Court Chamberlain, coming, a few days later, with the the Imperial thanks to the Fleet, the falcon was sent back in the Chamberlain's charge to Japan and presented to H. M. the Emperor. His Majesty gave the bird the name of *Takachiho*, in remembrance of the good ship, and the falcon has since lived in the finest and roomiest of cages in the Imperial Aviary at Shinjuku, Tōkyō.

It must be noted, in conclusion, that the falcon has since ancient times been considered a messenger of good fortune in Japan. Baron Itō Miyoji later on wrote a most interesting essay on the subject.

## XVIII—THE PRICE OF GLORY.

THE total losses on the Japanese vessels during this memorable sea-fight, were as follow:—

	KILLED		WOUNDED	
	Officers	Men	Officers	Men
<i>Yoshino</i>	1	1	—	9
<i>Takachiho</i>	—	1	—	2
<i>Akitsushima</i>	1	4	—	10
<i>Naniwa</i>	—	—	—	—
<i>Matsushima</i>	3	54	—	56
<i>Chiyoda</i>	—	—	—	—
<i>Itsukushima</i>	—	14	1	11
<i>Hashidate</i>	—	3	—	9
<i>Hiyei</i>	3	17	—	33
<i>Fusō</i>	—	4	2	8
<i>Akagi</i>	2	9	2	12
<i>Saikyō Maru</i>	—	—	1	10
Totals	10	107	6	160
Grand Total	117		166	



## CHAPTER V.

### THE INVASION OF MANCHURIA.

---

#### I.—OPERATIONS ABOUT KIULIEN-CHING.

AFTER their crushing defeat at Phyöngyang, the Chinese hastened towards the borderland between Korea and Chinese Manchuria, intending, in the following month, to cross over into their own territory and there defend themselves as best they might, for it was no longer possible for them to assume an offensive attitude. On September 23rd Major-General Tatsumi was sent from the First Army Corps in command of the Combined (Tenth) Brigade, in order to ascertain the exact whereabouts of the enemy and drive them on to the Manchurian frontier if need be. On October 6th the Advance Column of this Brigade reached Wiju, 125 miles from Phyöngyang, close to the River Yalu, which here forms a natural boundary between the Korean Kingdom and its colossal would-be suzerain. Twelve days later the military telegraph and the commissariat transport line of communication were completed between Wiju and the fallen stronghold. The Head Quarters of the Fifth Division, consisting of the Ninth Brigade (Eleventh and Twenty-first Regiments) under the command of Lieutenant-General Nozu, pushed on to Chönju (October 6th) and Kasan; while the Third Division, under Lieutenant-General Katsura, with the Fifth Brigade (Sixth and Eighteenth Regiments) and Third Cavalry Battalion, encamped near Wiju, the Artillery Reserve halting at Chönju (58½ miles from Phyöngyang). The total forces rendezvoused at Wiju on October 24th, Commander-in-Chief Marshal Yamagata having reached the town on the previous day.

Kiulien-ching is a strongly fortified town situated on the right bank of the Yalu River—the stream being several hundred metres broad—and the whole ground thereabouts is admirably adapted for the repulsion of an invading foe. It is quite probable that the Chinese deemed the place impregnable, for they had established their Head Quarters in the town. The line of defence faced the Yalu, while on the right it had been carried on to Antung and on the left, to Hushan, literally “Tiger Mountain”—a hill close by Kiulien-ching—and Litseyuen. Between Hushan and Litseyuen flows the river Ngaeho, which is a tributary of the Yalu. Along the bank of the latter the line of defence stretched for a great distance and was strengthened by over one hundred redoubts and earthworks, which bristled with cannon. Moreover on the high ground and among the hills, mountain and field guns were posted in prominent positions, commanding the approaches; while in the lowland mines were sunk here and there. Large troops of Infantry and Cavalry were guard at Changtien-ching, and the Main Body of the Chinese Army was at Hushan, surrounded by eighteen posts or minor encampments. The whole was under the chief command

of General Sung Kiang, who had studied military science in Europe and was held in great esteem by his officers and the Chinese in general. His immediate subordinates were Sieh Shichong, Liu Ping-yuan and Suen Shien-ying. The troops were of a



FIELD-MARSHAL COUNT YAMAGATA, COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE FIRST ARMY.

of General Sung Kiang, who had studied military science in Europe and was held in great esteem by his officers and the Chinese in general. His immediate subordinates were Sieh Shichong, Liu Ping-yuan and Suen Shien-ying. The troops were of a

better class and all had had more or less training. The whole forces were divided into 49 camps or bodies, numbering about 24,500 men.

Field-Marshal Yamagata intended to storm Hushan first, and it was his idea to do this as quickly as possible in order to scatter the Chinese forces, upon whom a great defeat at this point would be sure to have tremendous influence. He sent an order to this effect to Colonel Satō Tadashi on the night of October 23rd; and this gallant officer set out the same night, in the direction of Shuikau-ching, with six Companies of the 18th Regiment, a small body of Cavalry, and two cannon. It was the Colonel's plan to ford the Yalu at Litseyuen and thence reaching the rear of the enemy's left flank at Hushan, make a feint in front while delivering the real attack on the left—Napoleon's old successful tactics. The 25th was the day appointed for the attack.

Other bodies of the Japanese army were then told off in various directions, the general orders being given to the officers on the 24th. At about an hour before noon of the same day, Colonel Satō's Column forded the Yalu, at a place about 3000 metres from Shuikau-ching. The opposite bank was crowded with Wulung (Oula) Cavalry, but the Japanese easily settled with these. When the Column had reached midstream, the guns of the Kulo-tse forts opened fire on the intrepid men, as did also those placed at the mouth of the River Anping, another small tributary of the Yalu. This did not, however, in any way deter the steady advance of the Japanese; nor did the threatening attitude and fire of some 200 Chuntse soldiers and 60 Amoor cavalymen, on the now near bank, strike excessive fear into the hearts of Colonel Satō's men. On getting within 600 metres of the bold defenders of the stream, the latter promptly ran off, as if in a panic, leaving some 20 killed and wounded behind them in proof of the accuracy of Japanese marksmanship. The whole Column had passed over the stream at 1.30 p. m., whereupon the capture of the redoubts at the mouth of the Anping was soon effected, the spoils consisting of two field-guns, a number of rifles, ammunition, tents, and a large quantity of most acceptable sheepskin coats, besides various other articles of clothing. Only one man was wounded on the Japanese side. News of the victory

was at once sent back to Head-Quarters, and Colonel Satō's Column then bivouacked near the foot of the hills some three miles distant from the Yalu.

In order now to proceed with the attack upon Hushan, it was necessary for the invaders to cross the stream at Wiju, where the Yalu may not be forded. For this reason the Fifth Engineer Battalion had, since the 12th of the month, been surveying the river and making preparations for bridging it. On October 24th everything was in readiness, and the engineers were ordered to have the pontoon thrown across the stream by 4 a. m. of the following day. This military bridge was made of small and light pine-wood boats built on the spot, as well as of other, iron, boats which had been brought up by the Third Division. The Engineer Corps began their arduous work at 9 p. m. on the 24th, completing it, after encountering enormous difficulties, by six o'clock the next morning, or in just nine hours. The Yalu is here sub-divided into three streams, the first and third being fordable while the second is a deep and rapid current. Major of Engineers Baba Masao had just begun building the 190 metres long bridge at this point, when an Infantry Battalion under Major Tomita Harukabe came up to render assistance if necessary and protect the men at work should the enemy try to obstruct their operations. This reinforcement at once began to throw up earthworks on the islet in midstream—a muddy flat—as well as on the right bank. But the enemy remained in ignorance of what the Japanese were doing, and the pontoon was completed only two hours later than the appointed time—4 a. m., for that was the hour at which general orders appointed that it should be finished,—the whole work being under the personal supervision and direction of Colonel Yabuki Shūichi.

At 3.30 a. m. the different columns broke camp and advanced to their appointed place on the left bank, each Commander being exactly aware of what he was to do and where to go, so there was not the least confusion. Major-General Ōsako Naotoshi, with his Column, crossed the Yalu in boats at a place some little distance from the pontoon, and north of Hushan. Having done this, the Column marched on to a hill east of Hushan, whence it was intended to deliver a flank attack. A little after 6 a. m.

(October 25th), Lieut.-General Katsura crossed the pontoon with his men, who had been eagerly awaiting the completion of the bridge for nearly two hours. This was the Main Body, and their duty was to attack Hushan from the front. Some tentative shots were now fired by the Japanese field-guns in the direction of the Chinese encampment, but no reply was forthcoming. Clouds of powder-smoke were then seen rising from between the hills north of Hushan, the Ōsako Column having already begun the flank attack. Taken utterly by surprised, the Chinese swung around to meet the invaders on their flank, and it was for this reason that no reply was made to the artillery fire near the pontoon. As soon as this smoke was seen, the Main Column deployed, bringing its Right Wing to the attack, the northern end of Hushan being the objective. Here the Japanese Artillery proved very effective, quite demoralising the enemy in fact, who were thus between two fierce fires. The assault growing more and more bitter, the Chinese began to retreat, despite their superiority of numbers, and the fugitives took the direction of Litseyuen. Seeing the discomfiture of their comrades, four Columns (about 3000 men) of the enemy, with eight cannon, now made a sortie from Kiulien-ching. In order to check the advance of this reinforcement, the Right Wing of the Main Column tried to get around to the southern end of Hushan, but this was impossible owing to their numerical inferiority.

The Brigade under Major-General Tatsumi, forming the Japanese Left Wing, had, in the meantime, crossed the pontoon at 7 a. m., and were marching at double-quick around to the left of Hushan, in order to render assistance to the Main Column, when they espied the approaching Chinese reinforcement. Swinging round to the left, they attacked the reinforcement in the flank, causing great havoc. A sharp but short struggle ensued, the enemy ultimately relinquishing all attempt to get near the hill and fleeing in disorder along the Litseyuen road. This troublesome reinforcement having thus been beaten back, Major-General Tatsumi's Brigade now advanced to storm the forts south of Hushan, and when the enemy showed signs of wavering the Katsura and Ōsako Columns simultaneously charged upon the disheartened Chinese. It was a case of *saive qui peut*. The enemy

first tried to get back to Kiulien-ching, but the pursuit being too hot finally struck off to the west, taking the hidden pass among the hills leading to Funghwang-ching. They had, however, not done with the disasters of the day, for Major-General Tatsumi followed on their heels and reached the Chinese camps only 2200 metres from Litseyuen, where 10 guns and more than 400 tents fell into the hands of the victorious Column. It was now high noon and a halt was ordered, Major-General Tatsumi giving his men a well-earned rest.

The Head-Quarters at Tungkungting, Wiju, were removed the same day, with the Staff of the Fifth Division, to the north-east of Hushan, the pontoon being crossed for the last time at 1 p. m. The General Quarters of the Third Division were placed at Litseyuen, while the Advance Column of the Fifth Division bivouacked near the village. On October 26th the attack was to be continued. During the foregoing night the enemy had constantly fired at the Japanese camps, without, however, doing much damage and failing to elicit any response whatever from the invaders. Kiulien-ching though in imminent peril, was still in the hands of the Chinese, and it was of the first importance that this place should be captured. So at 4.30 a. m. (October 26th) the Third Division advanced towards Hushan from the right; Major-General Tatsumi's Brigade went from the centre; while that of Major-General Ōshima marched from the left. Somewhat to the surprise of the Japanese, there was no firing from the massive walls of the town. The Eleventh Infantry Regiment now scaled the walls and entered Kiulien-ching, but only to find the place completely deserted. It was thus evident that the Chinese garrison, which might have inflicted great damage on the hostile army from behind those battlements of solid masonry, had silently decamped during the night in small bodies, keeping up a desultory fire in the meantime in order to encourage the belief that they intended to retain possession of the stronghold. The Fifth Division then marched into the town in force, while a body of Cavalry was despatched towards Funghwang-ching and Tatung in order to expedite the retreat of the enemy or rather cut them off from safety; but the latter had got too great a start and were able to elude the pursuing horsemen.

At ten o'clock in the forenoon Marshal Yamagata, Commander-in-Chief, entered the bourg, followed by the Staff officers of the Divisions and Brigades. The former Custom House was converted into Head-Quarters and the national flag of Japan soon seen flying above it. But the victory had to be followed up, and that promptly. Funghwang-ching and Antung must be taken while the enemy were disheartened and in disorder. Marshal Yamagata therefore despatched a flying Column southward, following the right bank of the Yalu, which should surprise Antung and the surrounding forts. These kindly intentions were, however, frustrated by the discreet Chinese, who fled during the night, leaving Antung and the numerous redoubts thereabouts an easy prey for the invaders. As for Funghwang-ching—a very important walled town, about 24 miles distant from Kiulien-ching and on the Moukden highroad—the honour of its capture was delegated to the Tatsumi Brigade. After sundry necessary preparations



LIEUT.-COLONEL FUKUSHIMA  
(the Hero of the Ride across Asia).

the Column set out, but when the advance body of Cavalry reached the place they found that the larger part of the town had been reduced to ashes. This was on October 29th. The following day the Cavalry Battalion attached to the Fifth Division entered the dismantled stronghold, while Major-General Tatsumi took up his quarters in the castle on the 31st. According to what was said by some prisoners taken near the town, the Chinese Army had fled towards Takushan.

The total Japanese losses on Hushan and at Kiulien-ching amounted to 140 killed and wounded. On the other had the Japanese buried nearly 500 Chinese corpses found on the field, while many others were seen

floating among the cold ripples of the Ngaeho. The spoils taken were as follow :—

Cannon	66
Rifles	3300
Shells	35,000
Ground-torpedoes	450
Small-arm Ammunition	3,700,000 rounds
Cleaned Rice	1470 <i>koku</i> *
Unhulled Rice	245½ <i>koku</i>

With regard to Antung, it must be noted that this town was later on made the head-quarters of the Civil Administrative Office of that part of Manchuria occupied by the Japanese Army. Mr. Komura, sometime *Chargé d' Affaires* at Peking, was installed as Director, but was subsequently relieved by Lieut.-Colonel Fukushima.



THE COMMISSARIAT STAFF OF THE FIRST ARMY AT THE QUARTERS IN WIJU

\*One *koku* is a little more than four bushels English.



## II.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

## 1.—ISOBE, A FIRST-CLASS PRIVATE.

It was on October 25th that the First Expeditionary Army crossed the Yalu and entered Chinese territory. Among the men of the Third Company, 6th Regiment, was a private of the first-class, named Isobe Kiichi. The Company crossed the river and then lay concealed in the shallows in midstream. Just at dawn the attack on Hushan was made, the enemy taking a position of advantage on the ridge of the hill. Firing at first scattered volleys, the Chinese at last began a continuous discharge of their rifles, in spite of which the Japanese steadily crept nearer until not more than 100 metres separated them from the foe. The firing now rose to murderous intensity, thirty Japanese dropping either dead or severely wounded at this spot, and the men were not a little disheartened. Isobe, noticing this, cried out: "Their bullets are flying over our heads! Don't be afraid, but aim low, at the feet of the enemy! Aim low!" With the utmost coolness Isobe advanced, firing with admirable precision, his steady bearing having a most beneficial effect on the rest. At last a well-aimed bullet from his rifle brought down the enemy's standard. A few minutes later the men were ordered to make a bayonet-charge, and Isobe ran ahead of the others shouting "Long live His Imperial Majesty!" His gallantry was infectious and soon the enemy were swept from their ground.

Some little time after this, when the conflict about Hushan was at its height, a body of the enemy came out of Litseyuen and Kiulien-ching. Advancing at full speed against the invaders, the Chinese were reinforced by detachments coming along the highroad and from an eastern hill. Being many times stronger than the Japanese in point of numbers, the enemy never doubted their ability to drive back their persistent assailants, and drew near with great noise and much flaunting of banners. Making the top of an adjacent hill the basis of their operations, the Chinese began a furious enfilade, causing many casualties in the Japanese ranks. There was but one thing to do:—carry the enemy's position at

the bayonet's point. The command to "Charge!" rang out from a dozen bugles, and the serried ranks advanced at a sharp run. Isobe again led the whole charge. Disdaining the hail of bullets, he was the first to fight his way into the enemy's lines, where he cut down or shot one opponent after another, himself escaping all injury. His personal valour inflamed the troops to fury, and nothing could withstand their attack. In a few minutes the enemy were repulsed and the Japanese in possession of their post.

---

### 2.—A DAUNTLESS ORDERLY.

DURING the fording of the Yalu, Tachibana Minekichi, an orderly of Brigade-Commander Tatsumi, was commanded to act as a guard to the Commander of the first detachment, then about to cross over the river. Tachibana very willingly undertook the task, which he performed with signal bravery, being exposed time and again to the enemy's fire. Later in the same day he was sent with a despatch from his Commander to the Chief of Division. He had to pass through a district infested by the enemy and had several most narrow escapes. On reaching Shuikau-ching, he saw another soldier, also bearing despatches, just about crossing the river and rowing a dilapidated boat. The crazy craft had already gone far from the shore, but Tachibana made up his mind to utilize it in reaching the opposite bank; so notwithstanding the force of the current, the width of the river and bitter chill of the water, he rapidly divested himself of his uniform, tied the precious despatch, in its oilpaper wrapping, above his head, and plunged boldly into the stream. He was successful in catching the boat in midstream, reached the opposite shore in safety, and finally handed in his letter to the Divisional Commander.

---

### 3.—AN ORDERLY OF BRIGADE-COMMANDER TATSUMI.

IN the assault on Kiulien-ching, Nishikawa Kimata, a

private of the first-class, of the Tenth Company, 22nd Regiment, acted as despatch-bearer to the Brigade Staff-Quarters. In the battle of Phyöngyang he had been sent with despatches to Colonel Satō, Commander of the 18th Regiment. It was just at the moment of the storming of the Moktan-tei forts that Major-General Tatsumi called him up to bear a message, and Nishikawa, braving successfully the storm of shot and shell, had fulfilled his mission. Later on he was ordered to take a message to the Commander of the Regiment of Engineers. On his way thither he had to pass within 140-150 metres of the enemy's lines and was thus a target for their rifles. One man, posted on the ramparts, shot repeatedly in his direction, missing each time by a hair's-breadth only. Nothing dismayed at this evidence of his prominence, Nishikawa passed along the whole front of the enemy's lines and again had the satisfaction of delivering his message. He served thereafter as despatch-bearer to the Brigade Staff-quarters, and, on one occasion, had to take a despatch to Colonel Tomoyasu. The road which he had to follow was literally plowed up by the enemy's shells, yet he never hesitated and passed through this fearful spot uninjured. Major-General Tatsumi thereafter singled him out for special praise for his daring and obedience.

---

#### 4.—AMMUNITION VALUABLE.

WHILE on the road to Wiju from Phyöngyang, the 21st Regiment reached and encamped at Shun-an, on October 14th. In the straw of his rough couch, a private of the first-class, Murakami Sakatarō, found 30 discarded cartridges of the kind used in the Murata rifle, with which the Japanese troops were armed. These he carefully gathered up and put into his ammunition-pouch. On seeing this, his officer said, by way of testing the man's spirit: "I notice that you have 30 rounds of ammunition above the necessary number. But don't you think the extra weight will greatly fatigue you on the long march?" To this, Murakami promptly replied, "Sir, we have now penetrated far into the enemy's territory and shall soon have to try conclusions with them

again. If at such a time as this one's ammunition runs out, what is to be done? The Chinese do not attach proper importance to their ammunition, and never even stop to pick a cartridge up if they let one fall on the road. I really think this is one of the reasons of their defeat."—Murakami had, later on, ample opportunity to use his extra ammunition at Kiulien-ching and thereafter at Tsauho-kau.

---

5.—MIHARA KUNITARŌ.

THE Fifth Battalion of Engineers was entrusted with the duty of bridging the Yalu. With this intent, at 10 p. m., October 13th, the night being a dark and windy one, an officer and several privates were sent to the stream in order to calculate the width of the waters to be bridged. On reaching a shallow in midriver they found that a Chinese junk lay at anchor in the upper part of the second stream. They boarded the junk and would gladly have made use of it for their purpose; unfortunately however the vessel was a most clumsy one and roughly put together, rowing in it being quite out of the question. It was this second stream or branch of the Yalu which was so deep and swift, and as this had to be bridged the width of the current must needs be ascertained at once. There was but one way to do this, under the circumstances. Some one must swim across with a measuring-tape! After a brief consultation, the choice fell upon Mihara Kunitarō, a first-class private. The wind was blowing a gale by this time; the water freezingly cold, and the current most fierce. Yet without a word and with the utmost calmness Mihara prepared to obey the command. Removing his uniform and seizing the line with one hand, he sprang into the darkly seething waters. It was just midnight. Swimming vigorously Mihara disappeared, and ten fathoms of the line were slowly paid out. Then came a sharp pull on the cord. The soldier holding it began to draw in, and was surprised to see that grew lax as if it had parted or been dropped by the swimmer. In another moment a faint cry of "Boat! boat!" came over the rushing stream—evidently a call for

help. But nothing could be done to save the drowning man: the line had actually parted, and launching a boat was out of the question. Absolute stillness had to be observed, for any loud cry might be heard by the enemy's pickets on the opposite bank. And if the Chinese once became aware of the invaders' intention, their whole plans might be upset. It was hard to bear, yet they were compelled to let the brave man sink helpless beneath the dark waves.

---

#### 6.—DISGRACEFUL NOT TO FIGHT.

THE invasion of Chinese territory was marked by a good deal of sickness among the Japanese troops, a low, malarial fever with other complicating symptoms being particularly prevalent. On the day preceding the crossing of the Yalu, November 24th, Sergeant Nakamura Koichirō and second-class privates Higaki Taichirō, Fujinaka Kintsui and Yamada Masaemon—four, all told—were taken down with fever and speedily grew very weak. The surgeon gave them medicine and warned them against over-exerting themselves; but the four brave fellows thought it would be an eternal disgrace not to participate in the battle of the ensuing day. So when November 25th dawned it found them though ill still prepared to play their part manfully. With the rest of the troops they forded the ice-cold stream, the water being in many places breast-high. They fought bravely that day, and at night bivouacked with their comrades on the hard-fought field. The following day as well they did their duty like men; but when the conflict was over the febrile symptoms returned and the disease, so long neglected, now took its revenge. Before long the crisis came and they died—yet not before having served their Emperor and country like true and faithful children of the Sun-land.

---

#### 7.—A VALIANT PRINCE.

H. I. H. PRINCE KAN-IN NORIHITO was, in his capacity of Captain of Cavalry, attached to the First Expeditionary Army:

Following Lieut.-General Katsura, the Prince endured all the hardships of the march, yet was ever the cheeriest of commanders and indefatigable in the fulfilment of his duty. He was always the first to the fore, and the last to retire. After crossing the Yalu the Japanese forces had, it will be remembered, some fierce fighting to do about Hushan; and while the combat was yet undecided, though the Chinese gave signs of wavering, a powerful reinforcement was seen coming to the enemy's aid from the direction of Kiulien-ching. The fresh troops were making directly for the Japanese left flank, and on seeing this Lieut.-General Katsura thought that the Chinese advance should, if possible, be interrupted. The one thing to do was to hasten the movements of the Left Wing, the Column under Major-General Tatsumi. The important duty of bringing up this Column at double-quick was entrusted to H. I. H. Prince Kan-in. Spurring at full speed across the bullet-swept field, the Prince soon reached the Major-General and delivered the order. This done he turned to retrace his steps, despite the fact that the enemy's fire had meanwhile grown heavier and the road back a most perilous one. But recking little of this, Prince Kan-in came back as he had gone, *ventre à terre*. Lieut.-Colonel Tomoyasu, of the Tatsumi Brigade, ventured to remonstrate with him against this exposure of himself, but His Imperial Highness would not listen to any proposition to wait till the firing slackened, urging that it was of the first importance for him to rejoin his command. The troops were filled with admiration for the Prince's valour, and endeavoured to emulate his brilliant example. It was their fierce flank-attack which kept the reinforcement from getting to Hushan and compelled it to retreat in disorder.

---

#### 8.—LIEUT.-GENERAL VISCOUNT TORIO.

LIEUT.-GENERAL VISCOUNT TORIO, who was ordered by the Emperor to inspect the battle-fields and the condition of the First Army, afterwards came to Seoul, having fulfilled the task assigned to him by His Majesty. When he reached the Korean capital he

at once called upon Count Inouye, for the two peers, being natives of the same province, were on intimate terms. An animated conversation on the past and the present commenced, and in the course of it, a servant of the Legation brought in a bottle of wine and two glass on a tray. The Viscount, who had been in great spirits a moment before, became suddenly dejected and, without showing any inclination to touch his glass, evinced signs of considerable emotion. His host asked in some surprise whether anything had occurred. Viscount Torio replied that the more he thought of what he had lately seen, the more it became impossible for him to touch his glass. He thereupon narrated the following story:—When he overtook the First Army and saw the Field-Marshal, the officers and the troops under his command, he found to his wonder and admiration that all those in the Army, from the Commander-in-chief down to the private soldiers, were not merely suffering the same privations but also enjoying the same comforts. They slept in the same manner and ate the same coarse diet. The Viscount was deeply moved at the earnest and self-denying zeal shown by Field-Marshal Count Yamagata in his command of the Army. He observed, however, that the Field-Marshal was rather emaciated, and learning that he was not quite well, he could not but feel that he ought to take better care of himself. He advised him, therefore, in the sense that, as he was advanced in years and accustomed to lead a different kind of life from the younger officers and soldiers, he had better take a few glasses of wine every day. On hearing that, the Field-Marshal shook his head, and, while thanking the Viscount for his kind intentions, replied that, as he had undertaken this grave task with the firm resolution of sacrificing his body for the weal of the



COUNT INOUE KAORU.

Empire, it was his invincible resolution to establish the most cordial relations with his officers and soldiers by exposing himself to the same dangers and suffering the same privations as they. Hence to be without comforts was a source of pleasure rather than of pain to him. He was extremely solicitous to have the many soldiers wounded in battle restored as quickly as possible to health, but situated as they were in a strange land, much inconvenience was unavoidable and recovery was necessarily delayed. How, then, could he, who was only slightly indisposed, regale himself with wine which was beyond the reach of even a soldier suffering from a dangerous wound? Such a proceeding would be entirely antagonistic to his original resolution. When the Viscount heard the Marshal speak in such a manner, he was deeply touched by his sincerity and patriotism, and thenceforth the very name of wine become associated in his mind with the hardships that Japan's officers and soldiers were experiencing in the discharge of their duties. The sight of the bottle had called up that reminiscence so vividly, and the thought of what hardships the Field-Marshal must be enduring had come over him, so strongly, that he had been unable to hide his emotion. The narrative moved Count Inouye in the same way, for he recalled the old days when he and the Field-Marshal had shared privations at the head of the troops that they led against the Shogun's army when it invaded the Chōshū fief prior to the Restoration. "Impossible to touch the wine," muttered the two statesmen, wrapt in stirring reminiscences.\*

---

\*Re-printed from the *Japan Mail*, by permission.



## CHAPTER VI.

---

### THE TAKING OF KINCHOW.

#### I.—FROM THE LANDING AT PETSEWO TO THE FALL OF THE CASTLE.

KINCHOW, the most important fortified town in the southern part of Shinking in general and the Liaotung Peninsula in particular, lies west of Mt. Tahoshang and directly north of the forts at Talién. From Talién the highroad leads to Port Arthur. Kinchow thus commands the neck of the peninsula and its possession is of the first importance to the more southerly strongholds; for with this castle-town in an enemy's hands no troops can be sent overland to the aid of Port Arthur, which in that case is rendered defenceless on its weakest side. Aware of all this, the Chinese had built a number of forts and walls in the broad area stretching from the plateau in the neighborhood of Tongtun, northwest of Tahongshang-shan, to Mt. Potau, by way of Tangmên-tse. The forts were, almost without exception, facing towards Petsewo, so that they commanded the Kinchow highroad. Between this plain and Kinchow the distance is one of 2 miles only, and the road leading to the town indescribably laborious and strewn with boulders and stones. The narrowest portion of the pass is at Siemên-tse: a sort of Chinese Thermopylae, where a handful of determined men might stay the advance of thousands. From none of these obstacles did the Japanese shrink; though aware of the wellnigh insurmountable difficulties of the road, they pressed forward undismayed.

On the arrival of the Japanese troops at Petsewo, reconnoitring bodies were speedily sent out to ascertain the whereabouts of the enemy and report on the condition of the road. On November 2nd, Major Saitō Tokumei, with a small force consisting of a Battalion of one Regiment, together with some Cavalry and Pioneers, started out to survey and make some repairs on the road along which the Main Body of the Division was to pass. Major Saitō was also charged with



COLONEL SAITŌ.

the duty of obtaining information concerning the number and movements of the enemy. The following day—the Emperor's Birthday—Lieut.-General Yamaji with the Main Body of his Division, took the road to Kinchow, Major-General Nogi being in command of the van.

On November 4th, just as Major Saitō was about to leave the vicinity of Liangkiatien, some forty Chinese mounted troopers made their appearance on the elevated ground north-east of Shilatsui, and at once began firing at the steadily advancing Japanese. The Chinese were, however, speedily put to flight by a few well-directed volleys. Later on about 100 Chinese soldiers and 70 or 80 horsemen showed themselves on the slope south-west of Chengsha-teng, intending, of course, to stop the Japanese advance. This time the encounter was a sharp one, yet the enemy was driven back by one Company of the Battalion, the advance guard and flank-guard; and at 11.50. a. m. the plateau of Liuhiatien was occupied by the Japanese. On another reconnaissance being made, it was found that the Chinese had taken their stand on the high ground in the neighbourhood of Tongtun. Major Saitō therefore encamped at Liuhiatien, sending messengers back to warn the Main Body, while scouts were despatched to learn all they could about the enemy's forces as well as to interrupt telegraphic com-

munication along the Foochow road. The Division under Lieutenant-General Yamaji was then only thirteen miles distant from Major Saitō's party.

At early dawn of the following day Major Saitō sent out several reconnoitring parties in order to the ascertain enemy's intentions. The little bands were constantly exposed to the fire of the watchful Chinese and suffered considerably in consequence. The Main Body of the Division left Hwanghiatien at 1 a. m., and resumed their march to Kinchow. The Right Wing, consisting of one Company of Infantry and another of Cavalry, under Major Akiyama, Commander of the First Battalion of Cavalry, shortly reached the vicinity of Wushih-lipu on the Foochow road. Taking the direction of Foochow, in order to better guard the flank of the approaching Division, these two Companies left the encampment of the preceding night at 1 a. m.

About one hour after the departure of the Main Body of the Division, the sound of cannon was heard in the direction of Kinchow. At 11 a. m. the Advance-Guard reached the outskirts of Liuhiatien. Here Lieut.-General Yamaji caused a halt and ascended Mt. Taching, east of Luihiatien, in order to personally inspect the disposition of the enemy's forces. It was at this hour that the reports came in from Major Saitō relative to the recent movements of the Chinese and the obstacles to be encountered on the road. It had been discovered that the enemy had placed two cannon on the brow of a hill near Siemên-tse, while soldiers had been posted at important places on both sides of the hill. Still, nothing was positively known of the numerical strength of the enemy. Seeing that it would be disadvantageous for the Japanese, situated as they were, to attack just then the excellently posted and strongly defended enemy, Lieut.-General Yamaji took his Division around to Sanshih-lipu, a village on the Foochow road, whence he intended to assault Kinchow in the rear. In pursuance of this scheme, the 15th Regiment of Infantry, and one Company each of Cavalry and Artillery, with a section of Pioneers, were sent under Colonel Kōno to silence the enemy in front and thus give the Chinese the impression that the whole Division intended advancing in that direction. Major-General Nogi, with the 1st Regiment of Infantry, was instructed to guard

the left flank of the Division on its way to Sanshih-lipu. This Regiment immediately took the Foochow highroad. The Division Commander, Lieut.-General Yamaji, now made a forced march with the remaining troops of the Division, and after traversing a most difficult and hilly road reached the Foochow highway and finally stopped at Kwanghia-tse. The Second-in-Command, Major-General Nogi, had meanwhile engaged the enemy in the vicinity of Potau-shan and kept up the fight until nightfall, when Lieut.-General Yamaji with his troops should arrive at his destination. The forts of the enemy being on elevated ground, the Japanese were constantly exposed to the hostile fire while on the march, and so suffered greatly. Seeing this, Major-General Nogi relinquished his original intention of pressing forward to the Foochow road, and halted for the night in a field midway between the Kinchow and Foochow highways.

All night long the distant thunder of cannon continued audible. Several skirmishes with the enemy's outposts occurred during the night, but the Japanese did not take the offensive until dawn.

At 7 a. m. of November 6th, this day having been predetermined for the attack on Kinchow, the Main Body of the Division broke camp and marched along the Foochow road to Kinchow, which was at once assaulted. The Division Commander ordered Major-General Nogi to co-operate with the Main Body, bringing up the First Infantry Regiment, thereafter joined by Colonel Kōno's troops who had advanced along the Petsewo road. The Main Body was further reinforced by the Second Regiment of Infantry and one Company of Artillery under Major-General Nishi. The brunt of the attack fell upon Major-General Nogi's command—the First Regiment—who found the enemy prepared to stubbornly resist



COLONEL KŌNO.

their passing over Mt. Potau, which lay in front. In the meantime the 15th Regiment had started from Liuhiatien, at 4 a. m. The First Battalion of this Regiment, under the command of Major Saitō, arrived soon afterwards in the enemy's vicinity, and began at, 6.05 a. m., shelling the forts on Chongchia-shan, near Shan-pan. Major Saitō's Column, as the Right Wing, thereupon stormed the enemy's right, and at 6.40 a. m. were in possession of two of the forts. Shortly after 7 a. m. the First Regiment succeeded in driving the enemy from Mt. Potau and taking the fort on the brow of the hill, while the 15th Regiment took possession of the redoubts near Shaupan.

Two hours later—at 9 a. m.—the whole Artillery force in the Division ranged their cannon at places varying from 1200 to 2500 metres north-north-east of Kinchow. They at once opened fire on the north and east gates and forts and the north-east angle of the castle. In half an hour the Chinese cannon were silenced, and, ten minutes later, the enemy were seen in full flight towards the Talien and Port Arthur highroads. There were 36 cannon engaged in this short though tremendous bombardement, and the noise is described as having been something terrific. The whole face of the sky was darkened with the smoke. In less than an hour the beautiful and peaceful scene was entirely metamorphosed, the ground being plowed up by shells, and corpses strewn everywhere. Lieut.-General Yamaji, who had been eagerly watching the progress of the artillery-attack, now ordered the whole force to charge: a command that was promptly and enthusiastically obeyed. Just before this event, the Battalion of Engineers—commanded to effect a breach in or destroy the North Gate—having pressed forward more rapidly than the Infantry, had reached their objective. Finding that the castle-walls at this place were 30 feet high and impossible to scale, the Gate was blown up with gun-cotton. The Chinese still in Kinchow kept up a constant fire from the loop-holes in the walls, but paying no heed to this the Engineers succeeded in demolishing both the first and second gates by 10.30 a. m. At this moment the Second Infantry Regiment came up at double-quick and with a ringing cheer dashed through the gates and into the Castle. The North Gate, known as the Ying-an-mên, was the most important of all and extremely

dangerous to approach, for the ground was literally strewn with mines. None of these, however, were exploded. The Third Regiment of Infantry now followed hard after the demoralized Chinese, passing through the north-west and western part of the fort, while one Battalion of the Eleventh Regiment stormed and flung open the East Gate, through which the soldiers crowded into the castle on that side.

While the Fifteenth Regiment was marching toward the elevated ground south-east of the Castle, the Main Body of the Chinese forces fled along the Port Arthur road and in the direction of that stronghold. Lieut.-General Yamaji therefore ordered Major-General Nishi to pursue the fleeing Chinese, taking the Third Regiment and two Companies of Artillery with him. On reaching the Port Arthur road the enemy turned and offered resistance, but to no effect. Large numbers were killed or wounded, and many taken prisoner. At 2 p. m. the pursuing Column arrived at Nanhouling, where they halted and took a brief though much-needed rest.

All the remaining troops belonging to the Division assembled south of the captured castle during the hours from noon to 2 p. m., for it was expected that the Chinese would make an attack in their turn. Indeed the Chinese forts at Shuichia-shan and Talién did shell the place where the Japanese had met, but nothing else was done and only very small damage inflicted. Major-General Nogi, with the First Infantry Regiment and some Cavalry and Engineers, was instructed to attack the forts on Hoshang-shan at dawn of the following day. Another branch, consisting of the Fifteenth Regiment and a small body of Cavalry and Engineers, was ordered to storm the Shuichia-shan forts at the same time. At 4 p. m. other smaller bodies were sent to occupy the villages near the castle.

The space within and just without the castle-walls was filled with dead or wounded Chinese. Many prisoners had also been taken.

In this way the famous castle-town of Kinchow was taken, and the one great hope of the defenders of Port Arthur definitely lost. The Chinese flags—"the very dragons painted on which seemed to weep," to quote a Japanese account—were hauled down, and

in their stead the unconquered Sun-flag flung to the breeze. The Division Commander together with the two Brigade Generals, Nogi and Nishi, entered the Castle and made merry. Shortly afterwards Field Marshal Ōyama came up with his troops and likewise encamped in the fallen burgh.

On the next day, November 7th, Talien Bay was taken by the Japanese fleet and a detachment of Major-General Nogi's Brigade. The enemy fled towards Port Arthur.

---

## II.— THE HERO OF KINCHOW.

AT the time of the attack on Kinchow, made in so gallant a style by the First Division, the enemy were stationed at various points in the chain of hills connecting Mt. Tahoshang north of the castle, with Mts. Chongchia and Hotou (Potau). Forts were built here and there on the left side of the highroad and on the slopes of Chongchia-shan, between which and the above-mentioned hills the

road winds its devious course. The Chinese, who had made these forts the centre of their defences, expected beyond doubt to annihilate any Japanese Regiment attempting to pass along the road. The country round about being undulating, with frequent hills and corresponding depressions, the Chinese had taken every advantage of these geographical characteristics and had chosen the positions for their forts with skill and excellent judgment. Everything was visible to them, or



LIEUTENANT AWANO.

rather to some one or another of their forts, within a radius of 6000 metres.

Shortly before the Division began the attack, Lieutenant Awano Yōjirō, commanding the Second Sub-company, First Company, First Battalion of the Fifteenth Regiment, was sent out to reconnoitre in the vicinity of the castle. On the day before the battle (November 5th) he set out from Liuheatien with a maniple of 22 men. The approach to the enemy's lines was most difficult as well as perilous. Taking every advantage possible and always endeavouring to keep both out of sight and out of range, the Lieutenant and his men had none the less many hair-breadth escapes from the bullets of the enemy's pickets and sharpshooters. During the night—for the scouting-party was out for a number of hours—the men on one occasion had to passing over a stony slope, where every step dislodged some pebbles, making a loud, rattling sound. Yet under cover of the darkness the scouts advanced to the very foot of the walls of several forts. Returning at midnight in safety with his command, Lieutenant Awano at once made an interesting and valuable report.

At dawn of the next day the First Company started out ahead of the Division as Advance Guard. Lieutenant Awano with the Sub-company commanded by him marched in front as guide. It was now 4 a. m., and the first streaks of greyish light just visible in the eastern sky. Under the circumstances the trail would have been lost had it not been for the bits of white paper the Lieutenant had affixed to the trees along the chosen route. Without hesitating for an instant, the young officer conducted the Company to the hill he and his men had ascended a few hours before. The First Company now made preparations for actively engaging the enemy, while the Sub-company under Lieutenant Awano continued to forge ahead. Ordering his men to march in Indian file, the Lieutenant cautiously avoided the enemy's front and worked gradually around to their right flank. On reaching the hills among which the Chinese had built their forts, the daring little band came across the enemy's pickets, whom they endeavoured to take prisoners. As it was still dark however, the pickets had been warned by the sound of the approaching footsteps and fled in safety. Recognising that he was now at close quarters with the enemy, the Lieutenant ordered his men to fix



bayonets, and then, with admirable speed, they marched through the enemy's line and around to their right. By this time the remainder of the Company had come up, and when this fact was ascertained the Lieutenant dashed on with his devoted followers into the nearest forts, utterly confounding the Chinese with the fierceness and impetuosity of his charge. Lieutenant Awano was the first to get in the forts, where, sword in hand, he laid about him with reckless bravery. So sudden and unforeseen had the charge been that the 350 Chinese soldiers within the forts seemed quite bewildered, their few aimless volleys doing little or no harm at all. The Lieutenant now cried out to cease firing and use the bayonet only. This order the men obeyed promptly, and with unexampled fury charged again and again into the terror-stricken ranks of the enemy. Other bodies of the First Division coming up, the Chinese at once relinquished all idea of defending their position and fled, leaving cannon, small arms, ammunition and their military standards behind them. One of the Chinese forts, in particular, was carried at the bayonet's point in less than one minute!

Roused by the firing, fresh bodies of the enemy now came on towards the highroad from the village in front and the forts on Chongchia-shan. Grouped on both sides of the road, they began a furious fire on the forts just taken by the Japanese. By this time it was morning: a clear, bright day; so, seeing the Japanese steadily advancing, the 250 Chinese disputing the road began to fall back. The First Company was then commanded to take the Chongchia-shan forts, in which some Chinese were still remaining by the guns. In order to do this, the Japanese had to descend the hill on which were the captured forts, cross the highroad, and then clamber up some very precipitous rocks and cliffs, fully one hundred metres high. Trusting to the natural advantages of their location, the Chinese troops seemed to pluck up a little heart, for the firing from the forts on the rocks above grew more continuous and steadier.

Two Sub-companies of the First Company then set out on their perilous mission, and after reaching the road began climbing up the cliffs from a point directly beneath the forts. Lieutenant Awano and his men ascended the rocks a little to the left, in

order to reach the rear of their objective; and regardless of the rain of bullets in their direction they toiled boldly upwards, reaching finally a place some 3000 metres distant from the forts in question. The Japanese advance was of necessity slow, as it was a steady climb the whole time. Just then another Sub-company, under Lieutenant Magaki Tomokichi, of the Second Company, came up to the rear of the Awano party. The latter officer called out to Lieutenant Magaki if he were willing to make a combined charge on the forts; and, on receiving a prompt reply in the affirmative, Lieutenant Awano called on his men to charge, himself leading with bared sword. In a few minutes they were within the forts, sabreing the gunners where they stood and utterly defeating any hope of resistance. The enemy, at least 300 strong, or more than twice the number of their attackers, were thrown into complete confusion, scattered and fled for dear life among the hills, leaving their weapons and standards behind them. Lieutenant Magaki's Sub-company did not enter the forts with the rest, but gave chase to the fugitive Chinese. The most important forts in the central portion of the enemy's line of defence having thus been taken, the rest of the work was comparatively easy, Kinchow on the same day falling into the hands of the victorious Japanese. And it is not too much to say that success of the attack and the taking of that great castle-town were mainly attributable to courage, skill, and tireless activity of Lieutenant Awano Yojirō.

---

## II.—SERGEANT KOBAYASHI'S RUSE.

DURING the march of the troops on Kinchow, Major Saitō Tokumei with his Battalion—the First of the Fifteenth Regiment—went on ahead as the Advance Column. On reaching Liuheatien, a place about 2 miles north-east of Chongchia-shan, Sub-Lieutenant Tsukui, with his Sub-company, was sent out to look for a mounted non-commissioned officer who was missing, and also to ascertain the position and strength of the enemy and their defences. When the Lieutenant and his men got as far as a little

plateau north of Shaososai and to the east of Tahoshang-shan, suddenly one hundred or more Chinese foot-soldiers made their appearance, and at once advanced to attack the Japanese. The command of the Sub-company was then entrusted to Sergeant Akaiwa, who succeeded in making a strong counter-attack and in keeping the Chinese from advancing any farther in that direction. In the meantime Sub-Lieutenant Tsukui, Sergeant Kobayashi Kenkichi and 9 other men dashed through the hail of bullets, climbed the overhanging cliffs, and finally reached the summit of Tahoshang-shan, whence they enjoyed a splendid view of the walled town and its environment. When the party started to descend, several white and red banners were descried on a high place some 400 metres to the right. About 50 Chinese unexpectedly came forth and immediately began firing at the Japanese, with the utmost fury. At the same time the Sub-company lower down moved off, leaving the little party above in considerable perplexity. Should they retrace their steps? Should they descend the mountain, exposing themselves to the Chinese fire, or should they stay where they were? While they were still in doubt as to what course should be pursued, Sergeant Kobayashi proposed that he and one soldier, Fukayo Kinsaku, should stay and try a ruse, while the others retired. The Lieutenant was, he added, of more importance than himself and his comrade, for the result of the reconnaissance had yet to be made known to the Battalion Commander, and this duty was Sub-Lieutenant Tsukui's own. The officer agreed to try the plan and began to move off as secretly as possible with the rest of the men, while the Sergeant endeavored to conceal the fact of their departure from the observant Chinese. Sergeant Kobayashi began pacing slowly to and fro, in full view of the enemy, yet taking advantage of the shrubs and bushes to screen himself as much as possible. This he did in order to make the Chinese believe that the Japanese had there established an outpost and had no thought of retreating. Finally the enemy came within 100 metres of where he stood, and just then the Sergeant saw that the Sub-Lieutenant and the other soldiers had succeeded in regaining the Company. His work thus done, the Sergeant called to his comrade, and both disappeared in a little gulley just as the Chinese came up. Crouching among

the bushes and winding through the stunted trees on the hill side, they shortly afterwards had the satisfaction of rejoining their comrades in safety. And so the Sergeant's clever ruse had saved them all.

---

### III.—THE BREAKING OF THE NORTH GATE,

NOTEWORTHY were the deeds done by the Engineers on the day of the capture of Kinchow. As the troops closed about the doomed castle, the First Company of the First Battalion of Engineers got within 2000 metres of the north of the town, in advance of the Artillery. Here the command was received to blow up the North Gate at all hazards. The Engineers were delighted with the undertaking and advanced at double-quick, while the bullets of both the attacking and defending forces flew whizzing above their heads or fell close beside them. Captain Nakajima Hisanori ordered Sub-Lieutenant Yanome Magoichi to blow up the Gate, under cover of a few men with Sub-Lieutenant Takano Yoshimatsu, there being no Infantry thereabouts to protect the brave men. The Captain gave his orders to his two aides in person, who, after a rough preliminary survey, started for the Gate with their men.

On reaching a village directly in front of the Gate (November 6th, 10 a. m.), a Battalion from the 2nd Regiment of Infantry came up with the intention of storming the Gate.

The Engineers then got out the explosive material, which they carried in a small strong-box, and set out to make ready the mine in a small native house just beyond the Gate. This house had, however, been strongly barred and shut up; so Sergeant Yoshida Minoru



YANOME MAGOICHI,  
LIEUTENANT OF ENGINEERS.

broke in the door with an axe and, entering with a number of Engineers, at once proceeded to sever some twenty wires there discovered connecting with as many sunken mines in the approach to the portals. In the mean time the Infantry again and again attempted to storm and scale the walls, but only to find them impregnable and inaccessible ; for they had been built of brick, eight metres thick, and quite perpendicularly, scaling therefore being out of the question. Moreover the defenders on the ramparts not only kept up a galling fire, but also threw large stones and tiles on the heads of those who approached the base of the walls. The Infantry retired, leaving the Gate to the Engineers.

Preparations being completed, Sub-Lieutenant Yanome, followed by Utagawa Toyokichi, a private of the third-class, carrying the box of explosives ; Satō Keizaburō, a Sergeant of the second-class ; Yoshida, ditto ; and first-class private Onoguchi Tokuji, ran towards the Gate. The folding doors or leaves had, however, been covered with iron plates and had a most massive and ponderous look. Lieutenant Yanome therefore put no less than 11 kilogrammes of gun-cotton at the base of the Gate, and, lighting the fuse, retired to a distance. In a few seconds there



UTAGAWA TOYOKICHI.

was a fierce explosion and the Gate completely destroyed, the lower part being thrown several metres away by the force of the powder. Rejoicing at their success the rest of the Sub-company rushed through the Gate over the smoking débris, but were greatly surprised and disappointed on finding a second inner barrier with another strongly barred door. Lieutenant Nishikawa Isamu soon came running up with other 10 kilogrammes of gun-cotton. This was promptly exploded just below the door, and the last barrier thus blown away. As for the enemy, the majority had hastily left the ramparts after the first explosion ; yet some still held their ground stubbornly and fired on the Engineers in the recess of the second gate. Onoguchi was thereby wounded in the shoulder, as was also Sergeant

Satō. This did not by any means cause the Engineers to waver. They rushed through the second portal and at once began looking for hidden mines. Finding none they clambered up the walls, chased the retreating Chinese, and thus paved the way for the Division to enter Kinchow.

---

#### IV.—THE FIRST ON THE WALLS.

DURING the attack on Kinchow-ching, the Second Regiment made a fierce assault on the North Gate of the castle. The gate itself was firmly closed and strongly barred, while the adjoining walls were more than 20 feet high and apparently quite impossible to scale. Under these massive walls the troops surged in angry excitement, unable to get at the sheltered foe. Sub-Lieutenant Yoshida with his command was, at the time, a little to the west of the great gate. Searching about he found some broken places among the bricks composing the north-west corner of the castle. These he used after the fashion of a ladder, and, mounting slowly, succeeded in scaling the walls. With his drawn sword he drove back the enemy on guard there, and even succeeded in capturing a gun. Seizing a flag that was hoisted near by, he sprang on the parapet and shouted *Tenno Heika Banzai*, "Hurrah for His Imperial Majesty!" Sergeant Noguchi and three privates, Yoshida, Hanazawa and Yamada, then reached the top of the wall. Seeing this welcome reinforcement and that other troopers were now clambering up the ladder of bricks, the Sub-Lieutenant ran eastward on the wall, the men following close after. At this moment a tremendous discharge was heard at the North Gate. This was caused by the explosion of the mine placed at the Gate by Lieutenant of Engineers Yanome, Infantry Lieutenant Nishikawa, and several others. The massive portal was completely shattered by the explosion, and the impatient soldiers there gathered rushed through the gate into the town, where they were immediately joined by Sub-Lieutenant Yoshida and his devoted men. The fall of the castle followed soon, and Kinchow was taken.

---

## V.—THE EXPERIENCES OF A JAPANESE SPY.

IN the First Division, commanded by Lieut.-General Yamaji, there were three Japanese interpreters, all thoroughly conversant with the Chinese idiom. Kōno Ken-ichi, one of these three, landed, at 11 a. m. of October 24th, on the eastern estuary of the Hwayang River, where he bought a Chinese outfit from the natives. He had been ordered to proceed to Pulantien from Petsewo, in order to ascertain the movements and number of the enemy at Foochow as accurately as might be. On parting with the Head of the Staff, Major-General Ōdera, he shook hands and the two patriots looked wistfully at each other, for both thought the meeting their last. With a few words of farewell Kōno left the camp, immediately changed his clothing and arranged his queue: for his head had been shaved *à la Chinoise* in order to prevent detection. At 5 p. m. on the above-mentioned day he started out on his perilous journey: and he knew full well that detection meant certain death, and death in all the torments known to the refined cruelty of the Chinese. On his way into the enemy's country he was frequently accosted by Japanese camp-coolies or brought sternly to a halt by Japanese pickets. At last, however, he got safely beyond the Japanese lines. After walking for some two miles the sun set, and a very dark night ensued. A little farther on he came to a village where a small number of Japanese soldiers had been quartered, and from these he inquired the road to Petsewo. After a brief rest he walked on for four miles, and finally sought temporary shelter in a little glen among the hills.

Early on foot the next morning, he came to the Pihliu River after a walk of five miles. Following the river's course upon fording it, he reached, two miles farther on, a little village. Here he entered a house where some six or seven peasants were sitting, and entered into conversation with them. From his peculiar accent the farmers concluded that he must be a Korean, and proffered him some friendly advice. "The soldiers of the Middle Kingdom," said they, "are coming hither from Petsewo. If you should meet with them, danger might befall. You had

better give up all idea of going westward and choose the northern road, on which you will encounter no peril." These good-natured and wholly unsuspecting peasants then gave him some food, and pointed out the road he was to take. He did, in fact, walk on for a while to the north-west, intending to get to Petsewo. But after he had covered about eight miles he came to another village, where a painful experience awaited him. On being questioned as to his name and destination, Kōno declared that he was called Wuh Wên-chang, a native of Panchwang, in Foochow-fu, Province of Fuhkien, and that he had been engaged in business at the port of Takushan since June of that year; but hearing that the Japanese were coming he had made up his mind to sail from Petsewo to his home near Chefoo, whence he hoped to reach Shanghai and ultimately Fuhkien. All this was said with a perfect assumption of indifference to his surroundings and with extraordinary fluency. Yet while some of his hearers seemed inclined to believe his statements, others did not, and one man in particular declared that he believed him to be a Korean spy, as Kōno's language had a decidedly Korean twang. His pack was then broken open and examined, and a compass was found, which greatly puzzled the inquisitors. But Kōno explained that he had dealt in foreign goods while in Takushan, and that it was nothing unusual for him to carry knives, magnets, etc., about with him for sale. He was then asked whether he had a map, and declared that he had not. This somewhat allayed their suspicions and he was permitted to go on his way; but he had hardly walked half a mile before he was again seized by some thirty villagers, who had followed him. He was this time examined from head to foot and ordered to give up at once any map that he might have concealed about his person. Kōno strenuously protested that he possessed nothing of the kind. Still suspicious, the villagers compelled him to walk back to the village, where his clothes were stripped off and everything subjected to a most searching examination. It was quite true that he had no map, but in the lining of one of his socks he had a sheet torn out of a Chinese novel, on which he had written the names of all the important places between Foochow and Pulantien. This, of course, would have seriously if not fatally compromised him, if discovered. So,



with great presence of mind, Kōno dipped his feet into a little rivulet on the way back, as if to refresh them, and thus managed to rub the tell-tale paper into a pulp, of course obliterating the characters written thereon. When his socks were later on examined his ruse proved successful, as nothing of an incriminating nature was found. He was thus acquitted on this score. Among the villagers there was one who understood the idiom of Peking, and this man assured the rest that the suspect was not a Korean. Yet the rude villagers would not consent to liberating him, and at last some six or seven of them tied him with a rope to a bamboo pole. Three men were then chosen to convey him to the Chinese garrison at Petsewo. This seemed fatal, for Kōno hardly dared hope to come off scot-free if brought to the Chinese camp as a suspect. It was now half-past six in the afternoon, and the bold spy never believed he would live to see the light of another day. But his wits did not fail him at this crisis. Making a profound obeisance before his three guards, he said: "I am quite content that you should take me to Petsewo. I shall, by Heaven, make no attempt to escape. But as I am indeed an innocent man I pray you to loosen the rope that is twisted about my hands." His conductors granted this request. It was now getting very dark, and a man's face should no longer be distinguished at a distance of more than 6 or 7 metres. Two of the guards followed a little in the rear, while the third held the rope by which Kōno's hands were still bound. Turning to this man, the captive said: "I am in very truth a man of Foochow in Fukkien Province, and my parents are still living there in the old homestead. Though innocent I am being treated as a criminal, and if once taken to the Chinese camp shall be starved to death. Release me, I pray you, guiltless man that I am, and I shall ever remember your kindness." He knelt in the road as he spoke and made as if he wept, saying that he offered ten silver mace for his liberty. Taking this sum from his waist-band he held it out to his captors, who refused, though with evident regret, to accept the money. Suddenly he gave a jump aside and began to run! With the rope still tied to his hands and waist he ran like a deer, up hill and down, crossing brooks and rivulets without ever a pause. The Polar Star was his only guide, and keeping his eyes fixed on that

he pursued a westerly course.

It was a moonless night and objects a few feet off quite invisible. After running for, as he supposed, some 2000 metres, he looked back and saw 50 or 60 lanterns hurrying through the darkness in the direction he had taken. The whole village had evidently been aroused and was in pursuit. He could hear the distant baying of dogs, roused by the cries of the villagers, and knew that if recaught his death would be instant. It was now or never! Avoiding all houses where light could be seen, he struck into a recently harvested millet-field, the rough, stiff stubble of which tore off his shoes and socks, cutting his feet. After extraordinary exertions he reached a little hill, whence he looked back once more and was overjoyed to see that the lanterns of his pursuers were scarcely visible. He had outrun pursuit. After resting for a while, he rubbed his bonds against some sharp stones and was speedily a free man again. He continued his ascent, and at height of 300 metres found that he was in a low wood. Here, worn-out and panting, he threw himself on a heap of leaves and was almost immediately asleep. When he awoke the east was already bright. All around him were sheer rocks, precipices and dangerous cliffs—a most dangerous spot to ascend even in broad daylight, and Kōno shuddered to think of his narrow escape from a violent death. Climbing up through the bushes and thick undergrowth, he entered a lonely little valley. He had no food, but there was water from a clear spring. Near the spring was a narrow path, which he followed. This led him over the ridge of the mountain, where he caught sight of some houses about 100 metres off. No one came out to accost him, and he passed cautiously on, over hill and dale, suffering from hunger and fatigue. His feet were still very painful and hunger had weakened him greatly, yet he pressed on for about four miles, till he came to another brook. The surface being covered with duckweed, he made shift to use his coat as a dipper and filter. The drink refreshed him and gave him fresh vigour. For eight miles he kept up his wearisome march, his fatigue being so great that he walked on mechanically, or like a man in a dream. After what seemed to him an age, he reached finally a few farm-houses. Here he halted and begged for a little food. Two

women were in the house which he approached, and these, sympathising with his worn and haggard look and evident extreme exhaustion, gave him some coarse food. This seemed to supply him with renewed stimulus, for after a short halt and thanking the good Samaritans, he resumed his march and went on to Panlashang and through Shachiatien, where he met with a bullock-cart. The driver, nothing loath to have a companion, asked him to get into the cart, which he very willingly did. In the course of the three-miles' drive, the carter told him of an inn not far off, where he might put up for the night. But being averse to the certain interrogation to which he would be subjected in case of entering the inn, he concluded to spend the night under a tree, as he had done the previous evening. It was now 6.30 p. m. As he had been deprived of his pack, hat and sundry articles of clothing, he had nothing to protect him from the autumn chill. Yet so great was his fatigue that he fell asleep at once. Afraid of being discovered by the inhabitants, Kōno arose the following day before dawn. Keeping close to the mountains and following lonely or at best unfrequented paths, he came after midday to a hut on the mountain-side, where he begged for a little food and made inquiries about the roads. All day long he continued his march, suffering greatly from hunger and thirst. After travelling for some twenty miles he reached Muchiatien, and, passing on without stopping took refuge, after the sun was gone down, among some boulders on the hillside. The distance between this place and Foochow was about 15 miles.

On October 28th, Kōno resumed his journey at dawn. After covering two miles a heavy thunderstorm came up, forcing him to seek shelter under the eaves of a hut. Another two miles' travel brought him to the upper part of the Foochow River. As a good many people were to be seen on the banks, he followed the course of the stream at a little distance, and and came, one mile farther on, to a bridge, which he crossed. Striking now into the highroad, he followed the telegraph-wire for two miles again, during which time he was once more overtaken by a heavy shower and wet to the skin. Just then he saw, though still at a considerable distance, the walls of the fortified town Foochow: a sight which gladdened his heart and made him

wellnigh forget his fatigue. A strong north-east wind had now begun to blow, accompanied with showers of icy rain and hail. After walking for three miles more he reached Siaomiao, one of the suburbs of Foochow, just outside the East Gate. For a time he rested here, taking shelter under some trees from the still falling hail. In a little while he mustered up enough strength to enter the city from the East Gate. It was just ten o'clock in the forenoon as he walked into the town. No guards were posted at the gate and no one asked him any questions. He entered a small restaurant and called for a bowl of warm vermicelli, which was delicious to the half-famished man; for, with the exception of an occasional bowl of rice, he had eaten nothing since leaving the Hwayang River. Greatly refreshed he at once began his investigations about the town, and found that there was only a very small garrison present: one solitary horseman and two or three Companies of Infantry. There were no cannon to be seen on the walls of the town. He learned, however, that some 500 Bannermen had been stationed there until a few days before, and that they had left to join the troops at Kinchow. At 5 p. m., his investigations being completed, he left Foochow for Kinchow. He lost his bearings while seeking for the Nyangnyankon highroad, and so shaped his course south-east, reaching a village named Hwangchih-tachai just at sunset. He asked here at several houses for a night's lodging, but was refused. The ground was sodden with the rain and hail, although the storm had now blown over, and it was impossible to sleep out in the open. So he looked around for a Taoist shrine, and, finding one, made shift to pass the night in the porch. At about midnight some one came with a lantern, aroused him and said: "There is a high wind blowing to-night. You'll get sick if you sleep out here. My house is but small and poor, yet there is room for you to rest in. Come to my place and sleep in peace." These friendly words were inexpressibly comforting to the poor, half-frozen scout. He joyfully followed his host, who took him to a little house in which there was a bright fire burning on the hearth to cheer the expected guest. For a while they chatted together and Kōno learned that the good man was the village school-master, with some local reputation for his erudition. The old pædagogue got out some

of his books and showed them to his guest, asking if he were able to read them; and when Kōno replied that he was thoroughly conversant with them all, the old man was greatly pleased. The scout then asked whether some 400 or 500 Foochow soldiers had quite recently passed through on their way to Kinchow, but was told that they had not.\* The host added, however, that the garrison of Kaiping was going to Kinchow. Soothed by the warm fire, the scout soon fell into a dreamless sleep. On October 29th he arose in the early morning, and was hospitably entertained by his kind host. When about to start, the school-master approached and tried to make him take a few silver coins. Touched by the act, Kōno heartily thanked the benevolent man, but of course refused the well-meant gift.

After walking for two miles, Kōno reached Sanshih-lipu, where he again struck the telegraph wire. Followed the course indicated by the wires he went southwards, through Paishui-ching, to Puchia-tun. Towards noon he arrived at Lichiatien. The road led thence to Lankuchong, over some low-lying hills. Up to Wuhchiatien the road was very steep and hard, but from Uchia-tien onwards comparatively level and easy. Three more miles brought him to Chêngchiatien. At Sankwan-miao the road united with that leading from Nyangnyankon to Pulantien. From this place it was easy to reach the coast of the Gulf of Pechili. Following this he arrived at sunset at Ta-enshang, and walking on for some 200 metres came to a lonely hollow or ravine in the hills, where he determined to pass the night. Only a few hundred metres farther on was Pulantien. The night was bitterly cold and a heavy frost soon covered the ground.

Early in the morning of October 30th, the brave scout left his uncomfortable and chilly retreat and walked across a rivulet on towards Pulantien. This was a hamlet of not more than 20 houses, and about 2 miles from the coast. It is midway between Foochow, Kinchow and Kaiping, and an easy road goes thence on to Petsewo. Important as the post was, there was no Chinese soldier to be seen in the vicinity, nor were there any defences. From this place he went on, unchallenged, to Kinchow. Two miles farther on, at Lichiatien, he fell in with a couple of Chinese troopers. For such an emergency he was quite prepared, and was

not at all flustered when, on trying to pass by them unconcernedly, the soldiers called to him to stop. They began by asking who he was, whence he had come and where he was going? And then they wanted to know what his profession was, his age, and a number of other particulars. Kōno told them, with appearance of utter frankness, that he was a pipe-maker named Li Paolin, a native of Panchwang, near Foochow, Province of Fuhkien; that he had an elder brother trading within the walls of Kinchow, near the South Gate; that he had intended joining his brother in a business venture, but, having heard of what was going, trade moreover being very dull, he intended to get his brother to leave Kinchow and return to Fuhkien. "I am," he added, "26 years old and came to Foochow here in June of this year. But as my stay has not been long I am not adept in the language current here. You may perhaps have noticed that I speak like a Southerner. It's very apt to make people suspicious." With these specious words he willingly allowed himself to be searched. Nothing of an incriminating nature being found on him, the troopers concluded they had bagged the wrong bird, and let him go on. This was the most critical of all his adventures, for a tone or gesture could so easily have betrayed him to his keen-eyed captors. It was his nonchalant bearing that saved him. The cavalry men were, it appeared, some of the Viceroy Chung-tang's own body-guard, Li Hung-chang's own troops, and hence disposed to be both suspicious and overbearing.

Seeing the waters of the Gulf on his right, he went southwards and kept about three miles from the coast-line. Pretty soon a cavalry officer accosted him, but was satisfied on learning his feigned name and address. Passing by Chingchiapu and Changlinpu, he arrived at Tanho-i. Thence he went on to Wushih-lipu and Shishih-lipu, both of which are in direct connection with the Petsewo road. It was true that he had no orders to go on to Kinchow; but thinking that his two fellow-scouts might have lost their lives as he very nearly had his own, he deemed it his duty to press on. "It is true," thought he, "that all my toil hitherto may go for nothing if I lose my life at Kinchow. Yet man's fate rests with Heaven, and with Divine aid I may still accomplish this self-imposed task." Having thus definitely determined his course

of action, Kōno left the road he had been following, and marched towards Kinchow direct. Shortly afterwards he reached Shang-holu, a village eight miles distant from where he had started. Here he met thirty carts travelling slowly northwards along the Foochow road. The carts were loaded with fodder for the Chinese cavalry, and were guarded by mandarins. Farther on he reached Sanshih-lipu, where he came across a troop of 20 Chinese cavalrymen. On ascending the next hill, he saw another train of carts, this time numbering more than forty. After passing through a cluster of villages of less importance, he finally crossed the slope of Kiulichwang, and got the first glimpse of his objective. The castle-town of Kinchow was all astir with armed life and presented a very striking appearance, flags and banners of all sorts being displayed above the walls. There being an evidently large garrison in the town, the scout thought it would be unwise to enter without observing further precautions, and as the day was now far spent, he concluded to pass the night on the slope. The weather was very windy and cold again, while peals of thunder reverberated ever and anon in the midnight sky. The storm broke later on into an icy rain, but this did not, fortunately for the scout, continue long. Until late at night the noise of the soldiers and horses in the town kept him from sleeping.

At dawn the next day—October 31st—he reached the North Gate, after two miles of circuitous and very cautious walking. Seeing numbers of peasants coming in with vegetables and fish for the troops, he mingled with the crowd and passed through the Gate unquestioned. The fortifications, he soon found, were very different from those he had seen at Foochow. The castle was filled with troops and the streets lined with their cattle and baggage. Coming to a shrine dedicated to Hwangti, he quietly rested there a while. The next thing was to find a money-changer. There was no difficulty about this, and he speedily exchanged some of his silver coins for copper cash. He then entered a restaurant and made good meal on beef and macaroni. Nearly every guest present was a soldier, and all were holding high carouse. Some were drinking wine, others eating to surfeit, and the talk was merry and incessant. Here he remained for two full hours, eating slowly, and carefully listening to what the

troopers were saying. Some held that the Japanese had left Petsewo and gone eastward; others again declared that the enemy were heading for Kinchow. To all that was said, the scout lent an attentive ear. After paying his modest bill, the next thing was to examine into the condition and number of the troops massed outside the South Gate. Four cannon, he noticed, were posted above the East Gate; while as for the garrison, it consisted of picked troops of the best men.\* The soldiers were quartered in large houses; either such as belonged to the wealthiest local merchants or were otherwise used by the Government. The forces numbered between six and seven thousand. At about 2 p. m. he saw some notable personage drive in a carriage out of the East Gate. Twenty troopers acted as an escort. The people bowed as he passed and addressed him as *Ta-jên*, "Your Lordship." After buying a few indispensable articles of clothing and some honey-cakes, Kōno left the town, at 5 p. m., by the North Gate. It was his intention to go to Petsewo by the eastern road, so he walked first to Siemên-tse at the foot of Mt. Tahoshang. Seeing a troop of Cavalry advancing, he concealed himself until all had gone by. A little farther on he met with a small body of foot-soldiers, and noted, at the same time, that mines had been laid in various place along the road. The sun was now setting, so he hastened through Liuhiatien and ensconced himself in a ravine, where he slept.

The eastward march was continued shortly after dawn of the following morning. At one time he missed the way and got by mistake to Weichow, where he asked a villager to direct him to the Petsewo road. At a little distance from Hwangchia-tun, the next village he came to, he made a halt for rest. Not having as yet met with any signs of the Japanese advance, the scout was beginning to get very anxious. He was particularly desirous to learn the result of the engagement at Petsewo, and the excitement as well as the fatigue kept him awake for a long time.

On November 2nd, shortly after sunrise, he took a road leading north-east. After walking for about four miles he met with a native who asked him what he was about and where

---

\*The original enumerates the various regiments. We omit the names.



he was going. "I have a younger brother at Petsewo," replied the wily scout, "and having heard that the Japanese have recently occupied this town, I am in great anxiety about my brother. I must find out what has become of him, and so I have come on from Kinchow without a halt." Hearing this, and of course crediting the story, the native strongly urged him not to keep to the highroad, where he would infallibly come in contact with the Japanese, but to take a short cut over the hills. Crossing a brook and passing over a hill, he met with another villager, who told him that the Japanese were in great force at Petsewo. Secretly delighted with this bit of information, the scout redoubled his pace, forgetting in a moment all his fatigue and hunger. Just as he was about to enter the next village—Wanchia-tun—he saw a number of old women, children and others evidently fleeing from an approaching enemy. For of course they believed that the destruction of their lives as well as property was impending; although the progress of the Japanese throughout the Liaotung Peninsula was marked by most kindly treatment of the natives. Kōno then asked one of the frightened people if the Japanese were at hand, but before he could get an answer he saw a troop of Cavalry crossing the brow of an opposite hill. At first he thought these must be defeated Chinese soldiers, but he was reassured, on drawing nearer, by the sight of the yellow embroidery on their coats. It was a troop of Japanese horsemen, and the poor scout almost wept for joy on recognizing them.

From the time he had left the Hwayang River, he had not known what it was to be free from anxious care. He had been half-starved; had walked until his legs almost refused their office; and had constantly been in peril of his life. The first man with whom he met was Sub-Lieutenant Ozaki, of the First Section of the Second Company, and to him he immediately tried to tell about the condition of affairs in and about Kinchow. But Kōno's joy was so extreme that he could not find words to express himself. He then came up with Major Saitō Takumei, to whom he related all he knew of the enemy's condition. It was his great desire to have a personal interview with Division Commander Yamaji, but the later being with his Staff at Petsewo,

there were still eight miles to traverse before a meeting was possible. The sun now sinking behind the western hills, the tired and excited man passed the night where he was, enjoying a well-earned and refreshing repose. Early the next morning he once again took the road, intending to make Petsewo as quickly as possible. He was surprised to note the deserted nature of the villages through which he passed, the inhabitants having evidently fled on the approach of the invading forces. After covering about half the distance, Kōno clambered up a hill in order to get, if he could, a glimpse of the Army on its southern march. On the brow of the hill he found a forlorn group of six or seven natives huddled together and evidently in the lowest of spirits. "The Japanese Army," they began to inform him, "has started for Kinchow." On this Kōno volunteered the information that the Chinese garrison at Kinchow was 10,000 men strong; there were, he continued, chatting volubly, some five or six thousand more "braves" at Port Arthur, with six men-of-war in the harbour, five of the war-ships having undergone repairs. Of course most of these frank statements were made up on the moment, and by no means encouraged his listeners. "And even if there are 10,000 soldiers at Kinchow," they interpolated sadly, "how can they hope to stand against so powerful an Army as that one marching over there?" With a profound sigh the little group separated, Kōno going on to an adjacent village, where he joined the passing troops. While marching with the men, who were delighted with his outfit, he met Interpreter Sano. On the brow of another hill, a little later on, he came up with Brigade Commander Nishi and Interpreter Inouye, and from the latter he borrowed an overcoat concealing his costume. On reaching Shahō he learned that the Staff-Quarters were at Wanchia-tun, for which place he set out at once. On the road thither he met with Staff-Officers Uchiyama and Oka, who conducted him to Lieut.-General Yamaji, whom he now saw for the first time. Spreading out his maps Kōno then went into details and made a most interesting and highly valuable report. It was quite five o'clock before the long story was told.

---

## CHAPTER VII.

### PORT ARTHUR, THE GIBRALTAR OF CHINA.

---

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION OF THE ATTACK.

PORT ARTHUR, or *Ryojun-kō* as it is called in Japanese, is situated at the south-western extremity of the peninsula of Kin-chow, Province of Chekiang. The deep bay on which it lies faces the opposite stronghold of Wei-hai-wei, Province of Shantung, so that the two great fortresses practically command the entrance of the Gulf of Pechili. Port Arthur is thus often spoken of as the "Chinese Gibraltar."

Port Arthur was the greatest of China's naval stations, and made as impregnable as modern science could contrive. The larger part of its defences was planned by Major von Hanneken, a German expert. No less than twenty great forts guard the place, which contains a vast iron-foundry and huge docks upon which many millions have been expended. It is thus not too much to say that the very existence of the Chinese Empire depends upon the keeping of this vitally important fortress.

Up to the 20th of November success had invariably followed the arms of Japan. Her valiant generals and loyal soldiers had won repeated laurels both on land and sea. The Peiyang Squadron, or rather what was left of it, had been driven into Wei-hai-wei and Port Arthur, without hope of escape; the Chinese land-forces had been pushed across the Korean frontier and suffered two signal defeats on Manchurian territory. The time

had now come for the Japanese to conquer the Liaotung Peninsula, and to do this they must take the wellnigh impregnable fortress of Port Arthur. It was pretty generally believed that no European nation could master the place unless aided by at least three-score men-of-war of the most powerful description; and it was consequently urged that Japan, however valiant, would prove unequal to the task.

Since November 8th the Second Army had been staying in the immediate vicinity of the castle-town of Kinchow, partly for the sake of a brief period of necessary rest and partly because of the expected arrival of the Mixed Twelfth Brigade from Hwayuan-kow (*Ka-en-hō*). On the 11th, the Advance Guard under Major General Nishi reached Sanshih-li-pu (*Sanjū-ri-hō*), a little hamlet some 10 miles from Kinchow; and on the 13th the expected Twelfth Brigade under Major-General Hasegawa made its appearance.

For the next three days the whole Second Army was in bivouac about Kinchow, and the general plan and date of the attack determined. The following day the Army was divided into two bodies and the march on Port Arthur was begun. The highway along the northern coast of the Peninsula and a short cut discovered by the scouts, were followed, and thereafter another short cut which had been found out by the reconnoitring officers. After several skirmishes on the route, the Army finally reached the neighbourhood of the Port on the 20th, and it was



MARSHAL COUNT ŌYAMA,  
COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE SECOND ARMY.

decided to begin the attack the next morning. Field Marshal Ōyama, the Commander-in-Chief, summoned his officers to a

small plateau north-west of Lihiatun, and there discussed the general plan of attack and gave his orders. At about 2 p. m. on the same day a body of more than 4000 Chinese coming from several directions approached the Japanese camp with the evident intention of an attack; but Lieut.-General Yamaji, who had been expecting something of the sort, confronted them and drove them back after an artillery fire lasting for two hours. It being just about nightfall, no attempt was made to pursue the fleeing enemy.

The day on which the storming of Port Arthur should commence had come. At 2 o'clock in the morning, just after moon-rise, the Japanese arose, each man putting off his knapsack and carrying only his rifle with its ammunition. The general order of the troops was thus:—the First Division was to attack the Etse-shan forts; the Mixed Brigade was to storm the Erhlung-shan forts;

while the Independent Cavalry was to cover the right flank of the First Division. The Left Column received instructions to draw the enemy off towards the north-east, and the Siege Artillery was told to take up a position to the north of Shuitse-ying. All this was carried out quietly and with despatch, and the Japanese forces pressed quickly on towards their enemy in the still, moon-lit morning.

The four batteries of Field Artillery attached to the First Division were posted on raised ground to the west of Shuitse-ying, where they awaited the dawn. The ground chosen being



LIEUT.-GENERAL VISCOUNT YAMAJI,  
COMMANDER OF THE FIRST  
PROVINCIAL DIVISION.

quite precipitous and stony, one Company of Engineers together with the Second Infantry Regiment were called to assist in getting the guns up the steep slope. Major-General Nishi with the Third Regiment of Infantry, one Battalion of the Second Regiment, half a Squadron of Cavalry, one Battalion of Mountain Artillery and a Company of Engineers, took a westward course and pressed to the north-west of the Etse-shan forts, leaving Lieut.-General Yamaji, Chief of Division, and his forces behind; though these came up soon after.

The night was clear and the moon shone with a placid, silvery radiance. There was not a breath of wind: all was silent. But as the day broke the field and siege guns burst into flame and with their thunderous cannonade roused the enemy from their sleep. The van of the Third Infantry Regiment, under Major-General Nishi, suddenly made its appearance to the north-west of the western fort on Etse-shan. Mountain Artillery, siege guns and field guns, forty cannon in all, began pouring a continuous stream of iron into the three devoted forts on this hill—"Chair Hill," for that is the signification of *Etse-shan*. The Chinese defended themselves stoutly. The forts on Songshū-shan as well as the coast-forts replied to the Japanese attack with reverberating volleys from their large guns. It seemed as if the tremendous uproar would rend the very heavens. The shells from the various forts moreover inflicted much damage on the besiegers, while every shot from the Japanese side told. After what seemed about an hour, the Chinese fire slackened and then ceased altogether. The Third Regiment men, who had continued to advance while the attack was going on, then scaled the hill from the right side and rushed with wild cheers on towards the forts, which they carried



LIEUT.-COLONEL KIMURA YŪKO,  
COMMANDER OF THE THIRD  
REGIMENT.

at the bayonet's point. At 7.30 a. m. the First Battalion reached the left flank of the second fort, and carried the place by storm. Shortly afterwards the Second and Third Battalions followed the road taken by the First. While this was being done the forts on Peiyu-shan and Songshū-shan kept up an incessant fire on the advancing Japanese. But after the fall of the third fort, the first and second were easily taken. The three forts of Etse-shan thus fell into the hands of the Japanese. This was at about 8 o'clock in the morning.

No sooner were the Etse-shan forts captured than the Mixed Brigade commenced to march forward at double-quick, while the Left Column simultaneously began to engage the enemy. Those of the Chinese who had survived the taking of Etse-shan, fled in the direction of Port Arthur.

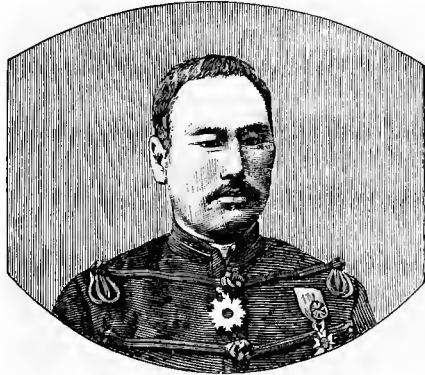
At this time Major-General Nogi, commanding the First Infantry Regiment, who had gone to assist the Third Regiment, was in the neighbourhood of Fongchia-tung. While here he was attacked by some thousand Chinese. A sanguinary conflict, lasting for nearly 30 minutes, ensued, whereupon the Chinese were repulsed and driven back towards Ahkautse. At the same time the Japanese Fleet, which had been steaming about in the offing, sailed towards the west coast, whence they fired at the enemy retreating in that direction and entirely cut off all escape on this side. The northern exit being similarly rendered impossible, the enemy, in the utmost dismay and consternation, finally concealed themselves on Laoti-shan, a hill on the extreme end of the peninsula.

The Japanese Field Artillery now advanced to the attack of the Songshū-shan forts. The Chinese there, already greatly intimidated by the capture of the Etse-shan forts, were preparing to flee for dear life, leaving the forts undefended, when some shells from the field-guns hit the powder-magazine, causing a terrific explosion. The forts were at once silenced. This occurred shortly after 11 a. m.

The assault upon the forts on Erhlung-shan and Kikwang-shan had meanwhile been begun by the Mixed Brigade under Major-General Hasegawa. The Brigade had no Field Artillery while their siege-guns failed to reach the forts: mountain-guns were therefore brought into requisition, which occasioned an

immense amount of labor. The Etse-shan forts having been occupied by the First Division, the soldiers were now led around to the rear of the two hills. The Chinese were thus brought under a cross-fire, being attacked simultaneously in front and the rear, and therefore speedily gave over the contest: the seven great forts and these two hills being silenced at about the same time. It was then a little after midday.

All the inland forts having thus been successfully captured in the forenoon, an advance was made upon the coast forts. Field Marshal Ōyama commanded the First Division to attack the Port itself, while the Mixed Brigade was partly to cover the flank of the First Division and partly to intercept the retreat of the enemy to the north-east. The Left Column now rejoined the Mixed Brigade.



MAJOR-GENERAL HASEGAWA.

Highest among the coast forts stood those on Hwangkin-shan. They contained cannon of very heavy calibre, easily turned in any direction, whose range included not only the inland forts but even those in the place occupied by the Japanese Artillery. There was one gun in particular which had greatly annoyed the besiegers at long range, throwing shells in the direction of the Etse-shan, Erhlung-shan, and Sungshū-shan forts. It was thus absolutely necessary to attack this high fort first of all, and in order to carry out this plan the Second Regiment, which had been left to guard the field-guns, was ordered to advance to the assault. So soon as the order was given the Second Regiment rushed into the town, shooting down all opposition and engaging in a hand-to-hand encounter. Veering around the men then stormed the forts on Hwangkin-shan. These were one and all occupied shortly after 4 p. m. The Mixed Brigade had in the meanwhile carried Laolai-tse by assault.

*As in the  
land forts  
and been  
successes of  
infantry  
on attack  
was made  
on the  
coast forts  
the high fort of  
which were*



At this moment strains of military music were heard coming from the parade and drill ground of one of the Chinese Army Divisions inside the town. This was soon recognised as the music of the band belonging to the Staff of the Second Army. They were playing the grandly impressive national anthem of Japan: *Kimi ga yo*. As the triumphant music echoed over the hard-fought field, the Japanese troops gave vent to their loyal enthusiasm in cheer upon cheer. ]

With regard to the forts west of Hwangkin-shan, the attack was now suspended, the short autumn day being at an end. The First Division went into bivouac just north of the town of Port Arthur, while the Mixed Brigade took up a position on the left.

The next day the Japanese troops advanced to attack the remaining forts, but found them deserted. The Chinese had decamped to the last man. More than twenty of the great forts on the Port Arthur peninsula had thus been conquered in a single day, and the Sun Flag waved proudly over the well-won field.

As evening drew on again the troops were assembled on the vast parade-ground inside of Port Arthur. A general feast was held by those who had fought so bravely, and the hill-sides gave back in sullen chorus the ringing cheers of their new masters, the unconquered Japanese.

---

## II.—THE FEASTING AFTER THE CAPTURE OF PORT ARTHUR.

ON the afternoon of November 23rd a great feast was held in honour of the fall of Port Arthur. The gathering took place in a large open space near one of the docks. Nearly six hundred celebrants were assembled, including officers of general rank and below, and the correspondents of foreign and Japanese newspapers. On the long tables were set out all the delicacies they had been able to muster, including Chinese rice-wine (*samshū*), tinned and potted meats, dried cuttle-fish, pork, biscuits, etc., not much variety, it is true, but all that could be got together at the time. The officers shook hands irrespective of rank, cheered each

favourite to the echo, and mutually congratulated each other; while the military bands in attendance discoursed stirring martial music. At the instigation of Field-Marshal Ōyama three great cheers were given for H. M. the Emperor. In the midst of the rejoicings, a proposition was made to chair the Field-Marshal. No sooner said than done; he was hoisted on the shoulders of a score of enthusiasts, and carried with loud cheers around the field. The same honour was afterwards shown to Lieut.-General Yamaji, Major-General Hasegawa, and Major-General Nishi. It was a great day for Japan.

---

### III.—COMPARATIVE FIGURES.

THE number of Chinese guarding Port Arthur, in a word its garrison, its estimated to have been over 20,000. Of these 7000 were killed or wounded in the fight; 2000 fled to Kinchow; and the rest dispersed in every direction. The Japanese captured the nine coast-forts (60 + cannon) and eleven inland-forts (50 + cannon); two small steamers; one foreign built dredging-vessel; one iron ship, still on the stocks; several hundred steel rails, and 30 + fish-torpedoes. The total casualties on the Japanese side were 40 killed and more than 200 wounded.

---

### IV.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

#### I.—SUB-LIEUTENANT TAWARA.

THE Third Regiment of Infantry, to whose intrepidity the capture of the great Etse-shan forts is attributable, suffered heavy losses in the attack and subsequent capture. More than 100 officers and men were either killed or wounded. The Advance Column, composed of the First Battalion—the First Company leading—broke camp at 1.30 a. m. As guide, Sub-Lieutenant Tawara kyūjirō went ahead, for he was not only acquainted with the road, having thoroughly reconnoitred it beforehand, but was also in

command of the outpost. As it was still long before dawn, the only things serving as guides were the dim outlines of the distant hills or the brightly shining stars; yet when the day broke, it was found that the shortest possible route had been traversed. No Chinese were met on the road; the defending forces were probably wrapped in peaceful slumbers. After an arduous march, the troops reached, at just 6 a. m., the rear of the left flank of Fort No. 1. The First Company, being foremost, made at full speed for the outer walls. They were soon made aware of the enemy's displeasure by a quick and heavy fire, which wrought sad havoc in their ranks. For all this, there was no faltering or disposition to withdraw. The men marched on with the cool courage of veterans and the precision of a machine.

To get at the forts themselves it was necessary to ascend a steep hill, fully 100 metres high; and so great is the incline and so laborious the ascent that a halt has to be made two or three times before the summit can be reached. The men of the First Company halted about half-way up the hill. On attempting to resume the advance, it was found impossible to get the men off together; for between the noise of the cannon above and the volleys fired by the Japanese, even the loudest command became inaudible. The buglers then blew the order "Cease firing!" and in an instant the eyes of every soldier were directed towards the Captain. A word was now sufficient to begin the advance anew. As the troops drew near the walls, the enemy's fire increased in deadly intensity. Sub-Lieutenant Tawara, still foremost, clambered up the wall and then sprang down among the enemy, calling loudly on his men as he did so. Nor were they slow to obey so valiant an example. A number were soon at his side, and then poured volley upon volley into the retreating ranks of the discomfited foe. The Sub-Lieutenant and his men killed several tens of troopers on the spot and caused the fort to be entirely evacuated after a most fierce though short hand-to-hand conflict.

---

## 2.—CAPTURE OF FORT NO. I ON ETSE-SHAN.

THE Etse-shan forts, commanding the rear approach to the

Port, lie west of the Port Arthur highroad and on the brow of a hill 100 metres in height. There are three forts in all, built in a very massive style. Each is or was surrounded by a solid wall of masonry, and they contained six cannon of heavy calibre, two mountain guns, one gatling Q.-F. gun, and two mortars. About one thousand fresh soldiers held the forts, which were thus in every way prepared to repel an attack. The duty of taking or silencing these great forts fell to the Third Regiment, the First Battalion of which advanced steadily to the attack in the face of a murderous fire poured down upon the devoted men. At 8.30 a. m. the Battalion was within 200 metres of the rear of the forts. A reinforcement consisting of the Fourth Company, in compact order, now appeared, and thereafter acted as the Left Wing. Firing as they drew slowly nearer, they made for the projecting left-hand corner of the nearest fort. This was carried in most gallant style at the bayonet's point, the fire of the enemy in the other forts meanwhile increasing in intensity. Funayama Ichinosuke, a private of the first-class of this Fourth Company, was soon at the foot of the protecting wall, where, despite the 4 metres' height, he clambered up, using several bayonets to give himself a footing during his perilous ascent. Reaching the top, he sprang down amidst the defending Chinese, and had just killed three of them when Uchiyama Tazaemon, a second-class private of the same Company, gained the top of the wall and sprang to his comrade's aid. The men were now pouring thick and fast over the wall, and the Chinese utterly disheartened by their fearless bearing. The enemy broke and fled; and in a few minutes thereafter the two other forts were captured in much the same manner. There was no standing against the desperate valour of the attacking troops.

---

### 3.—THE FIRST COMPANY AND THE ETSE-SHAN FORTS.

THE First Company of the First Battalion, 3rd Regiment, was in no wise behind the gallant Fourth in point of daring and dash. The van was led by this First Company, exposed thus to the full heat of the hostile fire. As the men drew nearer,

it was seen that Lieutenant Viscount Matura Hakaru and Lieutenant Viscount Takashima Tomotake had been severely wounded half-way up the hill. Many other soldiers received wounds of greater or less gravity. Without faltering, however, the Company advanced until the foot of the forts was reached, on the brow of the hill, the enemy's fire growing ever fiercer the

while. Second-class private Chōkai Makitarō, who had been with the Reserve, clambered up the wall by means of the fractures in the masonry. On reaching the top he let down a rope which he had for this reason carried with him, and with its aid helped up Major Maruyama Masatsugu, Commander of the First Battalion, Major Taniyama Takahide, commanding the Second Battalion, Adjutant Lieutenant Chiba Taneyasu, and about 20 non-commissioned officers and men. A few seconds after Chōkai had reached the top the wall, First-Class



LIEUTENANT VISCOUNT  
MATSURA.

Sergeant Uchida Yaroku, Second-Class Sergeant Enchi Shinzui, and Tangé Yushichi, a second-class private, all of the First Company, also gained the top, followed by many others who clambered up holding to the cracks and crevices in the masonry. Once on or over the wall, the First Company men made things unpleasantly warm for the defenders, who were speedily in full flight, their departure being accelerated by stinging volleys from the post just evacuated. It was hot work, but quickly and splendidly done.

It must be remembered that this fort was of prodigious size and attacked by the Japanese on several sides at once. It is therefore impossible to determine who was actually the first on or over the walls. We have, however, given a list of the most prominent names, in this and the following paragraphs.

---

## 4.—TAKING OF THE ETSE-SHAN FORTS.

IN the storming of the Etse-shan forts, Special Sergeant Maeda Eishi was the first man of the Second Company, 3rd Regiment, in the charge. In advance of all the rest, in the midst of that deadly hail of bullets and with the men falling in tens and twenties beside him dead or wounded, Maeda was undismayed and apparently in his native element. He was one of the first to get into Fort No. 1, where, at the north-east corner, he rallied a few men about him and fought with conspicuous gallantry. Still keeping the handful of brave followers about him, he dashed on to Fort No. 2, where several guns were captured by the undaunted men, as well as a large quantity of ammunition. In a few moments more, every gun had a man beside it as a guard.

First-Class Sergeant Tanida Sōsuke, of the same Company, was not much behind Maeda in gallant bearing. He followed the former into Fort No. 1, and got into Fort No. 2 almost simultaneously with the foremost. With five or six men he succeeded in taking as many guns, and also in capturing much ammunition. The prompt taking of the Etse-shan forts was mainly owing to the magnificent valour of these two. And soon the *senryōki* (the flag announcing a capture) was waving over the defeated ramparts. It afterwards appeared that this Company had, in the certain expectation of taking the fort, taken the flag with them.

---

## 5.—WOUNDED MEN REPEL AN ATTACK.

AT 9 a. m. of November 22nd, a rumour reached the Staff Quarters to the effect that a mob of the Chinese defeated at Fort Arthur would probably attempt an attack. The members of the Staff and the non-commissioned officers on duty made ready to defend themselves. Among the rest was Kawasaki Eisuke, a First-Class Sergeant of the Third Company, 3rd Regiment. He had, on the 18th, been sent to Tuching-tse in order to act as a guard to the mounted scouting party. In the hot skirmish which ensued

between the scouts and a large body of the enemy, Kawasaki was badly wounded, though not mortally. There he now was, confined to his bed, at the Staff Quarters; but the thought of the peril to which the place would soon be exposed made him get to his feet again. Collecting a few other wounded men, who were able to walk, he made a reconnaissance in the direction whence the enemy were approaching. Drawing near the sea-coast, he fell in with hundreds of the fugitive, desperate Chinese, and kept up a brisk fire, killing or wounding many and effectually stopping the advance on the Staff Quarters. Hundreds of the enemy were thus beaten back by a mere handful of wounded but determined soldiers, led by a man of unusual courage and skill.

---

#### 6.—SUZUKI REISUKÉ.

IMMEDIATELY after the capture of the Etse-shan forts, the Sixth Company of the 3rd Regiment pressed on to take the forts on Songshtë-shan, these being the next in order. Just then a first-class private in this Sixth Company, Suzuki Reisuké by name, was hit in the breast by a bullet. The Commander of a Sub-company who was then standing just beside him, called out, thinking to encourage the fainting man, "Your wound is only a slight one; don't mind it!" The soldier tried to raise himself with the help of his rifle, but his efforts were in vain. In a rapidly weakening voice he repeatedly asked the Commander how the fight was going, on which the latter replied. "We have driven the enemy back, and the day is ours." On hearing this the dying man exclaimed, with a pleased smile on his ashen face, "So long as I have served my country I have never had any reason to be dissatisfied. My wound, I know, is mortal; I cannot hope to live. Be then so good as to cut off my head and free me from my great agony." The officer, deeply moved, gently chid him for making such a request, and the man grew calmer. He had no regret, and was willing to die then and there—as indeed he did.

---

## 7.—A REGRET.

WHEN the Third Infantry Regiment was about to storm the Etse-shan forts, the officers ordered the men to reserve their fire until close to the enemy. There was no tree or hillock to cover them in their impetuous charge. Running at full speed up the steep slope, the guns from the forts made great havoc in the ranks. Yet not a man offered to fire in return. At last they reached the brow of the slope, fired a sharp, ringing volley, and in a few minutes were masters of the position.

During this perilous charge, one of the Japanese soldiers had his left arm shot off. When taken to the rear he exclaimed, "I only regret to have lost my arm before firing a single shot." His Colonel, who was present, tried to comfort the wounded man, and said: "It is because I had such men as yourself in the regiment that we were able to take the forts. I am greatly moved by your words and your strict obedience to orders." But indeed the same spirit inspired all.

---

## 7.—TO THE DEATH.

FUKAZAWA SHIKAKICHI, a second-class private of the Ninth Company, First Regiment, fought well on the memorable day of the battle. When the day was well advanced, he received a severe wound in the abdomen. Seeing this, Sergeant Katabé, his immediate commander, ordered Fukuzawa to fall out and go to the rear. But the wounded man replied, with a wistful look, "The true warrior does not stop fighting till he dies!" and continued to press on with the rest. In a few minutes more he fell prostrate, and died the same night in the field-lazaret.

---

## 9.—SPECIAL SERGEANT SUZUKI.

AMONG those conspicuous for their gallantry in the storming of the Etse-shan Forts, was Special Sergeant Suzuki Kiyohiko,



who belonged to the Sixth Company of the Third Regiment. With only two men following him, he dashed into Fort No. 2, holding his ground until the others came up. Thence he went on to Fort No. 3, in the capture of which he was mainly instrumental. Later on, having joined with some scouts and the Commander of a Sub-company, Suzuki went around to the left of the Chengtse troops, when he ordered his men to make some sort of foot-hold preparatory to scaling the western wall. Mounting first, he fired into the brown of the enemy behind the wall, who were greatly alarmed by his action. His men following promptly, Suzuki ran on into the castle, where, together with the Sub-Lieutenant, he performed prodigies of valour, killing many Chinese who had been left behind in the castle by their fugitive comrades. At the same time the few Japanese here had to keep up a constant fire with one Company of Chinese who were a bout 200 metres off, on the further end of a slightly elevated piece of ground. This Company was more over assisted by the heavy fire of their comrades on Songshū-shan and Peiyu-shan. The place captured by the Japanese was thus in imminent danger of being retaken; yet Suzuki had no thought of retreating. Stimulating his men to yet greater efforts, he held the post for a full hour, until a reinforcement came up. On seeing Colonel Toyosaki Makoto fall, badly wounded, three of Suzuki's men—a Sergeant and two privates—went through the pitiless rain of bullets and rescued the Commander of their Regiment: a most gallant deed. When the Battalion come up, Suzuki and his followers hastened to dislodge the Chinese forces on the elevated ground just mentioned. This they did with a vigour that was astonishing for several had been wounded and all had done the work of brave men.

---

#### 10.—A TRUSTY PICKET.

ONE of the great lessons taught the Japanese soldiers is that he must be very careful in the use of ammunition and never fire unless so ordered or in actual peril of life. Moreover, he is told not to fire at a mob of men dimly seen in the distance after nightfall; he is to wait until they come up or he gets near, so that not a shot is

wasted. That such injunctions bear good fruit is proved by the action of Takei Fuku-ichirō. On the day following the capture of the supposed impregnable fortress, at early dawn, the Second Battalion of the Third Regiment received orders to pursue the flying Chinese and advance as far as Wanchia-tun, some 4 miles distant from Port Arthur. The march was an exceptionally trying one; a bitter wind kept blowing about their ears, raising great clouds of dust, and the cold was very severe for that time of the year. On reaching Wanchia-tun after many hardships, the Sixth Company posted pickets outside the encampment, the men being duly warned to observe every precaution. Takei, a private of the third or lowest class, was one of the men selected for picket duty. At midnight he heard some suspicious sounds, and soon discerned a batch of about ten Chinese soldiers trying to pass unnoticed by the picket line. Without going for aid, Takei quietly posted himself where he saw the enemy must pass, and, on their getting within 20 metres of his place of concealment, began firing as quickly as possible. Three Chinese fell, the rest flying in confusion. Takei moreover captured four muskets. But had he not been trained never to waste a shot, he would in all probability have fired at long range and thus done nothing more than startle the enemy without inflicting any damage on them.

---

#### 11.—A QUAIN CAPTURE.

AFTER the storming of the Laoti-shan forts—to the west of the Port—Takahashi Tōkichi, a reserve second-class private of the Third Company, Second Regiment, followed Lieutenant Tera-da Keitarō around the foot of the hill on which the forts had just been taken. At 8.30 a. m., the Lieutenant descried a small steamer at anchor off the coast, and ordered Takahashi to go and capture it single-handed. Flinging off coat and shoes, Takahashi at once sprang into the water, though it was icily cold and apparently sure to stop him before getting far out. But the bold swimmer succeeded in reaching a small boat, in which he made his way to the steamer and captured it single-handed, despite the

fact of there being a number of Chinese on board. The steamer's name was the *Gūjungō*.\*

12.—MAJOR AKIYAMA'S GALLANT FIGHT.

FROM a strategic standpoint, the position of Shwangtai-kau, north of Tushing-tse, is of critical importance to the Port Arthur Peninsula. From Yingching-tse on the coast line there is a gradual rise of ground southwards, until at Shwangtai-kau a height of no less than 2000 metres is attained. The passage to the left here is quite impracticable, owing to the huge boulders and precipitous cliffs; while on the right hand roll the murmurous waters of the Gulf of Liaotong. Shwangtai-kau thus commands a view of the whole country roundabout,—as far as Yingching-tse and some six miles to the north; it was therefore evident that,

should the Chinese occupy this important eminence, great damage might be inflicted on the approaching Japanese. On reaching Shwangtai-kau and successfully occupying this point, Major Akiyama Yoshifuru, who was in command of the Advance Cavalry Column, concluded that it would be advisable to press forward to Tushing-tse and keep the enemy back there until the Japanese Columns should come up. Although it did not fall within his province to take this decisive step, particularly as it was a task for Infantry rather than for horsemen, Major Akiyama saw that it



MAJOR AKIYAMA.

was of vital importance. Acting on this resolution, he spread out his little squadron in open order and boldly attacked the Chinese

\*Japanese pronunciation.

posted there, the latter numbering no less than two thousand, or ten times the strength of the Japanese. It seemed a piece of almost incredible hardihood, but the Major relied upon the vigour and dash of the men he commanded: their utter fearlessness and indifference as to whether they lived or died in the struggle. While the fight was in progress, the Third Company of the Third Infantry Regiment came up and saw the full fury of the combat. Not an enemy had, until their arrival, been able to break through the little ring of horsemen, so desperate had been the valour of the Japanese Cavalry. Resolved to have their share of the fighting, the Infantry now ran forwards and engaged the enemy, this permitting the remaining horsemen to withdraw for a breathing spell. But as the number of the Chinese was constantly increased by reinforcements coming from the rear, the Japanese Infantry were very hard pressed. Major Akiyama at this moment drew out of the *mêlée*, and, halting amidst a perfect rain of bullets, calmly observed the number of the oncoming foe and the direction taken by them. Commiserating the tremendous difficulties with which the foot-soldiers were encountering—in the face of the over-whelming numbers of the enemy—the Major turned to one Kumagai Naosuke, an interpreter, and remarked: “The Infantry are fighting our battle, but I shall not withdraw my horsemen until the safety of all is assured.” Despite the splendid dash of the Japanese the enemy gradually drew nearer, when Lieutenant Inagaki Saburō, an adjutant, came back and begged Major Akiyama to move away from the perilous place he occupied. Calling to Sergeant Watanabe Takematsu and a private of the second-class, Yamamoto Masagorō, he ordered them to lay about them and drive off the Chinese horsemen, now close at hand. This they did, and



LIEUTENANT INAGAKI.

Major Akiyama was thus brought from the enemy's line. The Japanese Infantry fell slowly back, but in good order.

13.—MUTUAL AID.

As noted above, the conflict between the reconnoitring Cavalry of the Second Column, while on the march to Port Arthur, and the large body of Chinese—certainly not less than 2300—whom they encountered at Tushing-tse, was exceedingly fierce. By sheer force of numbers Chinese succeeded at one time in surrounding the Japanese on three sides, with very little hope of escape. At first Captain Asakawa with his Company of troopers led the van; but on seeing that the fight had become general, he rode over to the right, in order to render assistance in this direction. Noting this the Chinese made a furious attack on that side: so rapidly and fiercely engaging the Japanese that those who had not yet mounted were rendered incapable of doing so; and the cavalry-men had to fight on foot like all the rest. The Brigade Com-



CAPTIAN ASAKAWA.



KIMURA GEMMATSU.



SERGEANT KOBAYASHI.

mander now ordered Captain Asakawa to disperse the rapidly increasing enemy, and, with only 40 or 50 troopers, the latter charged into the ranks of the Chinese. At this moment a shot disabled his left arm, while his horse was killed beneath him. He was on the point of falling into the merciless hands of the enemy

when Kimura Gemmatsu—a third-grade trooper,—notwithstanding a severe wound he himself had received in the abdomen, caught sight of his Captain's peril and made through the press to his aid. Dismounting, he said: "Sir, as the head of my Company, please get on my horse!" The Captain with the help of his sword and Kimura's arm was just barely able to mount, and, owing to his wound, incapable of managing the reins. Seeing this Kimura grasped the bridle and despite the agony he was suffering ran the horse through the storm of bullets until he reached a little knoll some five or six hundred metres distant. Captain Asakawa was now so far restored that he could manage his mount, but Kimura, sick and faint, could no longer keep his feet. Just then Sergeant Kobayashi Shun-ichirō, a comrade of Kimura, rode up, dismounted, and helped the wounded officer on his own horse. Being still within the range of and exposed to the enemy's fire, Sergeant Kobayashi led his comrade four miles to the rear to a place called Shwangtai-kau, where there was no danger of meeting with Chinese. Here they halted, and the Sergeant temporarily bandaged Kimura's wound, thus ultimately saving the brave man's life.

The above story is a simple one. It shows none the less the devotion of the Japanese soldiers to their officers, their own disregard of personal pain and discomfort, and the strong fraternal feeling existing among the soldiers themselves. "Of these things," says Japanese journal, "we feel we have a right to be proud."

---

#### 14.—DEATH ON THE FIELD OF HONOUR.

IT was during the some severe skirmish at Tuching-tse that Itō Kinya, a cavalryman of the second class, met an honourable death. When Captain Asakawa Toshiyasu made his memorable charge, with a mere handful of men, into the ranks of the Chinese, Iio Kinya was close behind him. Iio made his horse plunge into the thickest of the fight and laid about him fiercely. He was seen surrounded by Chinese and fighting most gallantly,

when a bullet struck him in the breast and another was sent through his horse's head. Rider and steed fell dead.

Iio's record was an exceptionally good one. Leaving Japan on October 17th, he landed with his Company in Shinking eleven days later. From that time he had been constantly engaged in hand-to-hand encounters with Chinese, and on all such occasions was to be found in the foremost rank. He was faithful, promptly obedient to command, fearless and intensely patriotic.

After the skirmish was over, his remains were recovered by Major Akiyama and a military funeral accorded them at Shwan-tai-kau. Officers and simple soldiers alike gathered to do him honour; while Lieutenant of Cavalry Inagaki, Major Akiyama's *aide-de-camp*, was requested to write an account of his death. This written narrative was afterwards forwarded to the family of the deceased, in token of respectful sympathy with their loss. Iio while alive was fond of saying, "We should requite the favours received from Japan by dying for her." He died in accordance with this patriotic precept.

---

#### 15.—A SOLDIER'S LAST MOMENTS.

THE First Regiment, forming the Right Column, did splendid work in the storming of the Port. After advancing for some distance the troops came within 300 metres of a village, in which it was evident that a number of Chinese were concealed. Captain Kurahashi Aikitsu, in command of the Tenth Company, ordered first-class private Kojima Raisuke, with two others, to search the village in question. Kojima joyfully obeyed the order, exclaiming, "This is the time for me to show my gratitude to my country!" With two privates of the second-class, Sumita Kamematsu and Ishikawa Sökichi, he ran forwards into the hamlet. Seeing this, the handful of Chinese ran out and upon a hill to the west of the village, where they prepared to make an unusually determined stand. Kojima, nothing daunted, drove all the Chinese from the place and drew near the spot where the defenders had made their last stand. The Company now came up and, forming in

line of battle, began to fire in regular volleys, to which the Chinese valiantly replied. The Japanese, being in the open, were ordered to fire from a recumbent position, and for a little while the bullets came pattering on all sides like rain. Suddenly Kojima, who had been standing, sat down with a loud cry of "Ugh, you Chinese wretches!" Blood was seen trickling from a wound and reddening his tunic. The men beside him now first noticed that he had been wounded, and probably quite severely. Kojima appeared unconscious of his danger and callous to the necessarily great pain. He laid his good rifle beside him and, unfastening the buttons of his coat, made shift to bind up his wound. The bullet had however entered the abdomen and passed clean through him, so that he had little or no control over his hands and fingers, the injury having partially paralysed him. A comrade, Takura Heijirō, noting his plight, endeavoured to make a temporary bandage and so stop the gush of blood; and while he did so Kojima said, "Ah, it is quite true that the soldier must expect to be shot by the enemy: this is nothing but his duty. But I have got this hurt before getting into the midst of the foe, and this gives me much sorrow. Bandage me as quickly as you can; I shall be satisfied if I only can meet once with our foes hand-to-hand." He was so eager for the fight that he again and again tried to stagger to his feet. Takura endeavoured to keep him quiet, but the mortally wounded man would not consent to this. Just then the Company resumed their march; and Kojima said, "Go you first and join the others; I'll follow in a minute." But the poor fellow could no longer stand. A stretcher was brought and he placed on it—and in less than five minutes he was dead.

---

16.—A NIGHT SURPRISE.

THE peninsula of Laoti was stormed by the Tenth Company of the First Regiment, the troops succeeding in taking possession of the northern part of Yangshukeu. It appeared however that a number of Chinese were still concealed in a village to the south of the latter place, and Kojima Chōjirō, a private of the first-class,



was sent with two other troopers to reconnoitre. They got into the village and there met with two Chinese horsemen, whom they shot down and deprived of the red banners they were carrying, considerably lessening the courage of the Chinese still in the village, who retreated to Laoti and there made a stand. Pickets were then posted in the village, facing the foe. Towards evening a gale began to blow accompanied with heavy rain, which grew more violent as night fell, with Cimmerian darkness. But Kojima had not yet completed his reconnaissance, for he had been told to learn as much as possible about the enemy thereabouts. In this pitchy darkness, how could he see? The only thing, concluded Kojima, was to dash into the enemy's camp and bring them all out to repel a supposed attack in force. With his two comrades Kojima proceeded to carry out this daring plan, pressing through the hostile picket-line and learning all he wanted to know. The three men were frequently fired at but escaped without injury. And so that report was made in a wholly satisfactory manner.

---

#### 17.—CAPTAIN MATSUSHITA.

THE Commander of the Ninth Company, Second Regiment, was Captain Matsushita Tsunanari. The Company was ordered to silence and capture the Hwangkin-shan forts, in the rear of Port Arthur. These were the most dangerous of all the forts, so far as the attacking forces were concerned; for their cannon commanded not only the land-forts but even the positions where the Japanese Artillery had been ranged. The guns were thus of heavy calibre, and it was most necessary to silence them before proceeding to the capture of the coast forts. Captain Matsushita's Company was foremost in the attack. Fighting bravely, the officer led his men to and succeeded in capturing the left outposts of the Chengtse troops there stationed. Just then the Japanese Artillery ceased firing. The Ninth Company was now exposed to a galling cross-fire, yet never wavered. On entering, first of all, the Songshû-shan forts, Captain Matsushita was struck by some fragments of a shell come from a fort on the right, and wounded in the lower jaw

and rear. The injury was plainly a mortal one. Standing being impossible, the brave man sat down and, brandishing his sword, still continued to call out orders to his men, whose ardor increased each moment, so eager were they to avenge their Commander's wounds. Some men of the Ambulance Corps now came up to carry him from the field, but could not persuade him to leave the spot. A few moments later the face-wound caused his lower jaw to drop helpless, speech being no longer possible. Still he waited, until the ringing cheers announced the capture of the Songshû, Peiyu and Hwangkin-shan forts. A smile crossed his blood-covered face and now he consented to be placed on a stretcher and carried away. But before the field-lazaret was reached, the bold spirit had fled.

---

#### 18.—THE KILLED AND WOUNDED.

THE wounds received by the Japanese soldiers on the fields of battle have, almost without exception, been found on the front part of their bodies. The killed were shot in front and fell on their faces. On the other hand, the Chinese were most frequently found shot or otherwise wounded in the back. The Japanese died holding their rifles or swords; the Chinese not only, as a rule, without their weapons, but often half unclothed, they having torn their uniforms off in order to be mistaken for ordinary non-combatant Chinese.

In the battle of Port Arthur the wounded Japanese behaved most manfully. Even those who had been seriously or mortally injured never complained of their hurts. While the surgeons were at work on them they would ask, "Is the Colonel safe?" "Has the Port fallen?" or "Have we taken all the forts?"—Another, at the point of death, gasped out: "Having helped to take Port Arthur, why should regret to die?" None sent last message to their friends or relations in Japan, except when particularly urged to do so. Exhausted, wounded, or half-dead, the soldiers had but one thought and put but one question—whether the proud citadel had surrendered to the Sun-flag.

## 19.—WHY THE JAPANESE WERE VICTORIOUS.

A Chinese officer, who was captured in the storming of Port Arthur, is reported to have said that there were two reasons why the Japanese had proved so decisively victorious. These were (1) that the Japanese employed shells (possibly meaning shrapnel) of a terrible nature, of a kind they, the Chinese, had never even heard of; and (2) that the Japanese, when advancing to the charge, were not to be repulsed even by the fiercest fire. They seemed to the Chinese to be utterly reckless, storming on as they did under the iron hail from the forts.

---

## 20.—FIELD-MARSHAL ŌYAMA'S HUMANITY.

A few days after the capture of Port Arthur, a heavy rain set in, adding greatly to the discomfort of the soldiers and their Chinese captives. On November 27th there was a regular down-pour and everything was soaking. It was on the evening of this day that Field-Marshal Count Ōyama, while passing by a dismantled house, saw a number of Chinese prisoners standing huddled together and shivering under the eaves, whence the rain fell drip, drip, on their cowering forms. Moved by the sight, the Field Marshal called one of his aides and said: "Those too are men. My horse, though he may die if exposed to this rain, is not worth those men's lives. Quick, lead them to my stables; turn the horses out; and see that the prisoners are warmly sheltered." When this act of kindness was interpreted to and understood by the Chinese, they shed tears of gratitude and repeatedly begged that their thanks should be conveyed to the Count.

---

## 21.—MODEST GENERAL YAMAJI.

ACCORDING to the unanimous consensus of the Japanese, both soldiers and non-combatants, Lieutenant-General Yamaji—the

“One-eyed Dragon”\* as he is admirably dubbed—is the bravest of the brave. With all this he is singularly modest and unassuming, qualities that certainly become a warrior. After the fall of Port Arthur he made a point of saluting every naval officer he met, saying to each one: “We owe you great thanks for the capture of the Port.” This was his way of assuring Fleet of its importance. But only those who know how great were the difficulties attendant upon the land-attack and the part played therein by the brave Lieutenant-General, can appreciate his self-depreciatory modesty.

---

## 22.—HIS LAST WORDS.

ON the occasion of Major-General Hasegawa's attack on the coast-line forts, the Commander ordered Fujino Kunimatsu, a second-class private belonging to the Mixed Brigade, to act as scout and report on the condition of the enemy. On the road Fujino met with some 1500 Chinese, and received a mortal wound in the abdomen. His Corporal and Company Commander, perceiving the nature of the injury, ordered him to go to the rear and receive surgical attendance. After the battle was over, these two went to inquire about Fujino, and were shocked to learn that the surgeons held out no hope of recovery: the man was, in fact, dying rapidly. The captain went to where Fujino lay and asked the poor fellow if he had nothing to say before dying. Opening his dim eyes, Fujino feebly replied; “I owe my life to my country: to die for it is not hard.” All those who heard these loyal words were deeply moved. “Yes;” went on the corporal, “that is a good saying. We all honour you for such words, and shall tell your relatives, when we get back to Japan, how bravely you died. But have you no word to send to anybody?” His voice sinking to a whisper, Fujino uttered his last words: “My parents are still alive. Tell them, please, that I died for—my—country—and—was—praised—by—my—officers!” And the brave heart was still.

---

\* Lieut.-General Yamaji lost an eye while yet a young man. The dragon in both Japan and China is a symbol of superior strength and intellect.

## 23.—AN UNDAUNTED SERGEANT.

ON the day preceding the attack on the Port, *i. e.* November 20th, the Advance Guard of the Japanese forces came into collision with the Chinese. Wishing to know the exact distance separating them from the nearest of the enemy's forts, an Artillery officer of the First Regiment sent Sergeant Yokoi Gorōkurō to make the necessary calculations. Yokoi set off with alacrity in the direction of the Etse-shan forts, which were the first to be attacked. Taking his stand on a little prominence, he drew out his watch and began watching the flying shells with an unmoved countenance, although missiles of all sorts flew about him in murderous proximity. After repeatedly counting the interval of time between the flash of the guns and the striking of the shells, he was able to calculate the distance to a nicety. This done he walked slowly back to his post and made his report. It was an exhibition of daring coolness, and all were pleased to see the Sergeant return uninjured.

---

## 24.—THE COOLIES' VICTORY.

ALTHOUGH unarmed, the Japanese coolies attached to the various Army Divisions had, on several occasions during the course of the war, to fight for their lives, and in no single instance did they fail to rout the foe. The following is one of the most striking examples of their naked valor.

It was just two days after the fall of Port Arthur that a body of about 800 Chinese soldiers made an attack on the Commissariat Quarters. The camp was 30 *li* (Chinese miles) from the Port, and there were only 50 Japanese troopers guarding it. Despite the most valorous efforts, the Japanese found themselves in a position of imminent danger. Their ammunition was almost expended and they had just made up their minds to die, when the commanding officer approached at the head of 700 transport coolies. These men were employed simply in the capacity of porters and camp-servants, so had no arms. A few only carried staves. Nevertheless the headman of the coolies begged the Commander to permit

them to engage in a hand-to-hand encounter with the Chinese. "Though we may not be able to beat them," said he, "we can do them much damage, and at all events we may keep them busy until re-inforcements come up." To this the officer rather unwillingly consented. In a moment the coolies were off at a full run, yelling and hurraing. They fell on the astonished enemy with their naked hands, wrenched the swords or guns away from many, and fought like so many demons. The Chinese broke their ranks and fled, the Cavalry leaving their horses and the foot-soldiers their guns in the hands of the victorious coolies. Of the enemy 30 were killed and many others taken prisoners. On the part of the coolies, the total casualties were only five killed and wounded. This has—and with justice—been termed one of the most remarkable episodes of the war.

---

#### 25.—THE FIGHTING AT PORT ARTHUR.

(Adapted from the *Japan Mail*.)

ACCORDING to the narrative of an officer in the Second Army, told to the correspondent of a Tōkyō journal, it appears that on the night preceding the attack of the Port, the whole Army encamped in the immediate vicinity, having had several skirmishes with the enemy on the two preceding days. The men were greatly exhausted, and the next day, after the battle was over, their tremendous fatigue was evident. To add to their discomfort, the weather suddenly changed on the evening of the 21st and a piercingly cold wind sprang up. Insufficiently protected against the cold, the soldiers slept in each other's arms in their endeavour to keep warm. The following instance shows how utterly exhausted the men were:—One of the soldiers, who had taken active part in the day's action, lay down close to the camp-fire and fell at once into a sound sleep. The fire, fanned by the strong wind, at last reached the clothes and then the body of the sleeping warrior, but so great was his fatigue that he received fatal burns before awakening to a sense of his danger.

The reason why the victory was achieved by the Japanese is not

because the Chinese failed to fight as well as they knew how, but because the intrepid valour of the Japanese was irresistible. This is proved by a foreign war-correspondent who was an eye-witness of the scenes of November 21st. He relates how the Mixed Brigade, under Major-General Hasegawa, stormed the Erhlung-shan forts without any assistance from the Artillery and in the face of a hail of shot and shell from the Chinese guns. The exploit is one characterised as being almost without parallel. The foreign correspondent censures the unnecessary slaughter of the Chinese found in or fleeing from the assaulted forts; yet he avers that the Japanese troops were in all instances promptly obedient to the word of command and at all times ready to lay down their lives should the necessity arise. It is impossible to do otherwise than speak of such conduct in terms of the highest praise. The manner in which the men of the Mixed Brigade conducted themselves was valorous and loyal. When they attacked the forts, the mountain-guns of the Japanese Artillery were out of range, while the field-guns could not be brought up in time. So, without the cover of an artillery-fire on their side, the Japanese advanced boldly to the attack, so soon as Major-General Hasegawa had given the command. This Mixed Brigade consisted mainly of troopers from Kyûshû, noted for its fighters. Major-General Hasegawa took advantage of this fact when he gave the command to attack the forts, for he called out, "Charge! lads of Kyûshû." The exhortation was at once effective, and the soldiers proved that they were worthy of their fame. After the battle was over the Brigade Commander said that he had expected to see the majority of his men killed. Vice-Admiral Count Kawamura, who was a witness of the whole scene, told His Majesty the Emperor that the intrepid bearing and deeds of the Mixed Brigade were indeed marvelous. The attack on Port Arthur was witnessed by the Japanese fleet, just outside the Port, as well as by several foreign men-of-war; and by all with breathless interest. As the forts fell, one after the other, into the hands of besiegers, the onlookers raised rapturous and repeated cheers.

## 26.—A FOREIGNER'S REPORT OF THE BATTLE.\*

THE following is an extract from a letter written by a foreigner present at the taking of Port Arthur:—"You will no doubt have heard by this time every thing there is to be said about the attack on Port Arthur. As one of the officers here expressed it to me the other day, '*la faiblesse des Chinois est incroyable.*' They certainly did not fight it out to the end at Port Arthur, as the very small numbers of Chinese soldiers found dead at their posts most plainly showed. They kept up a heavy fire on the Japanese as the latter advanced to the attack—both east and west. But their fire was ineffective, and this must have had a somewhat demoralising effect on them. At any rate, from whatever cause, they did not await the attacks, but left their positions before the Japanese reached them, except in the case of a very few men who remained in the most western fort and were killed at their post. The Japanese Artillery fire was good, but my impression is that the range was rather too long for their shrapnel shells to be properly effective; and in the case of the western forts the Chinese position was so much higher than the Japanese that the defenders were able to get excellent cover. Of course, from the nature of the case, the Japanese Artillery had to be contented with a poor position—and if the Chinese gunners had been any good, the Japanese Field Artillery ought now to be non-existent. They were completely commanded by the Chinese, who were able not only to bring a frontal fire on them from the western forts, but also a flanking fire from at least one of the eastern forts, and from positions near the town. As it was, the Artillery duel went on for nearly an hour, and only a Japanese horse was wounded. The Chinese defence was a most disjointed one—there was evidently no guiding spirit—while the Japanese attack was well adapted to overcome such a defence. The Japanese evidently have a very small opinion of the Chinese soldiers, and this was exemplified again at Kin-chow, on the same day as the capture of Port Arthur, when about 1,300 men defended a line of  $2\frac{2}{3}$  miles against some 7,000 or 8,000 Chinese, successfully driving them off, and pursuing them for some distance.

---

\* Taken from the *Japan Mail*.



We are very fairly comfortable here. All the Japanese officers are exceedingly attentive and kind, and we have just had the band playing to us in our own court-yard.

I think I ought to add something more. First of all, the way every one worked on the march from Talien Bay was beyond all praise. All day and all night long the stores were being dragged forward, and there must have been very little sleep indeed for three nights; and especially was this the case with the Siege Artillery, who, with most inadequate means of draught (two, three, or four ponies for each carriage), over a bad road, managed by the most splendid efforts to get their guns into position by daylight on the 21st. We saw them start from Talien Bay on the 18th, and we passed them on the road on the 19th. My companions declared there was no chance of their being at the front in time; but I was very much struck with the way they were working. Sure enough, at 5.30 p. m. on the 20th they began to pass Head Quarters. We were in the saddle at 2 a. m. on the 21st, and the guns were still on the road to the front; yet at daylight they opened fire just after the Field Artillery had begun. It was first-class!

And I think one ought to say something of the Japanese Infantry. It is all very well to say that the Chinese defence was weak, but that does not retract from the good work of the Japanese Infantry. It was a grand sight to see them advancing against the forts—and I have no doubt whatever that their steady, rapid, unhesitating approach had more effect than anything else in making the Chinese defence weak. To wait for close quarters in those circumstances requires better soldiers than the Chinese. A weak or hesitating advance might have proved disastrous.”

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

### THE DEFENCE OF KINCHOW.

---

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

AFTER Kinchow-ching, or the walled castle-town of Kinchow, had been captured by Lieut.-General Yamaji and his brave command, this place was made the gathering-ground of the Second Army, prior to their attack on Port Arthur. The latter great harbour was not only splendidly situated from a military standpoint but also surrounded by so many admirably constructed fortresses and other defences that the Chinese deemed it well-nigh impregnable. Under the circumstances, therefore, the larger portion of the Second Expeditionary Army had to turn southwards. In Kinchow as a garrison were left only the Fifteenth Regiment, less one Battalion, and one Sub-company of Cavalry belonging to the First Battalion. This little force was under the command of Infantry Colonel Kōnō Michiyoshi. The whole road between Port Arthur and Foochow had thus to be guarded; and, when the Army set out for its great objective, nothing was known about the movements of the enemy coming from the north.

On November 15th Colonel Kōnō distributed his forces as follows:—One Sub-company of Infantry near the arsenal of the Mingtse troops, just outside the north gate of the town. These men were to protect the Cavalry encampment and the Artillery ground on the south-west. Another Sub-company was sent to the forts on Shuichia-shan; a third stationed near the barracks below the hill; a fourth posted as a guard at Suchia-tun and Mênchia-tun. One Company of Infantry and a Sub-company of Cavalry were

placed at Shihsan-li-taitse on the Foochow road. One Sub-company of Infantry was finally sent on to Siemên-tse, to guard the Foochow road, the Petsewo highway, and the commissariat or étappe line in that direction. In the castle itself was one Company of Infantry. Captain Okuda Masatada, of the Fifth Company and Commander of the force distributed along the Foochow road,



CAPTAIN OKUDA.

was now ordered to make a reconnaissance northwards. He kept every day mounted scouts patrolling the vicinity as far Wushihli-pu on the Foochow road, but without seeing or hearing of any movement of consequence. On November 18th, a Sub-company of Infantry and another of Cavalry went on towards Pulantien (or Port Adams), on the Foochow highway. On reaching this place they became aware of a number of Chinese advancing

from the neighbourhood of Chingchia-pu. The Chinese horsemen speedily caught sight of the Japanese scouting-party and at once advanced on the latter at full gallop; the Japanese however withdrew without offering to fight, and, falling back on Sanshihli-pu, sent word of what they had seen to the Main Body (2 a.m., Nov. 19th). Continuing to reconnoitre, they then found that the enemy had not dared advance beyond a certain point. Shortly after noon of November 19th, a party consisting of one non-commissioned officer of cavalry, one first-class mounted trooper and three rank and file, were sent on from Shihsanli-taitse to Wushihli-pu. When these five men arrived at Sungkau on the Foochow road, about three hours later, they saw about one Regiment of the enemy slowly advancing. A few moments later they were attacked by 50 Chinese horsemen. The non-commissioned officer and two of the men had the misfortune to have their horses shot under them, the animals dropping dead. It is supposed that they

at once committed suicide, preferring such a death to the disgrace and torture awaiting them had they been taken prisoners by the Chinese. The other two scouts concealed themselves successfully in the brush-covered hills eastward of the highway, and thereafter with great difficulty managed to get back to Liuhiatien on the Petsewo road. Thence they made their way to the regimental quarters west of Kinchow, where they reported what had occurred. Colonel Kōnō moreover had received information of the approach of the enemy, 50 or 60 horsemen and foot-soldiers having made their appearance near the Petsewo and west of the Foochow road. No others were at the time visible, yet from the indications the Colonel judged that the Chinese must be in force, not far away on the Foochow highroad. Word to this effect, was sent on the outlying camps where earthworks and breastworks were hastily thrown up, the soldiers commencing their defensive operations at dawn of November 20th. Twenty minutes before noon of the same day, everything was in readiness, the Japanese being prepared to give the foe a vigorous welcome. The disposition of the defending troops was thus:—(1) The First Infantry Battalion, less the Third Company, in the village just beyond the west gate of Kinchow, and one Company especially told off to guard the approach to the high ground north-west of the castle, with a Sub-company on the lookout on the western littoral; (2) The Second Infantry Battalion, less their Second Company, in the villages beyond the north gate, with pickets at Siemëntse and Sanli-pu, guarding the roads to Petsewo and Foochow; (3) Colonel Kōnō with the remainder of the Regiment, in the camp beyond the north gate. The orders given were promptly and to the letter obeyed, so that, at 5 p. m., all preparations had been completed and the men allowed to retire to their respective camps. Nothing particular transpiring as to the movements of the enemy two hours later, Colonel Kōnō ordered that, as the Regiment would protect the town, each Battalion should be prepared to move at 6 o'clock the following morning; the men might, for the present, retire. Shortly before midnight, the Infantry Company and Cavalry Sub-company sent on to Shihsanli-taitse met with a large body of Chinese foot and horse, the majority taking the road across the hills west of Shisanli-taitse. Another

body simultaneously appeared on the Foochow road, the enemy's idea evidently being to intercept communication between Shihsanli-taitse and Kinchow. According to the orders they had received, the Japanese at once fell back on Kinchow, word being at the same time forwarded to the watchful Colonel, who immediately warned the forces in the outlying villages. With dawn of the following day, each camp sent mounted scouts out, and most diligently endeavoured to ascertain the strength of the approaching enemy and their probable movements. At 11.20 a. m. a body of Chinese horse and foot was descried approaching the high ground south of Shihsanli-taitse. They displayed according to custom numerous flags and banners, and marched along in good order. The Japanese pickets on the Sanli-chwang plateau at once began firing at the enemy, who, after receiving several volleys, separated into two bodies, one going to the west of the Foochow road while the other went east. On the elevated ground to the north of Kinchow, or rather of the castle, the First,



MAJOR SAITŌ TARŌ, COMMANDER  
OF THE 2ND BATTALION,  
15TH REGIMENT.

Fourth, Third and Second Companies were drawn up in the order named, the open sea being on their left. Not the full complement of these four Companies was present; about two and one-half Sub-companies having been despatched to the defence of the Shuichia-shan forts, the actual number of men was a very little more than three Companies. The Right Wing was formed by the Second Battalion, whose Fifth, Eighth and Second Companies, in this order, were stationed between the highland north-east of Kinchow and the Foochow road.

Three Companies only of this Battalion were thus prepared to receive the brunt of the enemy's attack, the Sixth Company being inside the walls for the immediate defence of the castle. The Japanese line of battle extended for a distance of 4000 metres,

and because of it its small numbers was thus in deadly peril. Yet there were no re-inforcements to despatch to the aid of the devoted men : they could only stand and fight for their lives.

Among the spoils captured with Kinchow there had, very fortunately, been four 8 centimetre Krupp field-guns at the east gate and on the north-east corner of the castle, two in each place. The castle garrison had since then been practising with these guns and had learned how to manage them. Now was the time to put their so recently acquired knowledge into practice. A little past midday the attack began in grim reality, and as the Chinese came within range the self-trained artillerists within the walls commenced firing with telling effect. The enemy now, instead of steadily continuing their approach, divided into two bodies, of which one dashed on towards the highland to the north of the town, while the other made for the elevated ground to the north-east. The Chinese coming towards the Japanese Left (*i.e.* the First Battalion), consisted of three bodies, one of which had come from Shihsanli-taitse, the second across the hills from the east, and the third from the sea-coast, forming two large Columns altogether. Their arrangement was, however very disorderly and irregular, with smaller bodies of men scattered, here, there and everywhere. The front of this multitudinous body was about 6000 metres long, and reached back for 4000-5000 metres.

The scene was a magnificent one, despite the apparent disorderly discipline. Bodies of horsemen from 50 to 100 strong dashed hither and thither, while the whole Army came on with an activity and bold bearing that showed they felt certain of their prey. The Chinese marching against the Japanese Left were 4000 in number ; those approaching the right, 3000 ; while there were at least 300 horsemen running about.

Sub-Lieutenant Hirano Eiji who had been with the picket at Siemên-tse on the Japanese Right, had, shortly before this, returned with one Sub-company of the Seventh Company. He was thereupon ordered to take his men to the ground where the Fifth Company stood and there assist in the defence. The enemy on that side, however, confident in their numbers, showed exceptional boldness, running to the charge without exhibiting any fear of the Japanese fire. Soon they began to clamber up a hill to the right

of the Japanese position, whence they intended delivering an overwhelming attack on the town and its defenders. Sub-Lieutenant Hirano at this point fought heroically, and with his men succeeded in holding the enemy back: but the effort cost the life of the young officer. The Eighth Company, recognizing the extreme peril of the Fifth, now sent a Sub-company as a re-inforcement. At the same time the temporary cannoneers in the castle used their guns, mowing down great lanes in the ranks of the foe. Signs of weakness and wavering were noticeable in the enemy's forces at 1. 20 p. m., encouraging the defenders to renewed efforts.

Supposing that the enemy would be sure to attempt to recover the Shuichia-shan forts, the Sixth Company, after leaving a few tens of soldiers on guard at each of the city gates, marched, two Sub-companies strong, against the Chinese on the high-ground to the right of the Japanese position. This spot was of the utmost importance, it being the key to the whole position. At 2.30 p. m. a rumour to the effect that Port Arthur had been captured, ran along the Japanese lines—to the wild delight of the harassed combatants, who forgot both fatigue and their own great peril in the thought of the triumph of their comrades-in-arms. The Fifth, Seventh and Eighth Companies now sent each one Sub-company forwards, and this body was, while fiercely engaging the enemy, joined by the Sixth Company. Combined they forced back the Chinese hordes, overwhelmingly superior in number though they were. At 3.15 p. m. the Eighth Company sent one more Sub-company to attack the rear flank of the retreating enemy, a task of which the men acquitted themselves well.

The Chinese who had proceeded to attack the First Battalion, forming the Japanese Left Wing, had been more more leisurely in their movements. Each Company had had time to conceal some men in the inner glens along the mountain-slope, the enemy approaching the while unconscious of the ambushade. As the Chinese drew nearer the defenders began volley-firing, while the best marksmen were told to single out the leaders and pick them off one by one. When within 400 metres of the Japanese contingent, a simultaneous burst of fire along the whole line greatly disconcerted the enemy. Their progress was checked, then turned into a slow retreat, the Chinese trying to seek shelter behind the rocks

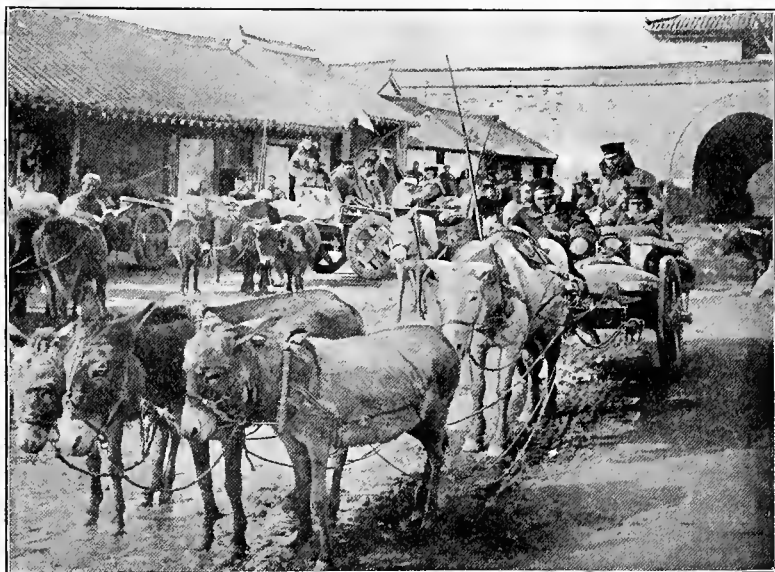
and trees as they withdrew. From the highland above, however, one volley after another was steadily poured into the retreating masses, accelerating their retrograde movement. Just then the attacking troops on the Japanese Right began to retreat rapidly. This added to the general confusion, which was still further intensified by the Japanese quick-fire. At 3.30 p. m. the Chinese were running in all directions. The enemy coming from the Foo-chow road had likewise failed to get near; and five Sub-companies were ordered to chase them for a distance of 2000-3000 metres, firing as they ran. This body of the enemy retreated to Shihsanlipu. At 4 p. m. the battle was all over, the Japanese being completely successful at every point. As for the more than 3000 strong force that had come up along the coast on the left, no attempt was made to retreat, although the sun was now about setting. The Japanese in this direction, being far too few in number to take the offensive, simply stood where they were, defending their post. About midnight these Chinese troops also gave over the attempt and retired.

During the course of the day the Japanese losses were 8 killed and 47 wounded. Of Chinese corpses alone no less than 500 were counted on the field, so that the enemy's casualties must have been very heavy. The Sub-company of Cavalry, belonging to the Fifteenth Regiment, had been stationed throughout the day beyond the east gate of the town, where they kept strict watch over Japanese Right and reconnoitred from time to time. Colonel Kōno now ordered his troops to desist from pursuing the fleeing Chinese, and the tired men gradually come back to their quarters. The First Battalion bivouacked at their former camp, while the Second (less the Sixth Company) sent one Company on to Sanli-chwang, another to the post beyond the east gate, and a third to the north gate. The Sixth Company, formerly on guard within the walls, now returned to the castle. The Sub-company of Cavalry, after completing a reconnaissance of the Shuichia-shan forts and vicinity, encamped beyond the east gate, while Colonel Kōno stopped at the camp outside the north gate. According to subsequent investigations, the total number of Chinese engaged in this abortive attempt to recapture Kinchow, could not have been much less than 7000. They were picked men and under the command of General



Sung Kiang. Viceroy Li had especially instructed General Sung to co-operate with the forces at Port Arthur, thus getting the Japanese between two fires. This well-conceived plan was frustrated by the quick movements of the Second Army, who were engaged in their successful attack on the Port before General Sung managed to bring his troops up to Kinchow. It is moreover supposed that the large body of Chinese met with and dispersed by the First Battalion of the Third Regiment (the foremost body of the Division) at Shwangtai-kau, on November 18th, during the march to Port Arthur, was a detachment sent from the Port northwards to Kinchow in order to carry out the preconcerted scheme of attacking the Japanese both in front and in the rear.

When the news of the peril of the little garrison at Kinchow reached the Japanese at Port Arthur, General Count Ōyama, Commander-in-Chief of the Second Army, at once sent the Second Battalion of the First Regiment to the relief of the beleaguered town. The First Division also made ready to send thither a relieving party—consisting of the Third Battalion of the Fifteenth Regiment, half a Sub-company of Cavalry and the Sixth Company of Mountain Artillery, the whole being under the command of Major-General Nogi. But by the time the necessary preparations were made, it was 5 o'clock in the afternoon, and the men exhausted from the long fighting at the Port and their preceding sleepless night. Again there was a lack of ammunition and other necessaries, which might not be supplied until the next morning. At dawn of the 22nd this body set out, and on the 23rd reached Sanshihli-pu, after having had several skirmishes with parties of the dispersed enemy. Here they learned that Colonel Kōno and his men had been more than able to hold their own, and that the attacking Army had been compelled to fall back on Foochow. Greatly reassured by this news, the men rested that day at Sanshihli-pu. On the 24th they resumed their march, entering Kinchow in the early afternoon.



THE CARRIAGE OF THE WOUNDED IN FRONT OF THE MILITARY HOSPITAL  
INSIDE OF THE NORTH GATE OF KINCHOW.

---

BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

1.—SERGEANT FUKUDA AND THE DEFENCE OF SUCHIA-TUN.

WE have already narrated how Colonel Kōno Michiyoshi and his few hundred soldiers defended Kinchow successfully against the attack of seven thousand Chinese. Isolated instances of exceeding boldness and bravery were not wanting on those memorable days; but perhaps most interesting of all is the story how Sergeant Fukuda, with a mere handful of men, held out at Suchia-tun against truly overwhelming odds.

It will be remembered that Colonel Kōno, on November 18th, made an excellent disposition of the force under his command; sending a few score of men to protect each vital point on the roads leading towards the castle. Among the rest, one Sub-company was despatched to garrison Suchia-tun, a place two miles south of the town, on a hill. This is a very important if small

village is bounded on the west by the Bay of Kinchow, on the east by the Yellow Sea; while southward runs the road to Port Arthur and northward the routes to Kaiping, Newchwang and Moukden, by way of Foochow. The three highways meet at Suchia-tun, so that any one coming from Kinchow, Talién Bay, Wiju or Takushan, must pass by this place. Moreover there were several military depôts here, beside a telegraph station and large supplies of ammunition and military stores, so that the successful occupation and retention of Suchia-tun were of vital importance to the Japanese forces in the Peninsula. Nine cannon, field and mountain guns, were here ready to repel attack, and everything had been done to make the place as secure as possible.

On November 19th it became evident that a large body of Chinese were coming to attempt the re-capture of Kinchow, along the roads from Pulantien and Petsewo. The strengthening of the Kinchow garrison being therefore of immediate importance, Lieutenant Hineno Shüzō, Commander of the Company, at once sent a messenger to the little garrison at Suchia-tun. "It is reported," the message ran, "that the Chinese are approaching Kinchow in force, coming from Pulantien and Petsewo. You are to leave your post at once and come up here. One file only is to stay in the present garrison.



SERGEANT FUKUDA.

Select whatever men you please for this purpose, and see that they observe every precaution." The officer commanding the Sub-company at once selected for this perilous purpose Second-Class Sergeant Fukuda, First-Class Privates Koyano Hisaburō and Kasukawa Utarō, and the following men from the ranks:—Yazaki Chūkichi, Furuse Kanezō, Kōno Hikoji, Suga Kinjūrō, Ōtsuka Mosaku, Shiokawa Ichizō, Suzuki

Harusaburō, Yamada Keijirō, Aikawa Saijirō, and Nakamura Dengo—twelve in all, besides the Sergeant. Having thus arranged matters, the commanding officer returned to Kinchow with the

other men of the Sub-company at 7 p. m.

The attack on Kinchow was made, as we know, on November 21st, and for several hours the battle raged about the hills around the town. At last, beaten off at all points, the enemy began to retreat. Sergeant Fukuda had been a deeply-interested spectator at times during the day, for on climbing a hill north-east of Suchia-tun he could overlook Kinchow and with his field-glasses observe all that was being done. "Ah," he exclaimed, "our men all successfully repelling the attack. How sorry I am not to be on the spot and taking part!" At one time he thought of sending six of his men to aid the little garrison within the walls of Kinchow, but on second thoughts concluded that they might shortly be required at their present post. Every now and then he sent some one up the hill above-mentioned to see how the battle was going, and he and his men were in a fever of unrest. When the sun set and the battle seemed concluded in favour of the defenders of the town, Sergeant Fukuda turned his whole attention to the defence of his own quarters. Besides, rations were getting short; for the main depôt at Kinchow was too busy to send provisions to the little garrison at Suchia-tun. Nor was there any well or stream of water near their quarters. Thinking it best to lay in a good supply of water, the Sergeant sent a few men to obtain the precious fluid from some wells on the Port Arthur road, about 600 metres away. The men began to do this at early dawn of the next day, and succeeded in filling several large casks. Among the spoils formerly taken there were several bags of Chinese rice. These were now opened and the rice boiled for the hungry soldiers.

At 9.30 a. m. one of the soldiers, Yazaki Chūkichi, who was doing sentinel-duty at the gate, reported that about 20 Chinese horsemen were approaching from Mêngchia-ying, a village directly in front. They were, he said, coming toward the garrison along the Port Arthur road, not more than 100 metres away, and they were followed by a large number of foot-soldiers. Deeming it impossible to dispute the road with so large a force, the Sergeant determined to let the enemy pass by unmolested. But it was soon apparent that the Chinese consisted of the troops defeated at Port Arthur, hundreds upon hundreds retreating sulkily from

the scene of their late disaster. Knowing that they would certainly attempt to recapture Suchia-tun, the Sergeant gathered his men about him and exhorted them to fight to the last gasp in defence of their post. He then told each man what he should do, pointing out his station beneath the parapet, above which the Sergeant had had a number of forage-caps placed, in order to deceive the enemy as to the real number of Japanese on the ground. The men were further enjoined to be every careful of their ammunition, and to refrain from firing except in case of absolute necessity. The Sergeant now had the gates of the enclosure shut and barricaded by some of the captured cannon. Should the enemy advance to the very gate, the men stationed there were to use one of the pieces of ordinance, reserving the bullets in their own cartridge-pouches till the very last, the ammunition on hand being scanty.

Part of the Kinchow garrison were posted on a piece of elevated ground north of the castle, whence they were to signal the approach of any enemy on the Foochow road or thereabouts. During the course of the afternoon a military telegram came from Port Arthur, to the effect that the defeated Chinese were running northwards and would infallibly pass by Kinchow, the garrison of which might therefore expect to be subjected to a double attack. Every precaution was taken and a strict lookout kept, when, at 10.30 a. m., the first bands of the fugitives came into sight. The numbers of the defeated enemy kept growing ever larger and frequent skirmishes took place, both sides fighting desperately. Scores of Chinese were either killed or wounded, and yet they came pressing on, for the road leading by the castle was the only one along which they might retreat. Great anxiety was felt for the safety of the little garrison at Suchia-tun, and the Second Sub-company of the Fourth Company was sent to its aid. At quarter past twelve in the afternoon the Sub-company set out, but before proceeding far they encountered such large numbers of the enemy that it was impossible to cut through. The relief of Suchia-tun was thus recognised as being out of the question, and the Sub-company returned *re infecta* to Kinchow. Shortly after this all communication between Suchia-tun and the garrison at Kinchow was cut off, and the Japanese defending the

castle made no doubt that their comrades were killed. Yet though the object of a continual series of attacks, the devoted men at Suchia-tun never faltered for an instant nor did they lose heart. "It seems," said the Sergeant to his men, "that our lives cannot be long ours, and no help comes to us from Kinchow. Perhaps matters there are such that a reinforcement cannot be spared for us. But even in this case we must not think of leaving this place, for if it should fall into the enemy's hand they would get hold of all the ammunition, arms and other stores here. Boys, fight on!" Stimulated by the enthusiastic spirit of their brave leader, the men did wonders and no one ever gave a second thought to the desperate nature of their situation. The foremost bands of the enemy were now thick in front of Kinchow, the entrance to which haven of safety was very strongly defended. Many of the Chinese fell to rise no more, yet their place was speedily taken by others as the defeated Port Arthur garrison came on in hundreds. The firing of the Japanese in and about Kinchow growing hotter and hotter, the bewildered, desperate fugitives began to seek shelter in the neighbouring villages, and so Suchia-tun was exposed to a fierce attack, the Chinese being evidently aware of the value of capturing the place. Fukuda and his men fought like giants. At 4 p. m., several—seven or eight—horsemen, apparently Japanese, were descried by the hard-pressed garrison, seeming to have come from the direction of Talién Bay. The Chinese fired at the group, on which the horsemen retreated. Seeing this Sergeant Fukuda permitted Koyano Kisaburō, Ōtsuka Mosaku, Yamada Keijirō and Furuse Kanezō, to run after the mounted soldiers, tell them of the extreme peril of the garrison and beg them to cut their way through to its aid. Unfortunately the messengers failed to catch up with the horsemen. On their way back however they came, to their great joy, across a number of armed sailors, landed from the *Katsuragi*—23 all told. To the commander of these men, Master Demura, they related the sore straits in which the garrison was, and the seamen at once agreed to render aid. On entering the enclosure so well defended, Demura asked Fukuda if there was any food for his men, as all had marched a long distance and were very hungry. Sergeant Fukuda then pointed to the boiled

rice, saying that he had half-expected some occurrence of the sort. After a hasty repast, the seamen took four of the captured cannon, and, with much labour, succeeded in placing one in each corner of the enclosure. During all this time the Chinese had been firing irregularly into Suchia-tun, and now began a still stronger attack. But the garrison was better prepared this time, and used the cannon as well as their own rifles with great execution, keeping the eager if disheartened fugitives at a respectful distance.

All this long day of hard fighting the Kinchow contingent had been greatly concerned about the fate of their comrades at Suchia-tun. Just before daybreak of the 23rd, the Second Sub-company once more tried to fight their way to the besieged garrison, but were again compelled to retire, owing to the large numbers of Chinese between them and their objective. At 3 a. m. however Naval Lieutenant Fukagawa Yoshibumi, with 100 men, reached Suchia-tun, where Sergeant Fukuda at once relinquished the command to his superior. Seeing that the garrison had thus been reinforced, the enemy grew less bold and dared no longer approach the enclosure. Everything now being safe, the first-class private Koyano, with four others—Shiokawa Ichizō, Aikawa Saijirō, Kanō Hikoji and Suzuki Harusaburō—started off for Kinchow by a round-about route, in order to apprise Colonel Kōno of all that had taken place. This was at 2 p. m. A little later on the Second Sub-company finally cut their way through all opposers and reached Suchia-tun, this being the third attempt they had made to relieve the besieged garrison. The next day, November 24th, Sergeant Fukuda and his 12 brave men reached Kinchow in safety. In company with Koyano, the Sergeant went to report to Major Saitō Tokumei the story of the defence of Suchia-tun. On hearing it the Major was unstinted in his commendation. “You are both most stout-hearted soldiers,” said he, “for it is owing to your exertions that that important spot was kept from falling into the enemy’s hands. You fought well against great odds! Take these in memory of your deed,” and so speaking the Major wrenched the gold button from his left cuff and handed it to the Sergeant, while to Koyama he gave the tassel of his sword. There was nothing else to give the brave men,

although it is gratifying to report that they have since received more tangible and valuable proofs of their country's gratitude.

---

2.—KOYANO KISABURŌ.

REFERENCE has already been made to the part played by Koyano Kisaburō, a private of the first-class, in the memorable defence of Suchia-tun. It will be remembered that at 4 p. m., November 22nd, a body of some 7 or 8 Japanese horsemen was descried at a distance, coming apparently from the direction of Talién Bay. Koyano was the first to espy the mounted scouts—for such they seemed to be—and at once requested Sergeant Fukuda to let him go and call the horsemen to their aid. Permission being with some difficulty obtained—for Koyano would run a fearful risk in getting through the enemy outside of the enclosure—the brave soldier and three of his comrades (whose names are cited above) sprang, sabre in hand, into the thick of the Chinese, and after some rapid and brilliant sword-play succeeded in cutting their way through all opposers. Koyano now tried in vain to attract the attention of the distant horsemen; he waved



FIRST-CLASS PRIVATE  
KOYANO.

his hat and made various gestures, but unfortunately without the desired result, the riders going off in just the opposite direction. By great good luck however the party of marines from the *Katsuragi* then came up, and, once again fighting their way through the Chinese, Koyano re-entered the garrison with his sea-faring allies.

On the following morning, just before dawn, Naval Lieutenant Fukagawa came to the relief of the garrison, as has already



been related. The Japanese then took matters into their own hands and delivered a counter-attack on the besiegers. At 2 p. m. of the same day Koyano and four others were ordered by the Sergeant to go and report to the Main Column in Kinchow all that had occurred. This they did, with splendid success, fighting up to the very walls of Kinchow. After making a preliminary report to Major Saitō, Koyano and his comrades returned to Suchia-tun; once more encountering with and overcoming many Chinese on the way back. On the 24th the whole little garrison of Suchia-tun was safely housed in Kinchow.

---

### 3.—HOW TŌDŌ TATSU DIED.

AMONG those conspicuous for their military ardor and love of glory, was Tōdō Tatsu, a Sergeant in the First Battalion of Cavalry. When the Chinese General Sung attempted to recapture the castle of Kinchow, Sergeant Tōdō was one of the garrison in occupation. With several comrades he was, on November 19th, 1894, sent to reconnoitre the enemy in the direction of Pulantien. On reaching Wushih-lipu he and his men were met by some sixty Chinese horsemen, to avoid a collision with whom he turned eastward. But, most unfortunately, the Sergeant got into a marsh, from which it seemed impossible to extricate his horse. Knowing that the Chinese were close behind and believing it impossible to avoid being captured by them, he called out to a cavalry-man, named Hori-uchi Iwao, who had not got into the marsh, to say that as he had no hope of life he would then and there commit suicide and thus foil his would-be captors. Hori-uchi should at once return and report what they had thus far seen and say that he, Tōdō, had died in the execution of his duty. Two more horsemen having got entangled in the swamp, Tōdō and they calmly cut each other's throats and died just as the Chinese came up, to wreak their vengeance on the senseless bodies of these brave men.

The remarkable feature in this narrative is that Sergeant Tōdō did not, even in that supreme moment, forget the duty

he owed to his superiors and the importance of acquainting them with what he had seen during his reconnaissance up to that time. But this is the spirit that has ever inspired the warriors of Japan: it is the spirit that wins battles and makes a nation famous for all ages.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

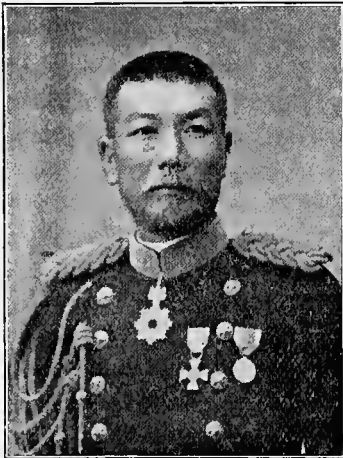
### THE CAPTURE OF SIUYEN-CHING.

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

It was on November 15th, 1894, that the First Expeditionary Army captured the walled town Siuyen-ching, thanks to an advance from the front made by the Ōsako Column and a flank attack executed by Major Mihara and his command.

Siuyen is an important, strongly fortified town to the south of Moukden, the treasure-city of the Manchurian Emperors. To the

west lies Kaiping, and thence the roads run to Liaoyang, by way of Haiching; to Funghwang-ching in the east; and to Takushan in the south. The town consists of about 3000 houses, and is surrounded by lofty hills on all sides, its shape being something like a parallelogram, with a perimetre of 2500 metres. The Chinese garrison was made up of about 2500 foot soldiers and about 500 Cavalry.



MAJOR-GENERAL ŌSAKO NAOTOSHI.

At the time we speak of the Head Quarters of the Third Division of the First Army lay at Antung; there was also a small body of men at the west side, and a Column under Major-General Ōsako, Commander of the

Fifth Brigade, at Takushan. It was this last-named force that received the order to take Siuyen-ching. The Fifth Division was encamped between Funghwang-ching and Kiulien-ching, the 22nd Regiment of Infantry, under Major Mihara, being included. This Regiment, with one Battalion of foot-soldiers and a file of mounted scouts, left Funghwang-ching, their purpose being to aid the Ōsako Column by making a flank attack upon the enemy from the north of Siuyen.

On November 14th Major Mihara and his command left Funghwang-ching, reaching Shatse-kau. The file of scouts, under Cavalry Lieutenant Kanroji, stopped that night at another village some six miles nearer their objective. On leaving Funghwang, Sergeant Kawasaki, accompanied by one trooper, had been sent over another road to inform Major-General Ōsako of the intention and route about to be taken by the Mihara Column,—a difficult yet well-accomplished task, as the country was swarming with the enemy. On November 15th Major Mihara arrived at Laoye-shan, the mounted scouts going on to Hwanghwang-tien. At 5.40 a. m. the next morning (November 16th), 52 non-commissioned soldiers were selected out of the various Companies and sent forward under Lieutenant Machida Keiû towards Kwangchia-tien, in order to act as a guard for the mounted scouts and furthermore ascertain the disposition of the enemy's forces thereabouts. Less than an hour later, the Column broke camp and followed in the wake of Lieutenant Machida and his men. Everything was quiet until 4. 50 p. m., when seven of the mounted scouts suddenly encountered ten Chinese horsemen near a place called Shutse-kau. A brisk scrimmage ensued, the enemy being speedily put to flight. That night the picket line was kept along the outskirts of Lingkau; while the little Army bivouacked in North Lingkau. Rising with the dawn the next day (November 17th), Lieutenant Machida and his party set out at 5.30 a. m., the Main Column following half an hour later. Temporarily placing the chief command in the hands of Captain Wochi Michihiro, Major Mihara now hastened to catch up with Lieutenant Machida's party, as a collision with the enemy was momentarily expected. On reaching Hwangtsin-tse the Chinese were found busily engaged in throwing up earthworks and otherwise preparing to give the Japanese a warm reception. The

Japanese forces were then drawn up on a hill opposite Hwangtsintse, at a distance of 700-1000 metres from the enemy, but the order to fire was not given. Each moment the number of the opposing troops increased; their Left Wing deployed and they seemed desirous of occupying the highest peak of the range, perhaps with the idea of having a *point d'appui* in case of a compulsory retreat. Their Right Wing now swung around towards a hill near the Japanese Left, and as this was being done Captain Saikawa Noboru and his Company were ordered to intercept them. The Machida Party was simultaneously commanded to climb the opposite hill and thus frustrate the operations of the enemy's Left Wing, while a Company under Captain Maruyama Naohiro was directed to charge the enemy's centre. With all this, no word having as yet come from the Ōsako Column, the Japanese held back their fire. However shortly after 11 o'clock the sound of heavy cannonading was heard far to the south, and Major Mihara at once ordered his men to begin volley-firing. This was done promptly, the enemy replying with scattering and irregular volleys (*zui-i shageki*). Half an hour later the enemy showed signs of distress and appeared about to cede the field; so a general charge was made all along the line, the Chinese tiring to fly as their foes approached. In a few minutes more Hwangtsintse was taken, and the enemy were in full flight, one body running along the north-western hills, another along those to the south-east, while a third hastened to occupy a hill north-east of Kohtse-shan. The Japanese horsemen followed the fugitives without loss of time, and cut or shot down many. The whole force then resumed the march towards Suiyen, while the enemy made for Hinglung-kau.

Just at this moment a Chinese reserve came up, consisting of about 1000 Infantry, and 300 Cavalry, with two cannon. They succeeded in rallying numbers of the defeated troops, and made a determined stand. The enemy's field-pieces were ranged to the north of Hinglung-kau, at a distance of not more than 700 metres from the Japanese line; but as they fired percussion shells only, no damage was inflicted. The Chinese Infantry now formed into line on either side of an adjacent hill and began a fierce fire in open order; seeing this, Sub-Lieutenant Yamada, of the Twelfth Company, who was on the Japanese Left, started with his Sub-company up a

hill to the north-east of Hinglung-kau. On reaching the top they opened a flank-fire on the enemy's Artillery, very much to the latter's discomfiture. Another Sub-company, under Sub-Lieutenant Akizuki, was sent out from the Machida Party to the rear of the enemy's flank, and in doing so they had to clamber up and occupy a very precipitous hill. On the right a Company under Captain Sakuma Torazō was so deployed as to be stationed midway between the two Sub-Companies. And now all three bodies fired with tremendous effect on the Chinese artillery-men. At one time, the advance line of the attackers spread out for a distance of quite 1000 metres, and as the Japanese advance was steady and their aim most excellent, the enemy showed signs of wavering. Shortly before 1 o'clock p. m. the Chinese Cavalry seemed about to make a desperate charge in the hope retrieving the fortunes of the day; but this charge was intercepted by Captain Wochi's Company deploying to the right of Captain Maruyama's command and occupying the level ground in front. Moreover, Captain Saikawa and men had by this time reached a prominence east of Hinglung-kau, whence they fired death-dealing volleys at the enemy. Thirty minutes later the Chinese slowly retired, yet still keeping possession of a hill on the left as a base of operations. The two field-guns with a draught-horse were abandoned, thanks to the superb marksmanship of the Japanese Infantry, who had picked off every man near the guns.



MAJOR MIHARA.

Major Mihara was all the time very eager to know what had been done by the Ōsako Column, Sergeant Kawakami and his comrade having not yet returned with their report; besides the sound of cannon and small arms was constantly heard to the south, so it was evident that Major-General Ōsako had engaged the enemy. As for the Chinese, they were now endeavouring to make another

stand on the opposite bank of the small river, west of Hinglung-kau, having occupied the hill north-east of Kohtse-shan. The Japanese troops were eager to follow up their victory; but, knowing that the enemy occupied a larger territory than that which was held by the Japanese forces, and fearing that any fresh movement forwards might interfere with Major-General Ōsako's plans, Major Mihara reluctantly relinquished the idea of making another general charge. So only one Sub-company, under Lieutenant Sasaki Yoshisada was, sent forward to harass the foe, accompanied by a few horsemen. On reaching the village of Hinglung-kau they found themselves, however, unable to make any farther advance, the number of the enemy there being so greatly disproportionate. The Machida and Akizaki Troops were in the same predicament. The Japanese Advance Column thus branched off to the range of hills in echelon, and at dusk, falling in with the enemy's Left Wing, at last succeeded in driving the Chinese back. The Chinese posted along the river-bank west of Hinglung-kau did not, at the same time, show any disposition to retreat, despite the heavy losses they had suffered during the course of the day. And as it was now 8 o'clock in the evening, the remainder of Major Mihara's men bivouacked where they were between the high ground north-east of Kohtse-shan and the northern portion of the Hinglung-kau village. A strict watch was kept, and the picket-line advanced as far as possible towards the Chinese camp. No news having come from the Ōsako Column, Major Mihara, in considerable perplexity, despatched two special scouts during the night in the direction of Suiyen. These men found that the narrow northern road leading to the town was closed, and that the Chinese who had encamped on the river-bank were there merely to cover the retreat of their comrades. Major Mihara therefore concluded that if he should press forward the next morning and occupy the opposite open ground, he might be enabled to ascertain what or how much had been done by the Ōsako Column; moreover, by taking this route, it would be possible to approach Suiyen through the ravine at the base of Kohtse-shan, which was the charge that had been given him at the outset. The scouts reporting that there was no Chinese garrison at Suiyen, the Column set out early in the morning of November 18th in that

direction. The Cavalry led the way, followed by an Infantry reserve (one Sub-company). The Machida and Akizaki troops joined and set out shortly before the advance of the Mihara Column. At 6.20 a. m. the firing of small-arms was heard, coming from the main-road a little north of a hill to the north-east of Suiyen. This was subsequently discovered to have been caused by the Machida men, who had fallen in with and defeated a body of the enemy's Cavalry. A little later on, the sound of firing was heard twice again, the first time being due to a brush between the Advance Guard and some Chinese foot-soldiers, and the second resulting from a sudden meeting with a number of Chinese fugitives.

The Column kept steadily marching, at an accelerated pace, until they reached some elevated ground on the left bank of a stream flowing to the north of Suiyen-ching. At the same time the Machida detachment filed through the ravine above referred to and clambered up the hills to the west of the high-road, having shot down the Chinese posted there. They now turned their guns toward the Chinese Artillery stationed on the right bank of the stream, the elevation and their excellent aim making every shot tell. After marching through the ravine the Advance Guard had to avoid the fire of the Chinese cannon on the river-bank, so they wheeled about and took possession of a little plateau to the east of the road along which they had come, the Akizaki detachment meanwhile firing a succession of volleys at the Chinese gunners in order to cover the movements of their comrades. Lieutenant Machida and his men then descended the hill whence they had been firing and, fixing their bayonets, made straight at double-quick for the enemy's Artillery. But when they reached the middle of the stream the enemy broke and fled, leaving four cannon behind. A Company under Captain Wochi was then sent forward, together with a few horsemen, to take possession of the town Siuyen and to find out what had become of the Ōsako Column. The rest of the little Army passed through the stream in safety, while the enemy, still in full sight, fled along the hills west of Suiyen, having, for the time being, formed a more than sufficiently correct estimate of the deadliness of the Japanese aim. Some stragglers were met with running along the bank of the



stream north-east of town, and these were pursued. The whole number of the Chinese who fled along the hills was not less than 4000; indeed, it took them quite an hour and a half to pass a given point. The Japanese fired at them with the captured cannon, but as they were not artillerists they bungled the matter, and so the attempt to intercept the enemy's flight in this manner was speedily given up.

Captain Wochi hereupon entered Suiyen with his Company, quite unmolested. The horsemen, under Cavalry Lieutenant Kanroji, after passing through the town, fell in with some troopers of the Ōsako Column at 7.45 a.m., the latter being then only 300 metres distant from Suiyen. Major-General Ōsako was soon afterwards on the ground, and, placing the command of his troops with Captain Maruyama, Major Mihara entered the town to join his chief and relate what had happened on the march thither. The Column under Major-General Ōsako was made up of the Sixth Regiment of Infantry (less four Companies), the Second Battalion of the Eighteenth Regiment, one Company of Cavalry and one Company of Mountain Artillery. The Army had set out from Takushan-kan at dawn on November 16th. Before breaking camp one Battalion of Infantry had been sent forward to reconnoitre, but with strict orders not to begin hostilities until the remainder of the Column should come up. This Advance Battalion, which had set out on the 15th, bivouacked at Tomuntse on the night of the 16th, occupied Hwangchia-paotse shortly before noon on the 17th, and had then fallen in with several large bodies of the enemy near Pachia-paotse, the Chinese having come from the south of Suiyen. The enemy, about 1000 in number, had boldly attacked both wings of the Japanese Battalion, but without succeeding in stopping their steady advance. Again in a village south of Suiyen two cannon were placed, which began firing on the Japanese as they came up, but all in vain, as a few well-directed shots caused the gunners to scamper off, leaving the cannon behind. At 3 p.m. of the 17th, the Advance Body reached Shochia-paotse, when about 200 Chinese foot-soldiers made their appearance on a table-land south-west of Pachia-paotse. Two other Companies of Infantry were therefore sent on to take possession of the highland north-west of Hwangchia-paotse, in order to drive back the enemy. At 7 p.m. this man-

œuvre was accomplished, the Chinese taking to flight. The Commander intended to press on and storm the town that day; but night was now approaching and nothing had yet been heard from Major Mihara; so this intention was relinquished. Bivouacking in the hamlets south-west of Hwangchia-paotse, the final charge was set for the next day. During the night, however, reports came in that the enemy were giving way on all sides. A body of Cavalry was instantly despatched toward the Kohtse-shan ravine, in order to intercept the fugitives, while at 6.30 a.m. the foremost troops reached Pachia-paotse, where they heard the sound of cannon—these being the Chinese guns shortly afterwards captured by Lieutenant Machida's detachment. The whole Column came up and entered Suiyen at 9.30 a.m., meeting there with Major Mihara's victorious troops, as described above.

With regard to the enemy, the majority fled on to Haiching from Kohtse-shan, the remainder taking the Kaiping road. In all the skirmishes and despite the Chinese cannon, the Japanese had only three men wounded, although the Chinese suffered heavily. Five cannon were taken, together with six train-horses, 5000 rounds of ammunition, 53 tents, two large standards, and a vast quantity of lesser impedimenta.

---

## II.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

### 1.—A NIGHT RECONNAISSANCE.

DURING the night of November 16th-17th, Katō Kaname, a First-Class Sergeant of the Tenth Company, Mihara Battalion, was commanded to get as near as possible to Suiyen in order to ascertain the position of the enemy and the manner in which the defending forces were disposed. The night was a very dark one, so that it was a work of no small difficulty to follow the road. This very greatly impeded any rapidity of movement on Katō's part, particularly as he did not know the exact whereabouts of the enemy and therefore might at any moment find himself surrounded

with foes. But the Sergeant had a name for great cool courage, and so he and the little handful of men with him went quietly along without fear of consequences, the soldiers having perfect confidence in the skill and pluck of their leader. After great exertions they got near Suiyen and, observing every precaution, stole, unobserved, through the line of pickets. A little farther on they met with a solitary Chinese soldier, who fired at them at a distance of about 50 metres, but without wounding anybody. Nothing daunted, the Sergeant kept on and made a most thorough reconnaissance. On the way back the little band had again to pass through the hostile line of pickets, and again did so in safety, although several shots were fired in their direction. Sergeant Katō's subsequent report was of the greatest value and materially contributed to the successful issue of the next day's fight.

---

## 2.—A TIMELY REINFORCEMENT.

ON the day preceding the taking of Suiyen-ching, the Ōsako Column was advancing towards the doomed town. Among the men forming the Column was Special Sergeant Furusato Eikichi, of the Ninth Company, 6th Regiment. During the fierce skirmish fought that day near Hwangchia-paotse, the scouts under Lieutenant Ōya Kumekichi, commanding the First Sub-company, encountered a fresh body of the enemy at a place a little to the north-west of Hwangchia-paotse. The scouts retreated to the high-ground south-west of the village, about 3000 metres from the Left Wing of the Third Battalion, and, halting there, made a determined resistance. The numbers of the enemy being constantly on the increase, the peril of the little body of Japanese was extreme, and so the Commander ordered Sergeant Furusato to bring up the rest of the Sub-company as a reinforcement. By this time the Chinese numbered between 500-600, and the situation of the scouting party was desperate. But Furusato ran at full speed through the storm of bullets, reached the rest of the Sub-company and brought the men up at double-quick just in time to

save the devoted party. A succession of well-directed volleys was sufficient to drive the enemy back, and the rescuing force did its work thoroughly and well, thanks to Furusato's coolness and despatch.

---

### 3.—IN AMONG THE CANNON.

WHILE the Mihara Column was advancing on the doomed castle, Lieutenant Machida's detachment received the command to occupy an elevated piece of ground to the north of the Yalu River: an order which was promptly carried out. Early the following morning (November 18th), the detachment moved forward covering the right of the Mihara Column. Among the men belonging to this detachment was Isozaki Bunpachi, a first-class private of the Eleventh Company, 22nd Regiment. The enemy had lined their artillery on the right bank of a nameless stream flowing north of Suiyen, while a force was despatched to the opposite bank to hold the elevated ground there, west of the high-road. The two bodies thereupon fired together on the Column now coming up along the narrow way, making things exceedingly warm for the Japanese, who were thus exposed to a double and most galling fire. Here Isozaki showed himself a most gallant and determined fighter, for while advancing he met with a mounted Chinese picket whom he attacked single-handed, capturing both weapons and horse. Later on he met with another picket, this time on foot, and again succeeded in conquering his man. Following closely Isozaki's lead were Sergeant-Major Mima Yoshio; First-Class Sergeants Morimoto Kotarō, Sosogié Kenjirō and Mori Kitarō; Second-Class Sergeant Hirose Chōya; and finally four privates of the first-class: Takechi Tōgorō, Shiro-oka Kingo, Kanaya Mitsu-saburō, and Ōzuka Kingorō. These men, in advance of all the rest, dashed in among the Chinese batteries and by their splendid bravery succeeded in capturing four Krupp field-guns and six battery horses. By silencing these weapons the approach of the Column was greatly facilitated and the loss of life reduced to a minimum. Later on the garrison of Suiyen

was forced to decamp and retreat along the narrow road leading past Mt. Kohtse.

---

#### 4.—UP TO THE CANNON'S MOUTH.

ON the morning of November 18th a body of the Mihara Column dispersed a crowd of Chinese foot and horse on the left bank of a nameless stream not far from Suiyen. The day had not yet fully dawned when a body of Artillery was descried on the opposite bank. It was still too dark to tell whether the Artillery was part of the Ōsako Brigade or belonged to the enemy ; and in the latter case it would be death to go near. Yet reckless of consequences, a second-class private, Shirakata Tomo-ichi by name, ran forward as a scout, until he was no farther than 400 metres from the battery. Here, raising a great shout, he cried, "Are you men of our side? Are you a part of the Japanese Army?" No reply coming he ran still nearer, when suddenly the battery burst into flame and he saw that the gunners were Chinese. Fortunately uninjured, Shirakata rejoined his comrades, none the worse for his daring reconnaissance.

---

#### 5.—SEVEN AGAINST A HUNDRED.

IT was on November 13th that the Third Battalion, 22nd Regiment—Mihara's Column—prepared to attack Suiyen-ching. A private of the first-class, Chikazawa Isakichi, with six other foot-soldiers received orders to stop on the way at Hwangwangtien, there to act as an outpost and signal station. On November 18th, Chikazawa and his men left Hwangwangtien in order to rejoin the Main Column ; and on nearing Kwangchiatien they fell in with above 100 Chinese soldiers, fugitives from the captured castle-town of Suiyen. The little handful of Japanese, completely surrounded by the enemy, expected nothing short of death, yet resolved to die fighting. Keeping close together they fired

round after round at the Chinese horde, killing a number and frightening the rest off. No less than six of the enemy fell to Chikazawa's unerring rifle alone. The skirmish though hot was soon over, and the seven Japanese went on their way to Fung-hwang-ching, not a man being more than slightly wounded. Well might the Chinese attribute the apparent invulnerability of their foes to magic power.

---

## CHAPTER X.

### SKIRMISH BETWEEN RECONNOITRING PARTIES AND BATTLE OF TSAUHO-KAU.

---

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

IN October, 1894, the First Army occupied the castle-towns of Kiulien, Antung and Funghwang; the Ninth Brigade under Major-General Ōshima was stationed at Kiulien, Antung and elsewhere in the vicinity, while the Tenth Brigade commanded by Major-General Tatsumi was at Funghwang. On November 10th, Major-General Tatsumi sent out scouts to learn the whereabouts and strength of the enemy, who had taken up positions on the highroad, not far from Liaoyang and Moukden. After the scouts came a Battalion of the First Infantry Regiment, under Major Imada Tada-ichi. On the 11th, after having passed through Sielitien, Tsingchiahō, Hwangchiatai, Erhtaohwang, Tongyuanpao and Tsauho-kau, the mounted scouts reached Lienshankwan. Here the enemy showed fight and made an attempt to stop farther progress. The scouts dismounted and engaged them on foot, completely discomfiting the Chinese, who fled in disorder. There were no casualties on the part of the Japanese. The places that had been fortified on either side of the road were quickly taken possession of and Lienshankwan promptly occupied. One body of foot-soldiers under Major Imada pressed forward, but the enemy fled northwards without offering any resistance.

Lienshankwan is a hamlet containing not more than forty houses. There are no fields about the place, everything being exceptionally bare and desolate. After taking possession of the place, an attempt was made to pursue the defeated Chinese, but the rapidly falling darkness put a stop to this. Here the little

force of Japanese encamped for the night. The advance body of scouts did succeed in occupying Motienling on the Liaoyang highway, but as this spot was commanded by a low range of hills to the north and would therefore have proved difficult to defend, it was ultimately abandoned.

Shortly before this Major-General Tatsumi had sent Major Imada and Captain Adachi Takemasa forward with one Company of Infantry in the direction of Aiyang-pien-mên, in order to ascertain the condition of the enemy at Kilin. Captain Adachi left Funghwang with his little band on November 9th. On the 13th they marched some thirty miles and came to Aiyang, where they heard that over three thousand Chinese were stationed at a place near by, known as Saimatse. Despite the enormous disparity in numbers, Captain Adachi, with characteristic and reckless bravery, marched straight towards the foe, reaching the place in the afternoon of the same day. The Chinese were, as had been reported, in force, and when the distance between the combatants had been reduced to one thousand metres, the enemy made a dash in the direction of the Japanese. The Captain with his handful of men occupied a slightly elevated ground and fired stinging volleys at the approaching foe; but the latter continued their attack until Captain Adachi deemed it advisable to withdraw. Night closed on the scene and effectually disposed of further action on the part of the Chinese. On the preceding day Captain Hirai Nobuyoshi, who was in command of the scouting party approaching Saimatse from the east, had left Funghwang with one Company of Infantry. He reached Tasie-kau in safety, being wholly ignorant of the straits in which Captain Adachi and his men were. When the day broke, Hirai and his command were surprised by the attack of some eight hundred Chinese Cavalry, and a very severe fight ensued. The Chinese horsemen dismounting and offering to continue the struggle afoot, the Japanese began to fall back. On seeing this, the enemy again mounted and chased the retreating Japanese. A stand was made and the Japanese small-arms repeatedly discharged with deadly precision, yet the enemy came as often again to the assault. Seeing that his handful of devoted men was on the point of being overwhelmed by the foe, Captain Hirai ordered them to



scatter and retreat, and afterwards to reform the column at a safe distance. At this moment Lieutenant Yanagiwara, in command of a section twenty-four men strong, was engaged in a fierce hand-to-hand conflict on the right. The Chinese dashed between them and the rest of the Japanese command, so that they were unable to rejoin their comrades. Lieutenant Yanagiwara then drew off his men and retreated in a different direction, still fighting. Captain Hirai fell back to Maluten-tse, where a precipitous slope prevented the farther approach of the Chinese horsemen, although the Japanese foot-soldiers found no difficulty in ascending the acclivity. The Chinese could only ride aimlessly to and fro at the foot of the slope. But Lieutenant Yanagiwara came back no more!

A Body of Infantry under Major Imada, which had gone



LIEUT.-COLONEL TOMIOKA.

forwards to Lienshankwan, now left Motienling and came once again to Lienshankwan, where they encamped. Deeming the force at Lienshankwan to be numerically insufficient, Major-General Tatsumi sent one Battalion thither under Major Yasumitsu, who was in command of the 2nd Battalion of the 22nd Regiment of Infantry, whose C. O. was Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka Sanzō. When news of Captain Adachi's desperate encounter with the Chinese reached Lienshankwan, Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka at once despatched Captain Katō

Rentarō, with one Company of Infantry, in the indicated direction. Leaving Motienling on the 20th, Captain Katō fell in with the enemy in the neighbourhood of Tsauho-ching. The Chinese here were several thousand strong, and with them the little band of Japanese kept up an unequal combat for three long hours, dusk finally causing hostilities to be suspended. Captain Katō retired to Tongyuanpao, and there encamped for the night. The news of

the skirmish being brought to Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka, he ordered the Captain to maintain his position on the slope of Tsauho-ling. But when the report of what had passed reached Major-General Tatsumi, he intructed Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka to move on to Tsauho-kau on November 23rd, for the General was thoroughly posted in the topography of this place, and knew that it was situated in the narrow neck of a valley and shut in on three sides with mountain-ranges, the only exit being a mountain-road that led eastwards. It was therefore to be feared that Japanese might be taken in the rear.

According to the orders he had received, Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka moved on to Tsauho-kau during the night of November 23rd. Two days later the Chinese appeared to be desirous of making a general assault along the line, the enemy coming from Motien-ling in the west and eastwards from Tsauho-ching. The forces coming from the west of the Japanese position numbered about one thousand horsemen, with two cannon; while the Tsauho-kau contingent was composed of 1000 cavalry, and 4000 infantry, with six cannon. Altogether the Chinese were numerically three times stronger than the Japanese. Moreover, the Chinese were picked troops under the leadership of the famous Tartar General E-ko-tang-á. In no wise disheartened, Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka began to make active preparations for defence. Major Imada was ordered to meet the enemy at Motienling, and make things unpleasant for them by holding the Têngshin-ling ridge, with two Companies of Infantry and two cannon. Major Yasumitsu was instructed to take up a position at Tsauho-ling, and defend it. He had one Battalion and four cannon with him. Two other Companies were kept at Tsauho-kau as a reserve.

The contest at Tsauho-ling was most fierce and prolonged, firing continuing from eleven in the morning until sunset. Very fortunately the Chinese forces at Motienling did not press forward to aid in the attack, and seemed uncertain as to what they should do. In the meantime fighting was discontinued at Tsauho-ching, the loss in killed and wounded being exceptionally heavy on both sides. During the night the enemy quietly fell back, while the Motien-ling contingent encamped at Lichiapu, and did not offer to press on.

After the capture of Kiulien, Marshal Yamagata had caused one separate body to march in the direction of Sutien-ching and Changtien-ching. This forced the enemy in that part of the country to retire to Kwangtien-ching. On November 24th, Colonel Nishijima Sukeyoshi, with two Infantry Battalions, was ordered to proceed in the direction of the Chinese camp. They did so, met and utterly defeated the foe, after which they went on towards Saimatse. Prior to this event, Major-General Tatsumi, who was persuaded that the enemy would make a stand in force at Saimatse, had repeatedly proposed to the Commander-in-Chief to drive the Chinese out of this place. It was at this time that the wished-for order came: he was to storm Saimatse in connection with Colonel Nishijima's Party. The following General Order was then given:—Lieut.-Colonel Tomoyasu Harunobu,



MAJOR OKAMI.

Commander of the 12th Infantry Regiment, with one Battalion of Infantry under Major Tomita, one Battery of Artillery under Captain Yamana and one Squadron of Cavalry under Captain Toyobe, is take lead the van. Major-General Tatsumi, in Command of the Main Body, will follow with one Battalion of Infantry under Major Okami, another under Major Handa, the Ambulance Corps, Commissariat, Train, etc. Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka was further ordered to make a flank attack on Saimatse, if possible, marching thither from Tsauho-

kau. The day before the troops started on this expedition, the news of Tomioka's gallant fight at Tsauho-kau reached Head Quarters, and so the necessity of the proposed expedition was made more than ever apparent.

All arrangements being completed, the little army left Funghwang at 7 a.m., November 26th; reaching Sanchia-tse at dusk, they encamped for the night. On the following day,

the troops marched through a blinding snowstorm to Maluten-tse. The snow fell continuously and drifted, so that the march on November 28th, when Shwenyangliu-tse was reached, was exceptionally severe. Many poor fellows dropped out of the line and died by the wayside. It was not until November 29th that the final start was made for Saimatse. On the van reaching their destination and just as Major-General Tatsumi was about entering in force, a mounted messenger came and reported that Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka had intended entering Saimatse with his little command after defeating the enemy at Tsauho-ching; but when getting within four miles of the village his Rear Column had been attacked, and he had therefore been compelled to fall back Tsauho-kau. After this another horsemen came with the news that the enemy had vacated Saimatse; it was, he affirmed, a village of no special importance, containing not more than 200 houses. A third cavalry-man then brought the welcome tidings that the Nishijima party had successfully entered and occupied the village. Leaving the place in the hands of its captor, Major-General Tatsumi at once resolved to make for Tsauho-kau, the scene of so many desperate encounters. The order of the march was changed as follows:—A Battalion of Infantry under Major Okami formed the van, another Battalion under Major Tomita, one Squadron of Cavalry and one Battery composing the Main Body. That day they marched twenty miles through the heavy snow and over fearful roads, entering Tsauho-ching at nightfall, where they were quartered in the houses of the villagers. A strict look-out was kept and pickets posted. Some officers were, after dusk, despatched to find out what had become of the Advance Column. They brought back the next morning the news that Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka's command, which had turned back from Saimatse to Tsauho-kau, as already described, not having suffered any great loss, had again gone on to Tsauho-ching, and that they were encamped at a distance of some eight miles; moreover the enemy were reported to be at a place called Peishui-chih, some  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles to the north. On hearing this Major-General Tatsumi despatched Lieut.-Colonel Tomoyasu and Major Okami, with the Advance column, to dislodge the foe. This they did very effectually, afterwards going to Tsaichia-hwan. Just at this moment the Battalion

commanded by Major Yasumitsu, forming the Advance Column of the Tomioka Contingent, appeared to the left of Major Okami's Battalion. Thus reinforced, Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka was ordered to go back to Tsauho-kau with the remainder of his Regiment and warn the Japanese forces still there. The Main Body now proceeded in the direction taken by the Advance Column, while Lieut.-Colonel Tomoyasu struck off to the left of Tsaichia-hwan and posted his men on a hill. The enemy, stationed on the highest hill to the north, then began to fire at the approaching Japanese, but without doing much harm. After a desultory fire of three hours' duration, the short winter's day came to an end and the attack was given over for the time being. At the time the Main Body had advanced close to Tsaichia-hwan. For some reason or other the enemy mistook some companies of their own for Japanese and began fighting among themselves, the troops stationed on the hill-tops firing on the advancing Columns below. Great confusion resulting and knowing that the Japanese were steadily progressing in their direction, the Chinese gave way and rapidly deserted their posts. In this encounter the Japanese had only six men wounded, while the Chinese left twenty-five dead behind them. On the morning of the following day, December 1st, a handful of Japanese Cavalry pursued the fleeing enemy northwards for a distance of about eight miles, cutting down many stragglers. The Chinese finally fell back on Hongkinkung, where the Main Column of the enemy was reported to be at least five thousand strong. The troops who had fought on the hills formed the rear.

Major-General Tatsumi hereupon returned to Funghwang with his victorious troops. The place was reached on December 5th.

---

## II.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

### 1.—SERGEANT MATSUDA AND HIS SCOUTS.

ON November 20th, the Sixth Company (less one Sub-company) of the 22nd Regiment, set out from Tsauho-ching for Saimatse,

in order to thoroughly reconnoitre the enemy's position. At 3.30 p. m., while on the road Tsauho-ching, the detachment suddenly fell in with a large force of Chinese numbering over 1000 foot and 200 horse. Meantime First-Class Sergeant Matsuda Makoto, with a few soldiers, had gone on to Tishong-shan, south-east of Tsauho-ching. The Main Body of the Company deployed both wings very slowly, without coming to an attack; whereas the enemy, forming a semi-circle, appeared eager to surround the little band. At last about 200 Chinese troopers sprang forwards, with the evident intention of demolishing the detachment. They were, however, greeted with a steady and withering fire. So splendid and regular were the volleys that the enemy withdrew in disorder, leaving many dead or wounded on the field. The attack intended for the rear of the Company's flank, as well as that directed against the Right Wing, were similarly rendered abortive. From this hour—3.30 p. m.—until 6.30 p. m., the mass of Chinese fronting the Main Body of the Japanese troops steadily drew nearer, but without offering to recommence hostilities. As evening closed in the scouts slowly retreated, having very fully accomplished their work, and with very small loss.

It was on November 21st that the Sixth Company at Tsauho-ling received a warning that an attack in force might be expected from Tsauho-ching. At the same time the Second Company of the 22nd Regiment marched into the village and united with the Sixth Company. On November 25th, when some 3000 of the enemy attacked Tsauho-ling, the Sixth Company, then doing picket-duty, had to receive the brunt of the attack and continue fighting until re-inforcements came up. At that time every file in the Third Sub-company of the Sixth Company was fighting independent of the others and for its own hand; for the Company had spread out in open order on the elevated ground they held, in order to deceive the enemy as to their real strength. Here Sergeant Matsuda and his men fought with really admirable endurance and energy. With their fierce fire they stopped the approach of a multitudinous Chinese Column, made the enemy falter and finally deploy on both sides of the hill in a place and at a time when and where such a manœuvre was exceedingly difficult to execute and could not be promptly carried out, thus giving the defending Japanese ample

opportunity to arrange themselves to the best advantage on the on the slope above. The enemy, however, steadily increased in numbers and finally surrounded the Third Sub-company on the elevated ground, leaving only one small outlet in the rear. The Chinese employed Krupp guns and by their use disabled many men in the devoted band. At last the Sub-company ran out of cartridges, and this at a time when 500 Chinese were within 200 metres of their front and slowly closing down upon them. At this critical moment Sergeant Matsuda, with calm authority, so encouraged the soldiers and directed the fire of their last bullets that the Chinese finally drew off discomfited and the Japanese were left unconquered in the position they had so well defended.

---

## 2.—PRIVATE SHIRAIISHI.

AT 10 a. m. of November 25th, the Eighth Company of the 22nd Regiment was engaged in a fierce conflict with four or times their own number of Chinese, the latter being led by the redoubtable Tartar General E-ko-tang-â. The scene of the battle was Tsauho-ling, and in the line of pickets was Shiraishi, a private of the first-class. The Eighth Company was in the foremost line of defense, very greatly exposed to the enemy's fire, and without shelter of any kind whatever. Taking advantage of this, the Chinese gradually extended their forefront and poured volley after volley in the rapidly thinning ranks of the Japanese. Finding that the men were losing heart under these trying circumstances, Shiraishi did all he could to rally them and help his Lieutenant and Sergeants keep them showing a bold front to the already triumphing foe. Just then a bullet hit him in the breast. Despite the severity of his injury, Shiraishi continued to load and fire his gun, until his superior officer noticed the blood trickling down his coat and ordered him to go to the rear. On being asked if the wound was a bad one, he gasped out "*Daijôbu,*" or "It's all right!" But before noon had come, he had succumbed to the fatal bullet.

---

## 3.—RESCUING THE WOUNDED.

During the occasion of the Sixth Company's reconnaissance about Saematse, Kadoda Ikichi, a private of the first-class, and Okabayashi Kumago, a second-class trooper, noticed that two or three wounded Japanese soldiers were still lying on the field near Tsauho-ching, where the Main Body of the Company had had fought so desperately with overwhelmingly superior numbers of Chinese, and whence they had retreated upon night-fall. Calling up three other privates, Kadoda and Okabayashi went back to the field to succour the poor fellows if possible. The enemy, who still swarmed thereabouts, caught sight of the little group, and with characteristic Chinese disregard for the laws of humanity and civilised warfare—if indeed any warfare be worthy of this epithet—began firing on the rescuers, approaching as near as 50 or 60 metres. The five Japanese expected nothing less than death, yet were loath to relinquish their task. Raising the wounded men to their shoulders they retired as rapidly as possible, the attacking Chinese several times getting within 20-30 metres of them, but no nearer. Three were wounded, but not severely. It was a gallant act.

---

## 4.—EIN SIEBENSCHLÄFER.

(*A Sound Sleeper*).

AMONG those sent under Lieutenant Ōkubo on to Motien-ling in order to reconnoitre, was Ōtani Tamiji, a third-class private of the Third Company, First Battalion, 22nd Regiment of the line. On October 16th he was one of the Advance Guard of the right flank. When his Sub-company met with the enemy in the lofty pass of Motien-ling—the “Heaven-scraping” Pass, as the name denotes—Ōtani was the first to advance against the foe, closely followed by 5 or 6 other determined men. The enemy were compelled to retreat. Again, during the hot conflict at Tsauho-ling, which lasted well on into the dark wintry night, Ōtani



was present and conspicuous for his bravery. After the battle was over, the intense cold became very hard to bear, especially as snow was falling heavily. So the commanding officer had the men kindle a large fire, around which they tried to warm their half-frozen bodies. The enemy being still all around, wakefulness and a strict watch were of the utmost importance; so every one was startled, a few minutes later, to hear a sonorous snore on one side. On turning around the men laughed heartily to find Ōtani leaning on his rifle in a snow-drift and sound asleep. Not all the Chinese in Manchuria could keep him from that one brief delicious nap!

---

## CHAPTER XI.

### THE TAKING OF TOMUH-CHING.

---

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

AFTER the capture of Suiyen on November 18th by the Columns commanded by Major-General Ōsako of the Third Division and Major Mihara of the Fifth Division, the men of the Third Division went into camp at Antung, Tatung-kau and Taku-shan. It was, however, planned to advance on Tomuh-ching by the Suiyen road. On the night of December 8th, Lieut.-General Katsura, Commander of the Third Division, reached Suiyen, and there learned that the larger part of the enemy's forces was stationed at Tomuh-ching, though smaller bodies had been sent on to Tsinchia-hotse and Ertao-hotse. In all, the Chinese were reported to be about 5000 strong.

The Japanese troops were now divided into three: the Main, and Right and Left Columns. Of these the first was to follow the highroad to Tomuh-ching; the third was to march eastwards and approach the bourg from the east; while the second was to proceed from Suiyen to Kaiping and there act as a protection to the left flank of the Main Body. Both Wings were enjoined to beat back the Chinese at Funghwang-ching on the right and Kaiping on the left, thus rendering the approach of the Main Column easier and facilitating the operations against Tomuh-ching. Shortly after noon of December 9th the Right Column, under Major-General Ōsako, set out on their cold and arduous march, just one day in advance of the Main Body: for this Column had to approach the objective by way of Tapeng-ling and the Niushin Mountains,

thus making a considerable detour northwards along a road quite different from that to be taken by the Main Column. The Left Wing or Column set out at almost the same time, the intention being to reconnoitre the condition and number of the enemy at Kaiping, following the road past Sietang-wo-tse and Hôlu-kau to the little river Kanma. On December 10th, at 8. 30 a. m., the Main Column started, under the personal command of Lieut.-General Katsura and his Staff. The van was led by Major-General Ōshima, who set out one hour and a half earlier. The



MAJOR-GENERAL ŌSHIMA  
HISANAŌ.

day was bitterly cold and the snow deep, and to add to the discomfort of the little army a fierce wind kept blowing right in their teeth. After a most fatiguing march, the forces crossed the snowy peak of Mt. Tapeng-ling at 5 p. m., just as the short winter day came to an end. The weather now became if anything worse, yet it was impossible to halt at such an altitude; so the wearied men pressed forward to Wangchia-paotse, where they bivouacked for the night: the Advance Column stopping at Wanghwangtien, two miles farther on. At dawn of the 11th the Division left the hamlet, the

van setting out from Wanghwangtien at the same time. Both bodies took the direction of Siaoku-shan. Here the Cavalry detachment branched off in search of the short cut leading from Sanchenhwang to Tomuh-ching, intending, if possible, to thereby communicate with the Column under Major-General Ōsako. At 10 a. m., as the Ōshima Column drew near Chiapongtien, some mounted scouts came back with the news that, while there were no Chinese soldiers to be seen at Erhtao-hotse, south of Tomuch-ching, there was a body of the enemy at Lung-fung-wang, near Ertao-hotse. This was evidently the enemy's picket-line, and as the Japanese scouts had come into sight a brisk exchange of rifle-

shots had ensued. Major-General Ōshima, on hearing of this, at once despatched two Companies of Infantry as Advance Column to the place in question, who shortly afterwards came up with 250 Chinese foot-soldiers and horsemen at a place about 650 metres from Ertao-hotse. A large force, probably the enemy's Main Body, was visible on the side of a hill, 1500 metres distant from the Advance Column and west of Yingshu-kau. The enemy's two wings were composed of about 550 infantry each, the numbers gradually swelling as the Japanese drew near. Firing now began, and as it did the Japanese line spread out and answered with fatal effect. In a little while all was over, the enemy withdrawing towards Yingshu-kau, while the Japanese occupied Ertao-hotse without being further molested. The skirmish though brief was very hot, and ended at one o'clock in the afternoon.

Prior to this engagement, a body of picked men under Lieutenant Aoki Orinosuke had been sent out to report on the condition and direction of the roads near Yingshu-kau. The detachment branched off to the left after crossing the chilly summit of Siaokushan and reached Peitsu-ao-kau, this being the road to be followed thereafter by the Japanese Left. Here they saw a large body of the enemy, at least 3000 strong, composed of Infantry and Cavalry, who, with several guns, were making active preparations to dispute the pass. On reporting this fact, the Second Battalion of the Seventh Regiment was sent thither. This force went round to the left, taking the hidden road from Ertao-paotse, and thus outflanked the enemy. On opening a heavy fire at the foe they scattered in confusion, the attack coming to them, as usual, from a wholly unexpected quarter. Leaving many dead and wounded on the snowy field, the Chinese retreated towards Tomuh-ching. It had been, on this day, the intention of the Japanese vanguard to halt at Makau, but reports came in to the effect that the enemy had occupied the highlands south of Tomuh-ching and south-west of Yingshu-kau. It was therefore deemed advisable to deliver an attack against the enemy's Right Wing, taking advantage of the formation of the ground. During the night the idea was to take the road on the left, beat back the Chinese line of outposts and carry Yingshu-kau by storm. At dawn of December 12th, however, it was reported that the enemy were in full retreat from Yingshu-kau and

making for Tomuh-ching, being evidently persuaded of their inability to hold the former place. The Division therefore relinquished the idea of going on to Yingshu-kau and determined to follow the highway to Tomuh-ching and there and then deliver the attack intended for the former locality. The van now kept to the highroad, the Main Column following at a little distance. A detachment under Colonel Aibara Tsune, Commander of the Nineteenth Regiment of Infantry, had been sent to intercept the retreat of the enemy by marching from Makau to Yingshu-kau, which lay between the former village and Tomuh-ching. On their way thither they met with a mob of Chinese a little to the east of Peitsu-ao-kau, and a sharp skirmish ensued, with the usual result. The Chinese were utterly demoralised and fled in all directions, leaving two field-guns behind them. The Division thereupon entered and took possession of Tomuh-ching.

With regard to the Japanese Right, under Major-General Ōsako, it had encountered the enemy in force at Hwahonglau, but after some hard fighting had defeated them. Thence to Tomuh-ching was but a step, and now the Column began to storm the bourg from the east, while other bodies of the Division attacked from the south. A Battalion commanded by Colonel Aibara also assaulted the castle from the south-west, so that Tomuh-ching was literally besieged on three sides simultaneously. As the Japanese drew near the Chinese prepared to fight hard, and fought well—be it said to their honour. But nothing could withstand the Japanese attack, coming as it did from three sides at once; and, at 10 a. m., the Japanese were in undisputed possession of this important bourg.

It is astonishing that the Japanese should have accomplished what they did in the face of the large numbers of the enemy—2000 at Yingshu-kau, 3000 at the place where the Ōsako Column had fought, and over 4,500 in the Main Body. It must also be remembered that the weather was of the most uncompromising description, the thermometer far below freezing-point, and the wind fierce and bitter. The moral effect of the signal victories hitherto achieved was, in fine, the prime factor in the problem, not to speak of the superb tactics of the Japanese generals, who nearly always succeeded in outflanking the enemy. The Chinese never

seemed to know from what quarter the next attack would come.

After endeavoring to pacify the alarmed inhabitants of Tomuh-ching and the vicinity,—whose idea of the Japanese seems to have been based on the lines of the man-eating ogre of our nursery days—two or three Companies were left as a guard at Tomuh-ching, the rest of the forces following hotly after the retreating enemy, towards Haiching. The van had several minor skirmishes with the fleeing Chinese who, every now and then, turned round to beat off their relentless pursuers. Yingching-tse was taken and thereafter the Division marched on to Yangchiatien, where it halted for the time being.

In the engagement at Tomuh-ching the Japanese losses were only seven killed and wounded, while the enemy's losses were 104, nearly all of these being killed.

---

#### II.—A BRAVE SCOUT.

ON December 11th, just at the time of the battle near Erhta-hotse, the Eighth Company of the Seventh Regiment, Third Division, was drawn up in readiness for a renewal of hostilities; for though the enemy in front had fallen back on Tomuh-ching, yet there were numbers of Chinese soldiers still at Peihtsu-ao-kau, on the Japanese left. Among those despatched to reconnoitre the condition of the enemy, was Ueda Sakichirō, a private of the first-class, belonging to the Eighth Company just referred to. On reaching his destination, he with two other soldiers being in advance of the remaining scouts, the snow covering the road was found here and there tinged with blood. Not at all deterred from further reconnaissance by this sinister sight, the three men still pressed on until they came in sight of a solitary farm-house, whence a gleam of light was visible. Climbing over the fence, Ueda forced his way into the dwelling, but only to find it deserted. Further search elicited the fact that the enemy had decamped to the last man. After a most exhaustive and exhausting reconnaissance, Ueda returned to make an interesting and valuable report. With

a few men he then went on to the next village and took possession of it until the troops should come up. When it is remembered that all this was done in the dead of a bitter winter's night, the deed becomes the more noteworthy.

---

## CHAPTER XII.

### THE CAPTURE OF HAICHING.

---

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

As already narrated, after having effectually driven the enemy westwards from the neighbourhood of Tomuh-ching, the Third Division halted for the night of December 12th at Yang-chiatien, a village of minor importance. The cold was intense and the roads knee-deep with snow, rendering marching exceptionally wearisome. Yet the Japanese might not falter; without pause they must follow after the retreating foe. "General Winter," in whose prowess the Chinese had placed such hope, was proving incapable of keeping back the steady advance of the invading Army. And this was all the more remarkable as the men composing the First Army Corps were all natives of the central or southern provinces of Japan and therefore accustomed to mild winters, in which snow is the exception rather than the rule. These men were now called upon to brave the rigors of the Manchurian winter, fully as severe if not severer than that fatal season which proved so destructive to the boundless ambition of the great Napoleon and strewed miles of ground with the corpses of valiant Frenchmen. Among the Japanese there were, of course, many cases of frost-bite—hands, noses, or feet being destroyed by the bitter cold—and many a poor fellow found in the snow a winding-sheet. But there was no idea of "going into winter-quarters"; each victory had to be followed up promptly by another, as each defeat of the Chinese meant their repulsion westwards and the nearer approach of that great goal of the Japanese Armies—Peking, the capital of China.

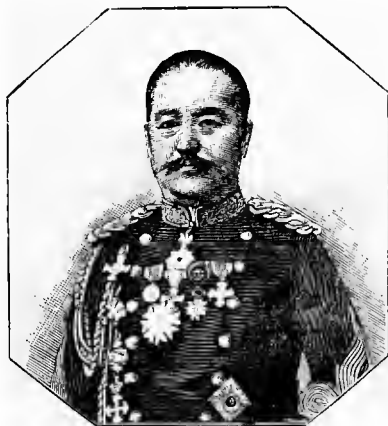


And so, early in the morning of December 13th, the Division set out from Yangchiatien, having determined to capture Haiching on that day. A Battalion of mounted scouts left Yingching-tse at 7 a. m., taking the Haiching road. They were ordered to reconnoitre the enemy about Newchwang and Yingkow, as well as to cover the Division's left flank. At 9.40 a. m. the foremost ranks of the Advance Column reached Pochia-paotse, which is only two miles from Haiching.

Situated south-west of Moukden, Haiching is a strongly walled castle-town or bourg on the road from Liangyang to Kaiping. The castle itself is square, with a perimetre of 4000 metres, and protected by massive walls 20 feet high. At each corner there is a gate-way surmounted by battlements, through which the townspeople pass on their way into or from the town. The latter is level with the exception of a small hill in the south-eastern suburb, which rises to a height sufficient to command the surrounding scenery. Just beyond the castle are four isolated hills, standing between 550 and 2000 metres' distance from the castle. The one to the south-east is called Kiaomai-shan; that on the west, Liangchia-shan; the north-western one, Hwangshi-shan; while the north-eastern hill is known as Shwanglung-shan. South-west of the town, and quite near it, flows the Haichow River, the left bank running along a vast plain. The bourg is thus naturally strongly protected by land and water; and its capture moreover meant the cutting off of all communication with the Chinese forces at Kaiping. By taking this town, finally, the Japanese could readily communicate with the Second Army Corps, which was coming northward under Lieut.-General Yamaji, after taking Kinchow and Foochow. The enemy, when beaten, could only fly westwards, the southern, eastern, and northern roads being completely blocked by the Japanese.

On the Japanese van reaching Pochia-paotse, the enemy began preparing for a strong defense. About one thousand men were posted on Kiaomai-shan, while six hundred others took up their station on Liangchia-shan to the west. The Chinese Artillery was ranged along the north-western slope of Kiaomai-shan, and, at 10 a. m., opened fire, 20 minutes after the first Japanese had made their appearance. They had four field-guns at this

spot, and evidently intended to "make things hot" for the invading forces. The Japanese also learned that there was a large body of the enemy due south of the bourg. From all this Major-General Ōshima Hisanao concluded that the Chinese line of defence stretched from Haiching to Kiaomai-shan, and he deemed it necessary to break this up in the first place. The First Battalion of Infantry and the Second Battalion of Field-Artillery, from the Third Regiment, were now sent to deliver a front attack against the bourg and town, while Colonel Aibara, commanding the Nineteenth Regiment, was despatched to dislodge the enemy from Kiaomai-shan. Taking only the Second Battalion of his Regiment with him, Colonel Aibara proceeded towards the indicated hill at a rapid pace, while the detachment sent to attack Haiching passed across the hollow road before the bourg and got within 2000 metres of the southern part of the town. At this moment, enormous numbers of the enemy appeared on the slopes of Kiaomai-shan and south of Haiching, directly in the path of the oncoming Japanese. Seeing this, Lieut.-General Katsura, who had now come up, determined to carry the bourg by storm. He therefore directed the Ōsako Brigade to go around Kiaomai-shan and attack the enemy in the rear; while he ordered the van to advance and fire upon the Chinese coming out of the southern portion of the town. Major-General Ōshima, who was well on the road to the all-important hill, then ordered Colonel Miyoshi Nariyuki, Commander of the Seventh Regiment of Infantry, to seize a hamlet about 500 metres distant from the hollow road, and thence deliver a front attack on the Chinese. This order the Colonel passed on to Captain Yamaguchi Eiji of the Fourth Company, who, calling loudly on his men to follow, dashed for-



LIEUT.-GENERAL KATSURA.

ward and speedily captured the little village. Here a halt was commanded, much to the disappointment of the men, who were eager to press onward. Twelve mountain-guns belonging to the Japanese Artillery then began a deadly fire against the dark masses of the enemy on the snowy slopes of Kiaomai-shan, the Japanese gunners behaving as coolly and unconcernedly as if on parade, instead of being engaged in a hazardous artillery duel. Their fire was tremendously effective, each shell mowing down scores of Chinese. The enemy began to waver—then to retreat. Major-General Ōshima now gave the command to “Charge!” as did Captain Yamaguchi to his impatient Company. With loud cheers they rushed up the slope; as they approached the Chinese melted away before them, and not a man remained but the dead and dying to receive that impetuous charge.

Near the bourg, however, the Japanese met with greater resistance, the Chinese being fully aware of the importance attaching to the possession of the town. The First and Second Companies of the First Battalion, with Major Naitō at their head, had been ordered to charge the enemy at the town-gate, at the same time as the First Battalion of the Nineteenth Regiment assaulted the castle. About 100 Chinese horse and foot at the south gate did what they could to repel the attack; but when Colonel Miyoshi gave the word to charge the foe at the bayonet's point the enemy began to falter and then turned round to fly. The two Companies, flushed with victory, followed at full speed after the retreating foe and soon reached the northern end of the town, which they carried by storm. The Third and Fourth Companies, which had come up as a reinforcement, now drove the enemy from the slopes of Hwangshih-shan and Shwanglung-shan, 2000 metres north of the town. The Division then entered the castle from the southern gate, despite the strong resistance of the Chinese at this point. A detachment under Colonel Aibara and the Ōshima Brigade also forced their way through the eastern gate; and so Haiching was taken. It was just eleven o'clock in the forenoon when the town fell.

Several bodies of Cavalry and Infantry were at once sent in pursuit of the fugitive Chinese, one detachment taking the Liang-yang road, while another made for Newchwang. Pickets having

been posted around the captured town, the Division at once took up its quarters in Haiching, which, properly defended, ought to have been impregnable.

The total number of the enemy in and about Haiching was estimated at 9000; of whom about 5500-6000 fled in the direction of Liangyang, the remainder taking the Newchwang road. The Japanese losses were only four men of the Sixth Brigade wounded; the Chinese had at least 100 killed and wounded, but the exact number was never ascertained.

---

## II.—SPECIAL PROTECTION ACCORDED TO CHRISTIANS.

LIEUT.-GENERAL KATSURA TARŌ showed himself, from first to last, eager to protect not only the lives and property of the foreign residents in the Chinese towns and cities, but also the welfare of the native Christians and all peaceably disposed citizens. Thus when Haiching had been definitely taken, outposts were stationed at various places in the neighbourhood, charged with the duty of reassuring the natives and maintaining good order among them. One detachment of the Advance Column was engaged in work of this description, and the men were specially enjoined to suffer no harm to come to any shrine or temple. In the town itself was a Christian (Roman Catholic) Church, and here Lieut.-General Katsura posted special sentinels. The officiating priest, a French missionary, was at the time in Newchwang, and to him Lieut.-General Katsura made Lieut.-Colonel Muraki Masayoshi write a letter in French, assuring him that the Japanese would accord special protection to the church and the native converts. A letter was also sent to Mr. J. Frederick Bandinel, Honorary Japanese Consul at Newchwang, couched in very much the same tone, and affirming the Japanese desire to protect the lives and property of foreigners. These letters were most gratefully replied to by the recipients, the missionary in especial thanking the Japanese General for his great kindness to the little flock in Haiching.

---

## III.—THE GREAT COLD AT HAICHING.

THE cold during this middle part of the December month, is spoken of as having been intense, the winter being unusually severe even for Manchuria. The difficulties of the march were thereby enormously increased, sentinel and picket duty in such an arctic temperature being particularly trying. Yet the soldiers had to rise with the dawn and march long hours through the drifted snow, exposed to the bitter winds that howled sadly among the hills, and then, tired out as they were, combat with many times their own number of Chinese, on whom the cold seemed to weigh less heavily, they being for the most part to the manner born. The greatest cold was experienced at Wangchia-putse, a hundred miles farther north. Even at midday the surface-snow showed no signs of melting, and the tracks of gun-carriages or horses' hoofs remained visible for weeks. The long journey caused the Japanese Army to have a very wild appearance, with their begrimed, unshaven faces. Underneath their hoods the beard would freeze to the fur with the congealing breath, so that it was often impossible to move the head without tearing out the beard by the roots. Many had their ears and feet literally frozen off; many others fell to rise no more. Scores of horses shared the same fate. But never was a soldier heard to complain. However cold without, the heart was warm with loyalty and enthusiasm, and this kept the men from succumbing to their privations and the, to them, wholly unknown severity of the climate. Thus they met and conquered the enemy's multitudes, despite obstacles from which, humanly speaking, even the bravest might well shrink.

---

## IV.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

## I.—SERGEANT MORISUGI AND HIS MEN.

IN the attack on the castle-town, the First Battalion of the Seventh Infantry Regiment, led the assault from the south. The Third Sub-company formed the van at the time, and by dint of

hard fighting made the enemy fly in a northerly direction. Sergeant Morisugi, commanding the first file of this Sub-company, was foremost with his men. Although the majority of the Chinese had already taken to flight, there still remained a number, concealed in and about the walls, who kept up a galling fire on the Japanese. The attacking forces being scattered, the Sergeant had to collect and rally the men; so, resorting to a ruse, he called out loudly, "Here is our Sub-Lieutenant: come quickly to his aid!" This was sufficient to bring the men together and on with a rush; and in a few minutes later they were in possession of the northern gate and shooting down all opponents.

Later on, it was discovered that numbers of the late garrison of Haiching were in a village not far off. Despite the fact of the enemy's being under cover while they were in the open, and notwithstanding the depth of the freshly fallen snow and the many drifts obstructing the path, Sergeant Morisugi and his men pressed forward and dislodged the foe, after a most gallant fight.

---

## 2.—HOW A RIVER WAS FORDED.

DURING the march of the Sixth Company, 19th Regiment, with their Battalion against the enemy at Kiaomai-shan, they came to a broad stream which appeared quite unfordable. This was a most perplexing piece of business; and the Captain sent word on to the First Sub-company that some one should be despatched to find out, if possible, the depth of the stream, and whether it was really fordable or not. But before this order reached the Sub-company in question, Katō Jutarō, a private of the second-class, had set off, quite unsolicited, at a quick pace for the river. Walking far out into the current in several places, he finally discovered a good ford, and came back to report the result of his most praiseworthy investigation. During his reconnaissance Katō had been constantly exposed to the hostile fire, but fortunately without receiving any injury. Surely, the deed was great! We must remember that the snow was very deep, and the cold so

intense that even those out of the water could scarcely endure the arctic temperature. When Katō finally emerged from the river, his clothes were frozen stiff, so that he seemed clad in an icy armor. His feet, too, had lost all sensation. That the Japanese were enabled to ford the stream and thereafter repulse the enemy, is due in the first instance to Katō's courage and loyal endurance.

---

### 3.—PRINCELY ENDURANCE.

AMONG the officers who followed the removal of the Staff Quarters of the Third Army Division from Antung to Haiching, was H. I. H. Prince Kan-in, Staff-Major of Cavalry. The road



H. I. H. KAN-IN.

(The scene at the base depicts the Prince leading his horse across the mountains during a snow-storm).

followed by the officers was mountainous and generally obscured by driving snowstorms. The cold was inexpressibly severe, and there were absolutely no conveniences even for officers of the highest rank, especially in the matter of lodging. Prince Kan-in none the less never exhibited the least sign of fatigue or distress, and roughed it with the other Staff-officers with the utmost goodwill. The night of December 7th, His Imperial Highness passed at Kaulien-â, a wayside hamlet, in a hut with open windows. Prince Kan-in slept soundly on a few bundles of millet-straw, the best makeshift obtainable for a couch. The next day the road was, if anything, worse than before, precipitous and slippery, men and horses constantly falling to the ground in consequence. The officers were one and all compelled to dismount: an example cheerfully followed by the Prince, who trudged along over the icy drifts, leading his horse and apparently in the best of spirits. The Prince had only one thin rain-coat to protect him from the bitter Manchurian winter; yet he kept perfectly well the whole time. His high spirits and manly endurance were infectious, filling the hearts of his brother officers with loyal enthusiasm.

---



## CHAPTER XIII.

### THE STRUGGLE AT FUNGHWANG-CHING.

---

#### I—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

THE early days of December, 1894, were bitterly cold, the severe Manchurian season being far beyond anything to which the Japanese had been accustomed in their own country. This fact the Chinese had all along hoped would serve them in good stead; so now, after Major-General Tatsumi had returned in triumph from Tsaoho-kau, the enemy resolved upon making a counter-attack and repossessing themselves, if possible, of that important strategical stronghold, Funghwang (literally "Phoenix"). The struggle here was one of the fiercest in the war, and, being numerically far superior to the Japanese, the enemy for a time offered most stubborn opposition, although they did not, as they had expected, succeed in making the Japanese retrace their steps.

Knowing that the Chinese in force were lurking on the outskirts of the occupied territory, the Commander-in-Chief feared that the hostile troops might prove a serious obstacle to the westward progress of the Third Army Division. This was on the road to Haiching, having come from Siuyen *via* Tomuh-ching. It was deemed expedient to dislodge the enemy from Motienling for this purpose, the attack upon Haiching being thereby rendered a much easier undertaking. So, on December 9th, Major-General Tatsumi divided the troops under his command in two parts: the one to stay behind and act as garrison of Funghwang; the other to proceed in the indicated direction. The latter body at once set out for

Lienshankwan and Motien-ling. They made ten miles on this day, stopping for the night at a place called Sielitien. On the following day, Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka, in command of the Advance Column, marched on towards Seulitien. His forces were composed of one Squadron of Cavalry under Captain Toyobé Shinsaku, one Battalion of Infantry under Major Mihara Shigeo, and one Company of Engineers commanded by Captain Ōno Katon. At nine o'clock in the forenoon, just as they had reached Hwangchiatai, they suddenly came across the enemy proceeding in force to the contemplated attack on Funghwang. But beyond desultory skirmishing nothing of any serious note occurred, the Japanese waiting for the Main Body to come up before offering any degree of resistance to the oncoming Chinese.

The scene was a tolerably wide mountain gorge, the peaks on either side rising to an altitude of 250 odd metres, the space between the hills ranging from 1300 up to 2000 metres. A small stream ran through this narrow valley, swampy fields being on either bank. Where the stream made a bend or curve the passage between the hills was broadest, but in no case was there any place where a battle might be fought out: at best, skirmishes were all that was possible. Relying upon the natural advantages of the situation, the enemy kept their position and formation intact. In the mean time the Japanese Advance Column took possession of the slopes on either side of the gorge, leaving only a small party in the valley itself. Shortly after mid-day the foremost part of the Main Body drew into sight. Quickly grasping the situation, Major-General Tatsumi ordered Major Mihara to occupy the heights on the right and make an attack on the Chinese Left Wing; while Major Yasumitsu was sent to take the hillside on the left and thence assault the other Chinese wing. At this moment the Japanese Artillery came up. The enemy had two cannon, which fired percussion shell only; while the Japanese guns were time-fused shrapnel, and thus vastly superior. As the Chinese Right began to move, Major Yasumitsu's Battalion at once rushed down the slope toward the enemy's foremost line of battle, where the cannon were stationed. The second line of battle, however, seemed to have determined upon a decisive encounter, and here the fighting grew ever fiercer and hotter. Yasumitsu's men, seeing that the time

had come for an impetuous charge, now made their way into the enemy's slowly yielding ranks, bayonetting all opposers. In another moment the enemy's Left Wing began to give way, and Major-General Tatsumi at once ordered the Reserve Battalion under Major Imada to charge all along the wavering line. In a few minutes more the Chinese Main Body was in utter confusion, and the vanquished forces began to retreat slowly and sullenly, every now and then turning to confront their hotly pursuing victors, while seeking the elevated ground. Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka chased the enemy as far as Tongyuanpao, where the last stragglers disappeared. The conflict was over at half-past five in the afternoon.

The number of Chinese who took part in this sharp engagement was not less than 3500. They had two cannon. Their dead and wounded amounted to about 430, while the Japanese losses were sixty-one in all, including three officers who were badly hurt. The enemy left behind them 107 guns, 10,000 rounds of ammunition, five flags, one Japanese sword, any quantity of sheepskin coats, and a small number of captives.

Soon after Major-General Tatsumi had left Funghwang-ching, the outposts of the little garrison left behind reported an unusual stir and the probability of an immediate attack being made by the Chinese. On December 12th Colonel Tomoyasu Nobuharu formed a line of defence,—bodies of picked men being stationed all along it—some 4000 metres long. This line ran from Haotse-kau on the right across the slopes of Mt. Tienchêng; then over the Saimatse road on to Tienchia-paotse and the high ground to the north of this place. At Haotse-kau was the Battalion commanded by Major Okami Masayoshi, whose pickets could communicate with the Battalion under Major Tomita Harukabe. The Saematse road was guarded by the Handa Battalion. Warn-



COLONEL TOMOYASU.

ed by the reported approach of the foe, a Battalion of Infantry, commanded by Major Yamaguchi Keizō, came up from Tungshan-ching, and formed the Reserve Force. A body of the Okami Battalion was thence sent on to the Moukden road, in order to intercept the enemy if they should come from that direction. Mounted scouts under Sub-Lieutenant Hatano were despatched along the Kilin road; others again to the highway leading to Saematse, Sub-Lieutenant Nozaki being here in command; while a picked body of mounted scouts under a Special Sergeant-Major took the hidden mountain-road leading to Seulitien. Captain Watanabé, with one Company of Infantry, was finally sent towards the Kilin road, while Captain Adachi, with another Company, took that leading to Saematse. All these various bodies, so inferior in numbers to the oncoming foe, left Fung-hwang-ching at dawn of the above-mentioned day.

On Sub-Lieutenant Nozaki's little party reaching Changling, they fell in with the foremost of the approaching Chinese. Dismounting, a short but bitter hand-to-hand conflict ensued, resulting in the discomfiture of the Chinese, who fled precipitately. But then the hostile Infantry coming up, Nozaki's horsemen fell back and joined with the Company under Captain Adachi. The battle now began again, the Chinese being about one thousand strong, with fifty horsemen. Fighting as he slowly retreated, Captain Adachi fell back on the Japanese line of defence. The noise of the battle was soon heard by Hatano's mounted scouts, who had by this time reached Hōma-paotse. They turned at once and made for the enemy's rear; but seeing that no more Chinese were approaching in that direction, they went aside to the left and joined the company under Captain Watanabé. After several minor skirmishes, this little force also slowly retreated. The fighting of this day was, owing to the glaring disparity in numbers, of not so very severe a nature; yet the Chinese were badly punished during the three hours that it lasted. In spite of all opposition, however, they pushed forward, and finally occupied the slope of Yihmen-shan, about two miles north-east of Fung-hwang.

The next day, the 13th, the Japanese forces kept quiet. Some ambuscades were made along the line of defence, but the bitter cold was unsuited to long waiting in the open. On January 14th,

however, at dawn, the Japanese prepared to storm the Chinese camp. The two Battalions under Major Okami acting as the Right Wing, the Japanese marched out in the cold, bright moonlight of the winter morning. Taking the Kilin road, they crossed the Ngaeho, and reached a hamlet near the enemy's picket-line, where a brief halt was made. The Chinese were evidently unprepared for anything of the kind, and appeared to know nothing of the Japanese approach. The latter then charged into the village and made a simultaneous attack on three sides of the Chinese, resulting in great confusion and uproar, for the still drowsy braves seemed at first completely bewildered. Yet they made an effort to defend their position and kept on fighting till fire broke out in the village, the fresh breeze soon fanning the flames into a general conflagration. Utterly disheartened, the Chinese soon gave way on all sides and fled in disorder up the hillsides in their rear.

Some time before this, Major Yamaguchi with his Battalion had crossed the Ngaeho, during the night, and had waited for two hours behind a dike on the opposite side of the river for the signal for assault. When the sound of cannon began at sunrise to awaken the echoes among the snow-clad hills, Major Yamaguchi's men eagerly dashed forward into the enemy's camp, to the music of the fierce and effective fire of the Japanese Artillery. On reaching the place at the base of the hill where the enemy's cannon were ranged, Major Tomita's Battalion appeared on the opposite side. The Chinese rear soon began to waver, the horsemen being the first to fly. Yamaguchi's Battalion then rode down the Chinese Artillery, capturing two field and two mountain-guns. The Chinese centre being thrown into confusion, their left also showed signs of distress and was completely defeated by Major Tomita's Force. The Chinese right alone kept the ground, for, being on elevated ground, they could fire down at the attacking Japanese, thus rendering an assault on their position both most arduous and most perilous. Major Handa's Battalion, which had been sent along the Saematse road to prevent an approach of the enemy from this quarter, now appeared on the scene, but was unable to make any headway against the serried ranks of the Chinese right, where, despite the defection and defeat of the centre and Left Wing, the battle still raged. Majors Yamaguchi and Tomita now spread their men out and

made a fierce onslaught on the left flank of the fighting Chinese. The attack was met with stubborn fortitude, and resistance kept up until the remaining Chinese had fled in safety. At last this encounter ceased by the enemy suddenly retreating farther up the hillside; from a slow retrograde movement it soon grew into a sharp run, and the Chinese were finally fleeing in disorder in every direction. Yet even in their flight they would every now and then try to rally and form a front against the closely pursuing Japanese; but each time they did so the shrapnel from the Japanese guns broke their order and spread consternation among their ranks. After a long chase the Chinese scaled the brow of Mt. Yihmen, passed through Changling-tse, and disappeared in the snowy distance.

Colonel Tomoyasu, who had been left behind in command of the Funghwang garrison, had meanwhile been attacked by the enemy. He at once instituted measures for defence, and further sent word to Major-General Tatsumi that General E-ko-Tang-â, with an Army several thousand strong, had arrived at Mt. Tsongling, north-east of Funghwang Castle. On learning this, Major-General Tatsumi immediately despatched Major Mihara towards Tsongling,—which was supposed to be the road the Chinese would take—in order to attack them as they passed. As had been expected, the enemy were crushingly defeated in the sharp engagement of the 14th, and the next day the vanquished columns passed Tsongling, where Major Mihara and his men were lying in ambush. Springing out upon the disheartened troops, they inflicted serious losses before the enemy perceived that farther progress in that direction was impossible.

The Tatsumi force encamped at Tsaoho-kau, and afterwards returned to Funghwang-ching, where they awaited the opening of the new year, 1895. The Third Division, which had marched on to Haiching, carried out their programme with masterly success: the enemy were completely defeated and driven back, and the road to Peking thrown open.

---

## II.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

## 1.—A DAUNTLESS BUGLER.

OKABAYASHI KUMAGO, a private of the second-class, who, with Kadoda Ikichi, had already proved himself a gallant warrior at Tsauho-ching, was with the Second Battalion at Hwangchiatai, acting on this occasion as a bugler. The Battalion was simultaneously exposed to an attack on three sides, and its position a very perilous one. Here Okabayashi encouraged the soldiers by repeatedly sounding the shrill signal to close with the enemy. When the latter showed signs of indecision, Okabayashi, together with Sergeant Matsuda Makoto and a file of troopers, ran on ahead into the village where the Chinese had been ensconced. Seeing that some Chinese soldiers were still staying thereabouts, the Japanese drove them out and up the adjacent hillside at the bayonet's point. Then joining the Second Sub-company, Okabayashi climbed the precipitous hill, despite the fierce fire of the Chinese; and finally had the satisfaction of assisting in driving the enemy from this post of vantage into the valley below: thus clearing the road for the oncoming Japanese forces.

---

## 2.—FIVE AGAINST A HOST.

DURING the heat of the conflict at Hwangchiatai, while both sides were firing fiercely, Kadoda Ikichi, who had already distinguished himself at Tsauho-ching, was commanded to take four other troopers and get around to the enemy's lines to reconnoitre, fighting, if necessary, his way through. Without attracting the attention of the Chinese, the five men managed to go around the enemy's Right Wing and reach the rear; for at the time the Chinese were wholly absorbed in beating off the Japanese attack in front. Kadoda—who was, it will be remembered, a private of the first-class,—having learned all that was necessary, now resolved on a little stratagem of his own. With a shout, he and his four comrades suddenly rushed out against a detachment on the

enemy's left, causing much consternation in their ranks. Deeming the five men to be the precursors of an attack in force from that side, and never stopping to count the number of the attackers, the Chinese broke and scattered in disorder. The impetus here given was communicated to the lines fighting in front, and soon the rout became general.

---

### 3.—THE FIRST MAN TO ATTACK HWANGCHIATAI.

IN the affair of Hwangchiatai the Chinese were under the command of General E-ko-tang-â; while the Japanese were led by Major General Tatsumi. Choosing Hwangchiatai as the base of operations of their Main Body, the Chinese arranged their Right and Left Wings on either side of the village, and further brought two Q.-F. guns to bear on the advancing Japanese. The Commander of the 22nd Regiment then sent the Second Battalion, the Third Battalion forming the van, to deliver a front attack on the enemy's Main Body. Foremost went a file of the Second Sub-company of the Sixth Company, led by Sergeant Matsuda Makoto, of whom we have already had to speak highly. On the Second Battalion's successful occupation of Hwangchiatai, a body of the enemy took up a strong position on the brow of a high hill to the south-west of the village, and greatly obstructed the Japanese by their *fichant* fire. This had to be stopped, and as quickly as possible. So Sergeant Matsuda together with the Commander of the Second Sub-company, climbed the hill-side, despite the shot raining down on them, and, reaching the top, made the Chinese fall back, run hill-downwards, and finally disappear.

---



## CHAPTER XIV.

### THE BATTLE OF KANGWASAE.

---

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

ON December 18th, 1894, a warning was sent to the Staff Quarters of the Third Division, First Expeditionary Army—then at Haiching—that about 200 Chinese had appeared that morning near the line of Japanese outposts on the Yingkow highway. On receipt of this intelligence, Captain Endō Shinjirō with one Company—the Third of the Sixth Regiment,—was at once despatched towards Kaichia-tun in order to make a reconnaissance thereabouts. The party reached the plain west of Pochang at a little after 1 p. m., and then had a brisk skirmish at Kaichia-tun with about 300 Chinese, including upwards of 100 horsemen. Particulars concerning the number and condition of the enemy about Kaichia-tun having been ascertained, the Company returned to the Japanese picket-line and reported what had occurred. Captain Kojima Hachijirō was next sent from the Staff-Quarters to Liangchia-shan to observe the enemy's movement, and he returned with the announcement that a very large body of Chinese had, at 2 p. m., been seen marching northward from the neighbourhood of Shangchie-hotse. At 3.30 p. m. the enemy had halted at Liukung-tun. The Advance Column, he continued, was composed of more than 1000 foot-soldiers and 100 horsemen; finally, the enemy were in great numbers about Kangwasae. In consequence of these two reports Lieutenant-General Katsura that night consulted with his Staff-officers; and at midnight the order was given to break camp.

The following day, at dawn, Major-General Ōshima Hisanao, with a number of his command set out from a place a little to the north of Liangchia-shan, while Major-General Ōsako Naotoshi did the same south of this hill. Lieut.-General Katsura, Commander of the Third Division, also began to advance, having the remainder of the forces with him. He took a road lying about midway between the two wings. While on the road, at 7 a. m., Lieut.-General Katsura learned that the enemy had evacuated Liukung-tun. Judging therefrom that the Chinese might have withdrawn overnight, he shaped his course for Kaichiatun, where there were no enemies. It being now after 11. a. m., the Column halted for the noon-meal. No enemy being in sight, several bodies, which had accompanied the column, now turned back for Haiching. Five or six Chinese horsemen were then descried at a village called Shiakiaho, just in front. They were at once driven back and the place occupied by the Japanese troops. On asking the villagers where all the Chinese forces had got to, they replied that the Main Body was at Kangwasae. So soon as he had heard of this, Lieut.-General Katsura sent Major-General Ōsako with one detachment on to Kangwasae, ordering other troops to follow hard after. The Division Commander and his Staff then started themselves in the indicated direction. After passing through Shiakiaho increasing crowds of the enemy were seen at Kangwasae, Makuen-tse, Hongshui-paotse and other neighbouring villages. The Japanese artillerists at once ranged their guns at the northwest extremity of the village, and began firing upon the enemy at Makuen-tse. The Infantry under Major-General Ōsako deployed and, forming line of battle, opened fire on the Chinese at Kangwasae and Hongshui-paotse. Just facing Kangwasae there was a grove of pines and evergreen oaks, and here a body of the enemy had been posted; but the fire of the Japanese was so steady, so true, that this position soon became untenable. The enemy retreated in disorder and the attackers occupied the wood. In the meantime Major Ishida Seichin, of the Eighteenth Regiment, had, with his command, been having a very severe struggle with the enemy's troops at Makuen-tse. Never had the Chinese fought better or more desperately than at this point. They received volley after volley from the Ishida Battalion without

flinching. In the end the attackers had to resort to the last means,—a bayonet charge. This was at 2. 10 p. m. The Japanese Cavalry was at the time at Tungliangwoh, west of Hongshui-paotse and in the fields east of Kangwasae. They endeavoured to warn their comrades of the large number of Chinese coming up from the rear, both wings on the Japanese side being in imminent danger. The Artillery, which had hitherto done good service at Shiakiaho, now came up to the east end of Maken-tse and the open fields south-east of Shiakiaho, whence they concentrated the full force of their fire on Kangwasae. This cannonade was promptly answered by the enemy, who had placed four quick-firing guns at the north end of Kangwasae.

The Infantry under Major-General Ōsako were at this time engaged in a furious contest with the enemy both at Kangwasae and Hongshui-paotse. Lieut.-General Katsura, attended by Major Prince Kan-in, his Staff-officers and Adjutants, was watching the field from the foot of a hill about 1000 metres from the southern end of Shiakiaho. Hence he despatched his orderlies and issued his commands in quick succession. The scene of the battle was a tremendous and memorable one. The enemy were partially concealed behind fences and the houses in Kangwasae and Hongshui-paotse; but the roads along which the Japanese had to approach and leading to these villages, were on a much lower level. The Japanese had nothing to shelter them and so were compelled to fight—as indeed was the case in nearly all the battles of the war—in the open fields, which were covered by two feet of hard snow; making all rapid advance an impossibility and greatly hindering freedom of movement. The enemy fired downhill upon the attacking forces, while the latter had to work slowly uphill, through the deep snow and in the face of a murderous fusillade. The enemy finally numbered fully 10,000, while the Japanese had hardly one-fourth that number of men on their side. Everything was thus disadvantageous to the Japanese. But here they showed the stuff they were made of: the result of the stern discipline to which they were accustomed and the habit of strict and prompt obedience to orders. Not a man hesitated or seemed at all daunted by the dead and wounded hundreds of his comrades heaped up everywhere.

Major-General Ōshima's forces then came up and joined those commanded by Major-General Ōsako. Together the men made one more fierce attack, but were as obstinately opposed by the enemy, who were acting under the supreme and intelligent command of General Sung. The battle raged with unparalleled fury for three hours longer, when the gathering dusk caused the vigor of the enemy's fire to abate. The Chinese began to retreat, hotly pursued by the invaders, who at last carried both Kangwasae and Hongshui-paotse at the bayonet's point. Three ringing cheers were given for H. M. the Emperor and the Armies of Japan, while the excited, battle-worn men filed into the captured villages. It was just 5. 10 p. m.

The retreating enemy were pursued by the Cavalry, and one detachment was left to guard Kangwasae. All the other troops returned to Haiching the same evening. The losses were, as might be expected, very heavy: 15 officers killed or wounded, with 200 casualties among non-commissioned officers and the rank and file. The Chinese suffered far more heavily, though the exact figures could not be ascertained; especially as the Chinese had the habit of carrying off with them as many of the corpses as possible. Nevertheless between 50-60 dead bodies were found in and about Kangwasae alone. This was perhaps the most fiercely and equally contested battle during the whole war.

---

## II.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

### 1.—STOUT HEARTS.

(Note:—In this paragraph we have, for the sake of economizing space, endeavoured to condense a number of anecdotes, each of which is worthy of fuller treatment).

DURING the course of this most hot engagement, Yamakami Kaichirō, a Second-Class Sergeant of the Seventh Company, Seventh Regiment, was foremost in storming the first of the Chinese earthworks. While fighting valiantly he received a severe wound. Stepping up to his immediate officer, he said: "I regret to tell you that I have been wounded. Permit me to with-

draw for a moment, so that I can bandage myself." Permission was, of course, accorded; and so soon as the Sergeant had made shift to adjust a temporary bandage, he returned and led the men on to the second redoubt, which was captured in most gallant style. It was not until the battle was quite over that the fainting man applied for medical treatment.—Similar was the action of Isobata Naotarō, Hokoki Kotarō, Inouye Zemmatsu and Yamada Ukichi, all second-class privates of the same Seventh Company. They were all wounded and one or two severely; yet bandaged themselves after a rough and ready fashion and then went again into the heat of the fight, doing great deeds in the capture of the second redoubt. They, too, received no medical treatment until after the battle had come to an end.—Okamoto Kiyoyoshi, a third-class private of this Company, was selected by his Captain to lead the van in the assault on the second redoubt. While fighting most bravely, Okamoto received a severe wound. Taking out a bandage which he had with him, the Captain called up an orderly and ordered him to assist in binding up Okamoto's heavy injury. But the latter pleaded that this should not be done. "Don't stop for me," he urged; "pray let the Company press on." These words were spoken in a loud tone, with no sign of the agony the brave man must have been suffering. Okamoto then took the remaining bullets out of his pouch and distributed among his comrades—who never again saw him alive.—Izumi Sōmatsu, a private of the same grade, was badly wounded in the foot. Izumi tore off a portion of his trousers and endeavored to stop the hæmorrhage, which was great, and then reported the matter to his officer. The latter ordered him to retire behind a hill in the rear, where he might have his foot bandaged while out of reach of the enemy's fire. But Izumi rejoined: "This wound is not at all dangerous. If I can only get along, I want to advance with the rest of the Company." No more was said just then; but when the order to charge was given, the officer once more turned in Izumi's direction and said, "Be careful what you do!" To which the wounded man replied, in a tone of mingled grief and anger "I'm so sorry, but I find I can't stand any longer."—A member of the Ambulance Corps, Tsurudo Rishō, was devoting himself to the wounded men when he, too, received a bullet in the

neck. At first Tsurudo made light of the injury, adjusted the bandage himself, and went on with his work. But the injury was a mortal one, and pretty soon while yet working faithfully, he fell prostrate.

---

## 2.—NAKACHIBA SADAJIRŌ.

NAKACHIBA SADAJIRŌ, a second-class private of the Eighth Company, Seventh Regiment, was wounded in the head by a bullet while about 600 metres distant from the hostile lines. The blood flowed in blinding streams over his face, yet he staggered on for 300 metres more, when a second bullet struck him in the loins, severing a artery and causing almost instant death.

\*                     \*                     \*                     \*

No less courageous was the end of Ueda Sakichirō, a first-class private of the same (Eighth) Company. At a distance of 400 metres from the enemy, a bullet struck him in the abdomen, inflicting a fatal wound. A comrade, seeing him fall, ran to his aid; but Ueda called out, firmly, "I have expected nothing better than to die on the battle-field. The Chinese are wavering: why are you not at the front?" Taking his ammunition-pouch out, he tremblingly handed the remaining cartridges to a comrade near at hand, and then died without a sigh.

---

## 3.—TWO GALLANT MEN.

AMONG the men composing the Wönsan Column, in the march on Phyöngyang, was Shimoyama Genkichi, a private of the second-class, belonging to the First Company, Eighteenth Regiment. Shimoyama repeatedly signalised himself by his daring and prompt obedience. Thereafter, acting as trumpeter, he took part, on December 19th, in the attack on Makuen-tse. Shimoyama's Company was foremost, with him leading and sounding the stirring signal to charge. Suddenly a shot struck him in his

head, and he fell apparently lifeless. A few minutes later, when he heard the shouts of triumph denoting the enemy's defeat, he raised his head once more and for the last time, and shouted "*Heika Banzai!* His Majesty live forever!" The next moment he was dead.

\*            \*            \*            \*

Sub-Lieutenant Tanaka Jisai was, in the midst of this gallant fight in the snowy field, also shot in the head. Nothing daunted, he still staggered on and tried to lead his men. The sight of their officer's plight and his unquenchable ardor despite a mortal wound, roused the soldiers to an uncontrollable pitch of fury, so that they pressed forward with redoubled enemy and took the village like a whirlwind. Their charge was grand, even where all others were doing well.

---

#### 4.—SERGEANT TAKENAKA.

WHEN about 200 metres distant from the hostile line, the Seventh Company (19th Regiment) assumed opened order, spreading out with the idea of avoiding as much as possible the terrible fire of their foes. As already related, the Company was here subjected to a cross-fire, and suffered tremendously, nearly one man out of every two being killed or badly wounded. Under the circumstances there was reason to apprehend that the devoted Company's fire would become irregular or too rapid. First-Class Sergeant Takenaka Kyōzan now knelt on one knee and began firing, with great steadiness and precision, when he was struck in the rear by a bullet, the blood gushing in torrents from the wound. Some of his men drew near and urged him to get bandaged. To their words the Sergeant lent a deaf ear, and continued to fire wholly unmoved. On the men repeating their words, the bold man looked up and said: "It is quite hopeless to think of repelling the enemy if you do not keep as calm as I am." His assured and firm demeanour, combined with the tone in which he spoke these words, made the soldiers very cautious of the manner in which they fired, each trying to make his shots tell. Captain Tsukamoto

Yoshirō, not knowing that the Sergeant had been wounded, just then called him up to bandage Lieutenant Hiraoka, who had received a severe wound. The Sergeant promptly obeyed, concealing his own pain; but while he was adjusting a temporary bandage, a second bullet struck him in the back, coming out just below the arm-pit. This made him reel and fall; yet in a few seconds he staggered to his feet and continued to attend to the Lieutenant, a third bullet piercing the upper part of his right arm while he did so. This bullet lodged finally in the back of the hand. He had thus received three painful wounds in quick succession. Finishing the bandaging of his Lieutenant, he tried to rise and walk on, but his strength was gone. After the Company had dashed on and into the ranks of the enemy, the Sergeant, necessarily left behind, did his best to cheer and comfort the many wounded lying on the field, regardless of his own pain. He was also mindful of the injunctions so often repeated by his commander, not to leave anything on the field. Mutually assisting each other, the forlorn little troop of wounded men staggered on to the *Kari-hotai-jō*, or place where wounds were temporarily treated; and brought with their honourable scars a record to be proud of.

---

#### 5.—A GALLANT MAN.

FROM the inception of the battle of Kangwasae, the Chinese fired shrapnel from the field-guns; while the Japanese were sadly handicapped by having only mountain-guns to use. The Japanese shells, therefore, failed, for the most part, to reach the Chinese lines; while the enemy's fire was very destructive. Moreover the Chinese had made loop-holes in the walls and ramparts, through which they thrust their magazine-rifles and fired with excellent aim and steadiness. At one time a mob of Chinese collected in front of the Japanese Left and made as if about to advance firing. This was the boldest deed done by the enemy on that day. The Japanese, being absolutely without shelter and in the open, were subjected to a cross-fire, the Chinese shelling both the



Japanese front and left flank. This caused a disproportionately large number of casualties on the Japanese side; of the Seventh Company, 19th Regiment, which went into the battle 143 men strong, no less than 69 were either killed or wounded: or nearly one-half. The conflict was indescribably bitter on both sides: the Chinese having the advantage of territory, field-pieces, great numbers, and walls to protect them. But there was one man in the sorely persecuted Seventh Company, who did magnificent service on this day. He was Ōno Keijirō, then a private of the second-class, and was on this occasion following the Company Commander as an orderly. The Japanese line were then covered by a sulphurous canopy, almost obscuring them; while the evening sun, brilliantly reflected in the drifted snow, dazzled their eyes. Firing as they did either kneeling or in a recumbent position, it was impossible to observe clearly the movements of the enemy. Yet none might stand except Ōno, who, as orderly, had to run hither and thither across the bullet-swept plain, carrying his officer's commands. The noise of the firing being very great, even the loudest-voiced orders failed to reach the ears of all; and so Ōno had again and again to go to the Commanders of the Sub-companies, the Sergeants, etc., with the Captain's behests. He told the men how to sight their guns, and eagerly encouraged the soldiers, who were not only suffering greatly from the enemy's fire but also could not see whom or what to fire at. Ōno never for an instant lay down or attempted to avoid the enemy's bullets. He seemed to bear a charmed life. When his officer was wounded, Ōno was the first at his side and prompt to bandage the injury. Afterwards, in the bayonet-charge, Ōno led all the rest and was foremost in springing into the enemy's stronghold. When the battle was over, this brave man was singled out for special praise; and surely did deserve the warm encomiums of his officers and mates.

---

#### 7.—A RECONNAISSANCE.

A scouting party was, on December 18th, despatched in the direction of Kangwasae, the enemy being very numerous along

and about the chosen road. Among the scouts was Tanaka Iwatarō, a private of the first class, on the roll of the Sixth Regiment. At Kaichia-tun a large body of Chinese was encountered, the enemy opening a heavy fire from behind some walls as the reconnoitring party drew in sight. The ground was deeply covered with snow and there was absolutely no shelter for the Japanese. Instantly assuming a recumbent position, the scouts promptly returned the hostile fire, without offering to retreat. Meanwhile Tanaka, with a few non-commissioned officers, had been sent to reconnoitre the position of the enemy in a thickly-grown wood at the north-east end of the village. Despite the fierce fire to which he and his comrades were subjected, Tanaka ran on to a house standing apart, some 50 metres distant. After making what investigations he could under shelter of these walls, Tanaka and the others again began to advance, and this time along a ditch which led into the thick of the wood. Crouching, running, crawling on all-fours, they finally succeeded in reaching a grave-yard, where they discovered that large numbers of the foe were still lurking among the trees, evidently intending to take the Japanese in the rear of the right flank so soon as they should come near. On discovering this plan the scouts cast prudence to the winds and commenced a quick volley-fire, thinking to warn their comrades of the danger. The enemy then worked around to the skirt of the wood and began angrily firing at the marplot scouts. Tanaka received a severe wound at this moment, but did not let that keep him from continuing to fire, thereafter rendering great assistance to his immediate officer and others who were wounded. Nor would he consent to leave any of his injured comrades on the field, but saw that all were brought back in safety. At last the Chinese were repulsed, and the scouts enabled to return to their Company.

---

## CHAPTER XV.

### THE BATTLE AND CAPTURE OF KAIPING.

---

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

THE Third Division of the First Expeditionary Army having taken Haiching, the Chinese thereabouts promptly withdrew to Liaoyang, Tienchwangtai and Kaiping. Though defeated, their numbers were still so great that the Third Division had to do them battle at Kangwasae—that bloody field whereon the Japanese lost more in killed and wounded than in any other of the conflicts during the war. Though here again compelled to retreat before the victorious arms of the Japanese, the enemy did not fly far, and even made repeated attempts to regain possession of Haiching. The Second Expeditionary Army was not, at the time, freely communicating with the Haiching garrison; and, as things stood, it was apparent that they could not hold out forever.



MAJOR-GENERAL NOGRI.

There was nothing to be done but administer one more crushing defeat to the Chinese, disperse them from the immediate neighbourhood of Haiching, and ensure ease and readiness of communication with the First Army.

Kaiping is a city of about 30,000 inhabitants and is situated in the south-western portion of Shingking, facing the north-eastern part of the Liaotung Gulf. To the south lies Shunchiao-ching, while Yingkow is to the north, Kaiping being midway between the two, and so a place of no small importance. The castle—for Kaiping possesses a large one—is of the usual shape, say 540 metres long east and west by 760 north and south. The bourg is protected by massive walls 30 feet high, and the streets are well supplied with shops and dwellings of a better class of architecture. Kaiping is, on the whole, a flourishing town and one of the principal marts of this part of Manchuria. To the north lies a range of hills of very irregular height and formation, while east and south of the city stretches an undulating plain, through which the Haichow River flows, emptying farther on in the Gulf. Upon reconnoitring the place, the Japanese scouts found that the garrison consisted of at least 5000 Infantry with 500 horsemen and 10 guns. For defence the Chinese did not depend solely on the castle, having made fortifications along the northern bank of the river.

On the first day of the new year, 1895, the First Provincial Division of the Second Expeditionary Army was composed of a Combined Brigade, made up of the First Brigade of Infantry (consisting of the First and Fifteenth Regiments), the First Cavalry Battalion, the Second Battalion of Field Artillery, and the other minor detachments in Kinchow. The command of the Combined Brigade was given to Major-General Nogi Maresuke, with orders to march against Kaiping. The First Cavalry Battalion (less a little more than two Sub-companies), under Major Akiyama Yoshifuru, set out first as an independent body; while the Advance Column was composed of the First Battalion of the Fifteenth Regiment—afterwards to do such grand work at Taping-shan—a Squadron of Cavalry, and the First Company of First Engineer Battalion, commanded by Major Saitō Tokumei. The Right Flank Column, consisting of the First Regiment (less the Third Battalion) and one Sub-company of Cavalry, was led by Colonel Woki Shigéyoshi. The Main Body, under the personal command of Major-General Nogi, was made up of one Squadron of Cavalry, the Fifteenth Regiment (less the First Battalion), the

Second Artillery Battalion, Third Battalion of the First Regiment, the Hospital and Ambulance Corps, and the train and commissariat sections.

At 8 a. m. of January 3rd, 1895, the whole army set out from Pulantien, the Main and Right Columns separating at once, the latter thereupon taking the Haichow highway, while the former proceeded along the Foochow road. The Right Column reached Panla-shan on the 4th, averaging between 11-12 miles daily—a very quick pace considering the extreme heaviness of the roads, the deep snow, and the low temperature. On the 7th, Mochiatien was made, and there the news came in that the Main Body had already reached Shunchiao-ching, which was the rendezvous agreed upon beforehand. While the Main Body halted at this place on January 8th, the Right Column marched four miles on



COLONEL WOKI.

to Szetai-tse, where they bivouacked. Signs of the close proximity of the enemy were not wanting, as the mounted scouts of either side had daily collisions. The Japanese were anxious to meet the foe, and so, on January 9th, the Main Body left Shunchiao-ching in the early morning and marched along the highroad to Haichow; while the other Column, wheeling to the right, took the hidden mountain road, making some 10 miles that day. By nightfall the Main Body had reached Yulinpao the Advance Column bivouacking at Erhtai-tse; while the Right

Wing made Laoye-miao, its van halting a village about 1300 metres farther on. The Japanese were now within 4000 metres of the enemy's line.

During the night, the manner of attacking Kaiping was planned in the following manner, the attack to take place on the next day:—

1. Colonel Kōno Michiyoshi, with the Second and Third Batta-

lions of the Fifteenth Regiment, to engage the enemy's Right Wing ;

2. Colonel Woki Shigéyoshi, with the First and Second Battalions of the First Regiment and one Sub-company of Cavalry, to give battle to the enemy's Left Wing ;

3. Major-General Nogi, with the Third Battalion of the First Regiment, the First Battalion of the Fifteenth Regiment, the Second Artillery Battalion and one Company of Engineers, to attack the foe in front. The three bodies were to advance simultaneously to the attack, thus involving the whole Chinese line. The Artillery Battalion in the centre was ordered so to fire as to give assistance to the Right and Left Wings. The whole remaining forces were to keep as reserves in the neighbourhood of the villages of Luli, Erh-taitse, Yulinpao and Shiotai-pao, the troops enumerated being considered fully able to cope successfully with the enemy, despite the latter's great numerical superiority.

At early dawn of January 10th everything was in readiness and the chosen troops set out on their perilous mission. Snow had fallen plentifully and the marching through the deep drifts was any thing but easy ; yet the Japanese made light of the task and advanced to the attack with admirable steadiness and precision. The centre of the enemy's line burst into a



MAJOR IMAMURA.

furious fire as the Japanese drew nearer, the Third Battalion of the First Regiment being wholly exposed to this fusillade. Major Imamura, who was in command, immediately deployed his men in open order and fired volley after volley upon the enemy, the Japanese inflicting terrible injury on their opponents by reason of their superior marksmanship. The First and Second Battalions of the First Regiment, under Colonel Woki, now came into conflict, Major Kagawa, commanding the Second Battalion, performing

prodigies of valour with his men. They did not march towards the enemy, but ran at full speed across the snowy fields, overpowering all opposition by their tremendous rush. On the upper slopes of Funghwang-shan, a mountain between 1300-1400 metres high to the east of the bourg a body of about 2000 Chinese foot-soldiers was just now discovered, evidently intending to charge down-hill and attack the Japanese beneath them. "If those men on the mountain begin to fire upon us," exclaimed Colonel Woki, "we shall have the enemy on two sides of us at the same time;" so, turning to Major Takenaka Yasutarō, commander of the First Battalion, he ordered him to make a counter-attack upon the Chinese and disperse them from the slopes. It was now a few minutes before 8 o'clock in the morning, and the battle was



MAJOR KAGAWA.

raging on all sides, the roar of the Artillery being deafening. Major Takenaka was entirely successfully in dislodging the Chinese from Funghwang-shan, even storming and capturing all the earth-works there erected—a fact which greatly disheartened the enemy on the right side, who, seeing the discomfiture of their comrades, began to retreat. Colonel Woki now ordered Major Kagawa, with the Second Battalion, to cross the stream fronting the enemy; and while this was doing the Colonel himself, with two Companies hitherto kept in reserve, dashed forward among the houses

which served to give some sort of shelter to the enemy's Left Wing, and drove the Chinese out at the bayonet's point. The beaten troops turned and ran along the paths in the vegetable-fields to the west, hotly pursued by Colonel Woki and his men, who chased them as far as the southern gate of the city, preventing them from entering there. Finding no other road of escape, these troops fled in disorder towards the west and north. At 8.15 a. m.

some men of the First Regiment succeeding in scaling the walls of the south gate, and fought desperately with the enemy posted there. The Third Battalion of the First Regiment, which had hitherto acted as the forefront of the Japanese centre, as well as the Second Battalion of the same Regiment, which had been on the right, now drove the enemy before them like a flock of sheep and gained the river's bank. Colonel Kōno, commanding the Japanese Left Wing, also succeeded in driving back the enemy and reaching the river. A little before this, Major Matsumoto Kanae, Commander of the Second Battalion of Field Artillery, had ranged a double row of cannon on either side of the principal road leading to the town. Moving forwards in an oblique direction as the enemy retreated, the batteries poured shrapnel into the Chinese ranks, causing great havoc, shrapnel being always a most detestable species of shell to the enemy. When however the Third Battalion of the Fifteenth Regiment had overpowered the foe and taken their entrenchments at Chiaochia-tun, the Artillery promptly veered around to the left and, lining up along the bank of the stream, fired at short and most effective range into the mass of discomfited Chinese.

At this moment several large columns of Chinese made their appearance on the Yingkow highway, just in front of the Japanese Left Wing. Major-General Nogi at once ordered the men to close with the foe, and the troops sprang to the work, clambering over the ice-hummocks in the frozen stream. Here, however, the Chinese had performed a feat extolled by their tacticians and strategists of ancient times, viz. that of causing the water to freeze at an oblique angle, so that the stream was not only covered with irregular icy protuberances but also frozen into a slippery slope, most difficult to pass over. The Japanese stumbled and fell by scores as they attempted to cross, being all the while exposed to a murderous fire from the enemy on the opposite bank. Very many brave men here lost their lives or were helplessly maimed. But where one fell two or three sprang to take his place, and before long the devoted Battalions were in the redoubts and shooting down all opponents. The Chinese were now utterly demoralized, their last great hope, the perilous ice, having failed them. Hundreds ran off along the Yingkow road, gathering



thereafter at Haishansai and Wanyuantien to the north. But Major-General Nogi was by no means willing that they should rejoin their comrades in the more northerly camps and garrisons; so he despatched Colonel Kōno Michiyoshi to harrass and intercept the fugitives at Haishansai. This was done, and the troops under Colonel Kōno halted in the village, keeping a sharp lookout for any possible re-inforcements coming southwards.

The battle had indeed been exceedingly severe; for the Japanese had 53 officers and men killed outright, with no less than 296 wounded, many of the latter being desperately hurt. The losses of the Chinese were never accurately ascertained, but must have been enormous. More than 150 prisoners were taken, while among the spoil were 4 cannon, over 100 rifles, great quantities of ammunition, above 100 flags and military standards, and a host of other things.

\*            \*            \*            \*

In the taking of Kaiping the Japanese had had very few troops, comparatively speaking, to work with. In point of fact, it had been intended by Lieut.-General Katsura, Commander of the Third Division of the First Army, to have a share in the honour of the capture; but his forces were a little too late in coming up. He had instructed, at all events, Major Mozu Watarō, commanding the Second Battalion of the Eighteenth Regiment—at that time at Tomuh-ching—to drive back the enemy in the vicinity, in order to keep them from advancing to the relief of Kaiping. Sending forward one Company in advance, Major Mozu, with two other Companies, reached Wangho-tun on January 8th, the day following his departure from Tomuh-ching. There a report came in that the wounded scouts had, at 8 a. m. of that day, fallen in with a body of about 100 Chinese horsemen near Tsaishen-miao, these evidently being the precursors of a much larger body. At 8 a. m. of the following day scouts were sent to make a reconnaissance in the vicinity and villages of Tsai-sen-miao, Siao-san-ma-ling and Ta-san-ma-ling. The enemy had however probably taken the alarm, for none were to be met with thereabouts. Three hours later the Major set out from Erhtao and marched on to Ta-san-ma-ling, where villagers informed him that the Main Body of Chinese was at Twan-ten, a little farther on

to the west. The next day the Mozu Battalion made this place—the same day appointed for the siege of Kaiping. No Chinese soldiers were here to be seen, yet it was reported that a considerable number had gone to the south of Tapaling, a village a few thousand metres off. Advancing cautiously, the Battalion soon surrounded and as easily captured Tapaling, taking a number of prisoners. On asking one of them who had come from Kaiping as to the condition of that bourg, the prisoner stated that it had been evacuated by the Chinese garrison. Some of the soldiers were now sent to the top of the nearest hill overlooking Kaiping in order to test the truth of this statement; and they confirmed it fully. So the Battalion at once set out in the direction of the town, entering it at 1.30 p. m. of the same day, overjoyed to find this important place in the possession of their comrades. The Mozu Battalion had thus little or no fighting to do.

The battle of Kaiping is instructive particularly as it gives an insight into the methods of warfare still esteemed by the Chinese. Their method of rendering the river wellnigh impassable was really excellent; but in these days of long range guns and easily manœuvred regiments, the experiment did not meet with the hoped-for success. The Chinese certainly had everything in their favour at Kaiping; and yet it fell, as did every castle-town the invading armies sought to take.

---

## II.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

### 1.—THE FIRST ON THE TOP OF MT. FUNGHWANG.

To the east of Kaiping-ching lies a small though steep hill known as Funghwang-shan, or "Mt. Phoenix." The Chinese posted on the summit of this little mountain directed their fire against the attacking forces, and inflicted many injuries on them. This did not, however, deter the Japanese from pressing steadily onwards; and this despite the additional drawback of hard-frozen snow and icy roads, where one slipped back one foot for every two feet of advance. Marching on in unbroken regularity, the Jap-

anese finally began crossing the frozen Kaiping River, the Chinese fire—now at closer quarters—growing still heavier as they did so. It seemed as if the defenders had concentrated their fire on this spot, almost, but not quite, beating the harrassed Japanese back. The order to suppress the enemy on Mt. Phoenix then being given, Lieutenant Yamada Masanobu and Namba Kichiji, a second-class private of the Third Company, First Regiment, outran all the rest and were the first to climb up the steep slope of the perilous hill. When only a few feet distant from the enemy's line along the ridge, a number of their comrades came running up, and combined they broke through and scattered the Chinese ranks. This was done with fixed bayonets and after a very fierce hand-to-hand encounter. Ten minutes fighting of this description was sufficient to persuade the Chinese that their presence was required elsewhere. They wavered, then broke and fled in the direction of Chanchia-yuan-tse, followed by the jubilant Japanese. The taking of the town thereafter was considerably easier, and fell to the share of the First Battalion, First Regiment.

\* \* \* \* \*

Sergeant Koike Yasu-saburō also did splendid service in the taking of Mt. Phoenix. He was next to Lieutenant Yamada and Private Namba, urged on the Sub-company and finally led in the subsequent bayonet charge.

---

## 2.—A LAST SIGNAL.

BUGLER Watanabé Motojirō was a second-class private of the Fourth Company, First Regiment. After the Chinese had been dislodged from Funghwang-shan, the tide of battle swept on to Kaiping, where a number of the enemy, being behind earthworks, defended the town as well as they knew how. Another bayonet-charge was resolved upon, and Watanabé, raising his bugle to his lips, sounded the "Charge!" So sweet and clear was the sound, distinctly audible above the din and roar of the battle, that the Japanese fought as if inspired by a fresh access of

courage. After capturing Chingchia-tun it was noticed that the bugle had suddenly ceased to blow. On searching for the cause, Watanabé was found shot dead through the heart, but with the bugle still at his lips.

---

### 3.—A REGRET.

DURING the crossing of the Kaiping River, the Japanese were exposed to a galling fire from three sides, yet reached the left bank of the stream in good order. The Chinese posted on the ridge of Funghwang-shan then began to fire at the advancing troops from the front and left, causing many casualties among the ranks. The Second Sub-company of the First Regiment being told off to suppress the enemy on the hill, Yoshihama Takejirō, a second-class private of this Sub-company, led all the rest. After ascending some distance up the hill-side, a bullet struck him in the side, rending all further movement impossible. "Oh, how deeply I regret having received this wound before enjoying the honour of being foremost in the attack!" cried he. Turning his eyes in the direction whither his comrades were now storming, Yoshihama gazed eagerly at the progress of the fray, regardless of his fast-ebbing life-blood. To the last his face was turned to the scene of the combat, where he so longed to be; and he died in this position.

---

### 4.—DEATH OF SERGEANT NUNOKAWA.

AFTER the First Battalion of the First Regiment had taken Funghwang-shan, the enemy withdrew behind their earth-works at Chingchia-tun, where they kept up an incessant fire on the Japanese, doing much damage. Here Second-Class Sergeant Nunokawa Gyoku-son, of the Fourth Sub-company, drew nearer the enemy's defences, fighting gallantly the while. Just as he reached the first line of breast-works, he received a severe though

not necessarily fatal wound in the head. Thinking that his injury was a mortal one, he took out his remaining cartridges and hastily handed them to the men beside him. Some comrades then came forward to aid him, but as they did so he cried out: "Why don't you charge on? Never mind me!" Hardly had the words left his lips when another bullet struck him, this time piercing the breast: and he fell dead on the spot.

---

#### 5.—THE BRINGING OF THE FLAG.

THE reason why the losses on the Japanese side were so great in the taking of Kaiping, was because the enemy were not only very numerous but also well entrenched and in every way prepared to beat off any but the strongest and most persistent attack. On the day of the storming of this castle-town, Arai Eitarō, a second-class private of the First Sub-company, First Regiment, was serving as an orderly, flying hither and thither through the iron rain. Finally the Regimental Commander ordered him to fetch the regimental colours, then in charge of an ensign some distance off. This command Arai obeyed in gallant style, running through the most dangerous places at full speed and at last bringing back the colours in safety, despite the torrent of shot and shell through which he had to pass. And in a little while longer the same flag was flying proudly over the captured bourg.

---

#### 6.—COURAGEOUS WOUNDED MEN.

IT was during the assault on the castle-town that the Eleventh Company of the First Regiment got, at 8 a. m. of January 10th, into a densely grown wood on the left bank of the river. They were then chasing the enemy who had fled in the direction of Siao chia-tun. The distance between the combatants was not more than 200 metres, and the contest very severe at this point,

the Chinese retreating with evident reluctance. Just then Ōike Shizuma, a First Class Sergeant, received a bullet in his left leg, rendering him quite unable to advance. His Captain ordered him to move out of the line of battle. But he, eager to rejoin his comrades, set to work to extract the bullet with his bayonet. He had just succeeded in doing this, when the contest came to an end.

\* \* \* \* \*

In the same conflict, Shibata Matsuzō, a private in the same Eleventh Company, was shot in the abdomen. With a regretful exclamation he sank to the ground, yet continued to load and fire until he lost consciousness. On coming to his senses the next day in the field-lazaret, his first question was whether his Company had held the field. On being assured as to its success, he smiled triumphantly, and bore a subsequent painful operation without a murmur.

\* \* \* \* \*

Tada Kurakichi, a second-class private of this Company, was badly wounded in the left shoulder and ordered to go to the rear. But when he had about reached his destination he noticed that there were still some cartridges left in his pouch. Staggering back to his fighting comrades, he distributed his cartridges among them, and then once more set out for the lazaret.

\* \* \* \* \*

Another second-class private in this Company, Hagiwara Tokujirō by name, received a bullet in his left thigh. On being commanded to go to the rear, he begged to be let stay where he was and fire his rifle till death overtook him. In a little while the great hæmorrhage robbed him of his strength, and he fell back crying to his comrades to revenge his death on the foe.

\* \* \* \* \*

Iinuma Ichitarō, a third-class private of this gallant Company, received severe wounds in the left arm and shoulder, being thereby incapacitated from fighting. Later on, noticing his own Section passing the stretcher whereon he lay, he cried out piteously, "Oh, take me with you!" This intense desire to fight once again beside his comrades moved many of them almost to tears.

## 7.—SHOOTING UNDER COVER.

It will be remembered that during the attack the Japanese were forced to cross the frozen Haichow River. They came through the woods on the left bank, crossed over and dispersed the enemy on the opposite side. Shimura Takajirō, a private of the first class, Eleventh Company, First Regiment, who was unable to keep up with his comrades on account of a wound in the thigh, managed to crawl out to a boat frozen firmly in mid-stream, whence he fired repeatedly at the enemy.—Morita Chōzō, a second-class private, was wounded during the crossing in his left leg, and could no longer walk. This did not, however, prevent him from crawling after his comrades on all-fours. Finally he attracted the attention of his Commander and was promptly ordered to the rear.—Kobayashi Tunesō received a wound in the groin while crossing the frozen stream. Unable to press forward any longer, he hastily distributed his cartridges among his companions, and was then borne to the rear.

---

## 8.—ONE SHOULD NOT STOP FOR A WOUND.

WHILE the fight was raging at Chingchia-tun, the Eleventh Company, advancing diagonally across the plain, fought in open order. Just then Sakai Iwakichi, a second-class (reserve) private, was heard to call out: "It would be shameful to stop for a wound!" It seems that he had received a bullet in the head, a painful but not mortal injury being inflicted. Sakai roughly bandaged the wound himself, and pressed on apparently with greater vigour than ever. On reaching the woods on the left bank of the Haichow River—which formed the enemy's first line of defense—the combat grew exceedingly severe. Here Sakai was conspicuous for his courage. His bandage had slipped and the red blood was trickling down his face; yet he fought with super-human ardour, his encarnadined visage making him appear like the very Spirit of War. After the fighting was over and the

enemy dislodged, Sakai grew weak and had to be taken to the field-lazaret. But he had indeed shown that he cared nothing for the bullets of the foe.

---

#### 9.—DUTY WELL ACCOMPLISHED.

IN the attack on Kaiping (January 10th), the Twelfth Company of the First Regiment marched as the van of the Combined Brigade under Major-General Nogi. At 6.40 a. m., the Chinese in and about Chiaochia-tun suddenly began firing vehemently on this Twelfth Company, causing the men to falter and apparently desire to halt. This aroused the anger of Ichikawa Dozō, a Second-Class Sergeant, who loudly called out "Advance in open order!" accompanying his words with emphatic gestures. At this instant a bullet struck him in the abdomen. This did not prevent him from staggering on, until a second shot hit him in the breast, inflicting a painful and dangerous wound. No longer able to advance himself, he called out repeatedly to the others, "Go on! Go on!" When afterwards removed by the hospital attendants he gasped out, "It has happened as I hoped." After the battle was over, he cried several times, like the immortal Lord Nelson, "I have done my duty." He died at 9 p. m. of the same day.

---

#### 10.—DELIVERING A MESSAGE BY GESTURE.

DURING the hot conflict in the woods on the left bank of the Haichow River, Ono Matajirō, a second-class private of the Eleventh Company, was sent by Lieutenant Yoshida to carry the follow message to Captain Miyahara, Commander of the Eleventh Company:—"Our Sub-company will join the Company on the opposite bank, going straight across, with making any detour." Ono ran off with the message, which he delivered as he had been commanded. On the way back a bullet struck him in the ab-



domen, inflicting a most severe wound. Painfully the brave fellow crawled on till he met with his Lieutenant. Words being impossible, he gave his officer to understand, by means of gestures, that the Captain had understood and agreed, and would await the Sub-company on the opposite bank.

---

#### 11.—A GALLANT ORDERLY.

THE Japanese were, during the course of the advance on Kaiping, one day at dawn quite unexpectedly fired at by a number of Chinese. At this time Tada Harukichi, a second-class private, was serving Lieutenant Yagi, Commander of a Sub-company of the Ninth Company, in the capacity of an orderly. After ordering the men to lie down at once, in order to avoid the hostile fire, Lieutenant Yagi walked to where his Captain was, Tada being in the meanwhile in a fever of unrest and anxiety. At last the order to advance was given and the Japanese deployed in front of the enemy, despite the terrible rain of bullets. Here Tada made himself conspicuous by fighting in a most determined manner. When his own cartridges ran out, he collected all he could find in the pouches of the dead or dying, and distributed a quantity thus obtained among his comrades. On finally breaking through the enemy's line, when the hand-to-hand conflict was of a most fierce description, Tada was foremost, leading all the rest. It is remarkable that despite his careless exposure of himself to the deadliest peril, he came off scatheless.

---

#### 12.—AN URGENT MESSAGE.

WHEN the bourg itself was attacked on January 10th, the Japanese found the defending forces at least 10,000 strong. The Chinese had, moreover, entrenched and otherwise fortified their position in a skilful manner, particularly erecting a massive wall or high earthwork along the north bank of the Haichow River.

After the fight had lasted for some hours, the Japanese began to run short of ammunition, their fire having been both fierce and quick. Just then Lieutenant Sagara Yorimi, of the Tenth Company, First Regiment, called up Marumo Wazō, one of his soldiers, and told him to go at full speed to the Commander of the Tenth Company and ask for a fresh supply of cartridges. The battle had by this time reached its climax and the losses on the Japanese side were very many. Eye-witnesses state that the field presented an indescribably sanguinary sight, both sides having suffered so greatly in the conflict. So soon as he had received the command, Marumo set off at a rapid pace for the Captain of the Tenth Company. He had not gone far however before his legs were simultaneously wounded by two hostile bullets. Marumo fell at once, but as he did so cried out with a loud voice to those standing near to hasten on with the urgent order. A hospital attendant, seeing him fall, ran to his aid and began binding up the wounds, Marumo continuing to talk loudly the while about the importance of transmitting the message promptly. As he was lifted on a stretcher, Marumo caught sight of a Sergeant, and begged to be told whether the order had been passed on. And on the way to the field-lazaret, the poor fellow kept whispering to himself in an excited way,—not about his wounds, but wondering whether the so urgently needed ammunition would come up in time.

\*                     \*                     \*                     \*

The order was carried on, thanks to Marumo's insistence. Four privates—Sugita Tamio, Yamaguchi Takematsu, Andō Yasutarō and Koyama Haruji—were told off to run back to the ammunition wagons in the rear and bring all the cartridges they could carry. They ran like deer across the bullet-swept field, got the cartridges, which were in some carts about 500 metres off, and then carried them to the men fighting so desperately in the forefront of the battle. Thanks to this timely supply, the troops were able to cope successfully with the vastly more numerous forces of the enemy, and so won the field.

---

## 13.—A REMARKABLE RECONNAISSANCE.

AFTER the successful occupation of the bourg, there was every reason to suppose that the Chinese General Sung would try to regain possession of it; for he halted with his forces not far away on the Yingkow highroad. It was thus necessary for the Japanese to take measures to prevent any counter-attack. On January 14th a scouting party consisting of several officers and soldiers, was sent towards Laoye-miao. Among these scouts were Yoshida Kinjirō, a private of the second-class, belonging to the Fourth Company, First Regiment, and Takahashi Tōkichi, a trooper of like grade in the reserve of the same Company. Under the guidance of Lieutenant Terada Keitarō, the party left Kaiping-ching at 3.30 p. m. of the above-mentioned day, carrying with them provisions for 24 hours only. That night was spent at Chingchiatien-tse on the road leading to Tasié-chiao. On foot again at 7.30 a. m. the next day, they passed through Kiaochiahwan and reached Tangchia-paotse. Suddenly they were fired at from behind a wall in the village, but succeeding in unearthing and driving off their foes. The day was bitterly cold and the snow very deep, progress over the frozen roads being therefore most difficult. As the short winter's day came to an end, it grew impossible to distinguish the road, and the tired scouts had a most perilous time in getting to Taiping-shan, which they reached some time after sunset. It was impossible to halt, for the enemy were thick thereabouts. They tried to get a guide but were unsuccessful; and so the wearied men had to push on alone, their provisions gone and their fatigue indescribably great. Late at night they reached Songchia-tuu, after walking for several miles through the moonless dark, the faint reflection of the snow alone guiding their footsteps. Suddenly there was a shout and then a number of bullets whistled about their ears, the shots coming from a mob of soldiers and peasants collected on both sides of the road. It seemed hopeless to think of going on, yet Yoshida, with daring courage, rushed into the mob, striking down several, capturing a number of weapons and dispersing the whole opposing body—for the Chinese did not and could not know how many

Japanese were attacking them, and Yoshida fought with the strength of a dozen men. Pressing on they made Chinsie-linpu about an hour later, and finally got back to Kaiping at 3.30 a. m. of January 16th, exhausted and half-starved. Yoshida had, during the march, done wonders: encouraging his weary comrades, carrying the guns of several who were hardly able to walk, and behaving after a very gallant fashion. Nor was Takahashi less conspicuous for his daring. It was he who drove the enemy from behind the wall; it was he who dispersed another hostile crowd when nearing Kaiping; and it was he who took the chief of their opposers a prisoner.

---

14.—ESTABLISHMENT OF COMMUNICATION BETWEEN THE FIRST  
AND SECOND EXPEDITIONARY ARMIES.

AFTER the successful capture of Port Arthur, the Second Expeditionary Army assembled at Pulantien, where they made a halt and awaited an opportunity to march northwards. This was in December, 1894. In the meantime, the forces composing the First Expeditionary Army were in the neighbourhood of Haiching, surrounded by tens of thousands of vigilant foes. They had many pitched battles to fight and suffered heavy losses; but no intelligence of this sort did or could reach the Second Army Corps. And so when the latter was about to take Kaiping-ching, the necessity of communicating and working in union with the First Army, was severely felt. And to this end a number of officers and men were chosen to find some way in which a juncture could be made.

Major-General Nogi, commanding the First Brigade, asked for volunteers from the First Regiment. On the other hand the Battalion and Company Commanders were instructed to pick out



LIEUTENANT ÔTA.

some suitable men for the purpose. The command of the scouting party was entrusted to Lieutenant Ōta Yonemura, who was an Adjutant of the First Battalion. Those who promptly volunteered were Special Sergeant Tanaka Minoru; First-class Sergeants Yoshino Yagorō, Tanaka Tsurukichi and Nakahara Isamu; Second-class Sergeant Noguchi Atsumi; and 68 rank and file. Thus was the necessary number selected by Major-General Nogi, and the reconnoitring band speedily ready to set out.

What these men had to do was as follows:—They had, first of all, to travel along wholly unknown roads until they reached Haiching, passing through districts infested with the enemy; they had, in the second place, to thoroughly reconnoitre the condition and disposition of the hostile forces in and about Shunchoh-ching and Kaiping. Could they succeed in doing this, a juncture might be made with the First Army Corps. On December 20th, at 8 a. m., the men formed ranks for a final inspection. Major Takenaka Yasutarō, of the First Battalion, First Regiment, then addressed them in these words: “You have been selected for the fulfilment of an honourable and important duty, and you are now about to set out. But before you start I have just one thing to say. It is in accordance with the national spirit of Japan that, under such circumstances, you should surmount all the many difficulties you will encounter by dint of valour and a courage that knows no faltering. Inspired by such a spirit, I feel sure that you will bring back the intelligence of your complete success.” As he finished speaking the men swore by the eternal gods that they would do their duty so long as the breath should be in their bodies. All were impressed with the idea that the time had at last come for them to die for their country; and this determination as expressed in their words and bearing added to the tragic nature of the scene. During the brief silence that followed the Major’s speech, the stern, set faces of the men showed the manly hearts within them: they would do, or die. Each man then received a sufficient quantity of *dōmyōji-hoshii* (a kind of dried boiled rice) to last, with care, for three days. A few silver coins were also given to every one. What else they might need in the way of food, they expected to buy in the villages through which they would pass. One hour later, *i. e.* at 9 a. m., the devoted little

band began to march, the Major and a few men going a little distance with them along the road.

A bitterly cold wind was blowing that morning over the snowy plains. The sleet, hard-frozen, cut like a knife where it touched the skin. Roads and everything else were indistinguishably covered by the white pall of winter, and so their only guide was the magnetic needle. Keeping a strict lookout, the scouts walked on steadily, no one faltering or falling out of line—for all were picked men. On December 23rd, at 9 a. m., they reached Lungmên-yang where they caught sight of a number of Chinese horsemen, about 700 metres away to the north-east. The enemy did not, however, sight the Japanese. Taking advantage of this, the scouts went around and passed through a little hollow, getting on the right flank of the horsemen, then suddenly dashing forward with a wild cheer, they ran towards the foe. The Chinese did not wait for them to come up. Wholly taken by surprise, they clapped their spurs into their horses and fled in dismay. One man, however, fell from his horse. Instead of yielding at once, he drew his sword and attempted a brave though futile resistance. He was promptly taken prisoner, and then subjected to a fire of questions. What he replied was palpably false, and as he shortly afterwards made a bold dash for safety, he was shot dead. In the afternoon of the same day Shunchoh-ching was reached. There were evidently no Chinese soldiers thereabouts. The inhabitants soon gathered around the Japanese and grew loquacious. From them it was learned that the Chinese troops had, some days before, retired in the direction of Yingkow, though mounted scouts were frequently seen coming from the direction of Kaichow. Some men under a sergeant were then sent to search in and around the castle, while the rest tore down the telegraph wires. Quantities of military stores and provisions were discovered, but nothing was taken. However, what was much more to the purpose, a rude map of the neighbourhood was discovered among some papers left behind by



FIRST-CLASS SERGEANT  
YOSHINO YAGORŌ

a Chinese officer. Incomplete as it was, this map proved of great value to the party. When they were about ten miles from Kai-ping, they learned that close at hand was a force of Chinese, under General Ma San-nyan, numbering about five thousand all told and comprising Cavalry, Infantry and Artillery. Much else was learned concerning the number of field-guns, etc., in the enemy's hands. From this time on the Japanese scouts were continually surrounded by Chinese horsemen or foot-soldiers, who often fired upon or gave chase to the devoted little band. The danger of their position was so great and imminent that the Japanese were not able to advance at all. By day they lay concealed amid the snow-drifts in the ravines; at night they slipped out unperceived and tried to get a little farther forwards. During these trying hours many of the men ran great risk of being frozen to death; while all were on the point of starvation. On December 26th Sergeant Tanaka captured a native in one of the outlying villages, and from him learned of the close proximity of the First Army men. Their duty was thus almost accomplished. Two days later some mounted scouts belonging to the First Army were descried. Worming their way through the opposing Chinese, the little band at length came up with their countrymen, raising, as they did so, a glorious shout of "*Tennō Heika Banzai!*" That night they reached the Divisional Quarters at Shoko-shan. On the following day (December 29th) they marched to the Head Quarters of the First Army and made a detailed report of all that had occurred. But they must return to their expectant comrades; and so, without rest, they set out on their way back, passing through the enemy's territory, and once again exposed to hunger and the severest cold. At last, on January 4th, they rejoined the Main Body at Shonpei-chih, a little east of Shunchoh-ching. Here they made a report of the success of their mission, thereby greatly facilitating the movements of the Army. It only remains to be said that these brave men had covered 184 miles during their perilous march.

---

## CHAPTER XVI.

### THE CHINESE ATTEMPTS TO RECAPTURE HAICHING.

---

#### I.—THE FIRST ATTACK.

THE importance of holding Haiching could hardly be over-rated, and this was keenly felt by the Chinese as well as their conquerors; for not only is this one of the best fortified and strategically best-chosen sites in Shinking, but it commands several most vital highroads: one, leading to China proper: the route to Peking overland; another, leading into the Kinchow Peninsula and the long line of walled cities and towns in that fertile region; and still a third going direct to Moukden, the much-vaunted treasure-city of the reigning Manchu Dynasty. How the bourg was taken, with what comparative ease in the face of its prime importance, has already been narrated. But General Sung-kiang, with his European training and military instinct, was not the man to let this castle-town pass entirely out of



COLONEL KIGOSHI,

Chief of Staff of the Third Division.

China's hands without making a desperate attempt to regain possession of the ground. In point of fact no less than four such attempts were made, proving on at



least two occasions that the Chinese could fight well even when not behind massive walls; proving, moreover, that the Japanese were determined to fight to the last gasp in the face of overwhelming odds; proving finally the incontestable superiority of Japanese arms and tactics over those of China's best men and most skilful commanders.

To the south-east of the bourg, as already described, at a distance of from 550-2000 metres, stands the tall hill Kiaomai-shan, from whose summit a magnificent panorama of hills and undulating territory is visible. West, north-west and north-east of the town are still three other prominent hills (see p. 230), so that the place is completely surrounded by these massive natural walls. At a much greater distance southwards is another range of high hills, behind Pali-hotse, ending in a mountain known as Tangwang-shan. Along this range were the outposts of the enemy encamped at Tienchwangtai and Yingkow; while the outposts of the Chinese garrison at Liaoyang were on Hwangshih-shan and Shwanglung-shan.

After the capture of Haiching on December 13th, 1894, by the Third Division, Major-General Ōsako Naotoshi, with his, the Sixth, Brigade, took up a position to the south-west of the bourg, a step followed by Major-General Ōshima Hisanao with his Brigade in the north-east. From the Companies under Colonels Tsukamoto and Satō, pickets were sent towards Lianchia-shan and Tangwang-shan; the outposts for Shwanglung-shan, were chosen from Colonel Miyoshi's men; while those stationed along Hwangshih-shan were sent from the detachment under Colonel Aibara Tokoyo. The cold being intense, the men had to be relieved at frequent intervals; and even then this picket-duty was of a most hazardous nature, the soldiers having to stand knee-deep in the snow, exposed to the chill blasts that kept sweeping through the hills, during the long hours of their watch. Mounted and other scouts were moreover constantly scouring the country just beyond the line of outposts, so that every movement of the enemy was regularly watched and known, and the whole Army kept thereby on the alert. It was thus discovered that the Chinese at Nganshan-tien were drawing nearer the Japanese lines, and after January 11th collisions between their pickets and the

Japanese scouts were of daily occurrence. On January 15th the news was brought in that an army of 20000 Chinese had collected at Pulai-tun, Shwangmiao-tse and Kanshien-pao, and that there were indications of this large force preparing to march southwards. On this, Lieut.-General Katsura at once sent Staff Captain Ikata Tokuzō towards Hwangshih-shan, in order to obtain more precise information as to the enemy's movements. On reaching the summit of the hill the Captain failed to see anything of the approaching army, although it was then two o'clock in the afternoon and the day bright and clear. The same day scouts were sent by Colonel Aibara in the direction of Shwangmiao-tse, with orders to climb the hill at West Tushing-tse and there make a reconnaissance. Here the enemy were plainly visible, though not in force. Three columns were seen marching out of Saoniu-chên, two of which took the road to Ping-erh-hwang, while the third marched towards Chenglin-hôtse, and these seemed eager for a brush with the Japanese scouts. Major-General Ōshima, on receiving this report, sent to warn the Division that a body of some 2000 Chinese was advancing from Chenglin-hôtse in their direction. Other mounted officers, who had been acting as scouts, moreover told that a body of about 550 Chinese was marching towards Tafu-tun. It was finally learned that the major portion of the Chinese Army had advanced to a place only a few miles distant from the Japanese line of outposts.

Certain that this meant an attack in force on Haiching, everything was made ready to defend the place to the utmost, despite the fact that the oncoming multitudes outnumbered the Japanese garrison five or six to one. Scouts were again sent up Hwangshih-shan, enjoined to keep a sharp lookout, but the view was unfortunately obscured by a heavy mist; and at 10 p. m. no sign was visible of the approaching foe. Shortly afterwards, however, a large body of Chinese was discovered, evidently going towards Shahō-ying from Chang-hôtai; moreover, certain officers reported that the enemy had entered Siaowang-tun and that they, the officers, had seen the Chinese throwing up breastworks in the villages near Shahō-ing. At 1 p. m. a body of about 500 Chinese came round from Hwangchia-tai. Four hours later Lieut.-General Nozu, Commander in Chief, arrived from Siuyen with his

Staff. At dawn of January 17th, a great multitude of the enemy appeared on the Liaoyang highroad, where, spreading out, they occupied the surrounding ground and established their temporary camp at the rear of Changhotai. The enemy's line of battle made a huge semicircle, at least six miles long, the Left Wing being at Tōhōpao on the Liaoyang road, while the Right was at Ertai-tse: Their total number was computed at 13,000, and their Generals were the famous Tartar E-ko-tang-a and Chiao of Kilin.

Making Hwangshih-shan the centre of the line of defence, the Japanese Commander sent the Yamakami Battalion of Artillery, belonging to the Third Regiment, to the fore. In the village known as Chioching-chwan, at the base of this hill, was stationed the First Battalion of the Nineteenth Regiment of Infantry, commanded by Major Fujimoto Tarō. These troops formed a sort of ambushade, being ordered to lie concealed until the enemy drew near. They also threw up earthworks and moreover utilised the walls of the village houses for defensive purposes. A detachment (the Right Wing), under Colonel Miyoshi, was sent to the top of Shwanglung-shan, there to await the approach of the enemy's Wing on the Liaoyang road. Another detachment of Artillery was stationed along the brow of this hill, where the fire was sure to have tremendous effect. On the other hand, the Japanese Left at Chaotang and Shuichiayuan-tse was protected by a Battalion under Colonel Aibara, Commanding Officer of the Nineteenth Regiment: while one Artillery Company ranged their guns north-east of Shuichiayuan-tse. The remaining Japanese troops formed a reserve and collected just outside the north and west gates of Haiching, where they were to guard the ammunition and train. Besides all this, one Squadron of Cavalry was sent along the Liaoyang road to warn the Japanese Right; while scouts were despatched at full speed over the frozen ground to convey the tidings to the garrison at Tomuh-ching and the troops westwards on the Newchwang road.

The reconnoiting officers who had gone on to the Liaoyang road, leaving the van of the Miyoshi Regiment at 6 a. m., Jan. 17th, reached Tōhō-pao three hours later. At 10 a. m. they returned with following report:—The van of the enemy consists of a body of 400 Infantry and 40 horsemen; they are making for

Tôhō-pao on the Liaoyang highway and are the precursors of a much large force moving steadily southwards. On hearing this, Major Tominaga Masatoshi, in command of the Advance Battalion, ascended Shwanglung-shan, whence he enjoyed a distinct view of the enemy and their operations. On descending, he reported to Colonel Miyoshi that, at 10.40 a. m., he had seen that the enemy's van had reached Santai-tse, the Main Body following at a little distance, with flying banners. Word was now sent to the outposts to prepare for engaging the enemy; the Eighth Company, under Captain Asamura Yasumasa, was sent forward to assist the picket-line, while the Fifth Company, commanded by Captain Mizoguchi Tōnoshin, prepared to dispute the passage with the oncoming Chinese. In the meantime, the Battalion commanded by Colonel Miyoshi, in accordance with an order received from Major-General Ōshima, drew up in battle formation inside the north gate of Haiching, for here was where the brunt of the attack must fall. Another orderly now coming up with a fresh command, the Battalion slowly proceeded northward, led by their Colonel in person, until they reached the hamlet Pienshui-kaō. It was now 1.05 p. m., and the day bitterly cold. Major Ōhara Yoshijirō, commanding the Advance Column of the Aibara troops, had, the previous night, bivouacked at the foot of Hwangshih-shan, keeping a strict lookout. At 8 a. m. they saw the long line of the approaching Army nearing their outposts. The Colonel at once sent some Artillery and foot-soldiers to the Japanese outer line, with orders to reserve their fire until the Chinese should come within easy range, and then not waste a shot. Still keeping their semicircular formation, the enemy then spread out in their centre, the right and left segment of the semicircle, from where they stood, opening fire on Colonel Miyoshi's men at Shwanglung-shan and Colonel Aibara's Battalion at Hwangshih-shan. The Chinese at Poloh-paotse now also marched southwards, but did not attempt to break up the Japanese line of defence. At last the enemy west and south-west of Hwangshih-shan moved off a little distance, but continued firing as they did so. To this the Japanese did not deign to reply. For the time being, the Chinese made no attempt to draw nearer.

Half an hour after midday, Colonel Miyoshi ordered Captain

Asamura's Company (the Seventh) to march to the foot of Shwanglung-shan, where they were speedily joined by the Sixth Company under Captain Saka. At 1.20 p. m. the Eighth Company deployed to the left of the Artillery on Shwanglung-shan, the Sixth Company keeping on their right. Just at this time 1000 Chinese foot-soldiers with 160 horsemen came on from Erhtai-tse and occupied the southern portion of the village of Sie-ai-ta-paotse. The enemy now began a brisk artillery fire, the shells going clean over Shwanglung-shan and falling on the southern slope where Captain Mizuhara and his company were stationed. The shells fell in the midst of the men, causing many casualties. A little before this time, just as Colonel Miyoshi was about to order the First Company on to Shwangshan-tse, east of the important Shwanglung-shan, an order came from Major-General Ōshima which materially altered the Colonel's plans. It was to the effect that he, the Colonel, should make prompt use of the Artillery in repelling the Chinese advance. Captain Mizuhara's Company (the Second) was now commanded to leave the dangerous place in which it was and to move onwards in open order; while the Third Company, under Captain Yamamoto Jūtarō, and the Fourth, led by Captain Yamaguchi Eiji, were told to take up their post at Pienshui-kao as a Reserve Force. At 2.25 p. m., the Japanese Battery reached the slope of Shwanglung-shan and, promptly unlimbering the guns, made ready to fire. Movements of this kind, particularly dragging of the heavy guns through the deep snow, were exceedingly difficult; yet everything was done with precision and despatch, the men working with a will. At first the enemy, waving a couple of dozen banners, slowly approached the Japanese line to within about 500 metres. This they did very cautiously, notwithstanding their numbers. Still the Japanese withheld their fire. Grown bolder, the Chinese—who could hardly see their foe, so deep was the snow,—made a dash forwards, and as they got within less than 500 metres distance the Japanese Artillery and Infantry simultaneously opened fire. The Chinese were wholly surprised at this sudden volley, after so long a silence, and hastily retreated along the hollow road, which, in some degree, afforded them a shelter. The Japanese however did not offer to give chase, for the position of the ground was such that if the Chinese

had afterwards brought their Main Body round the base of the hill—which slopes down to Haiching—the Japanese would have been in considerable difficulty. It was deemed sufficient therefore, to keep the foe at a respectful distance.

Returning now to Colonel Aibara, who, as has been stated, was waiting with his men at the foot of Hwangshih-shan, we find that up till noon nothing of importance had occurred. Shortly after midday the enemy began a desultory fire from a distance of more than 2000 metres, doing little or no harm at all. At one time they came within 800 metres of the Column's Left Wing, but, before a shot could be fired, scampered off again to nearly twice that distance. At 2.45 p. m. an order came from the Brigade Commander to the effect that Colonel Aibara should disperse the enemy before him by a front attack, and drive back the Chinese Right Wing from Shiuchiayuan-tse. In order to accomplish this, the command ran on, he should take the First Battalion of his own Regiment, the Third Battalion of the Eighteenth Regiment—which was stationed before the north gate of the bourg—and one Battery of Artillery. At 3.30 p. m., the Third Battalion, commanded by Major Ushijima, reached Shuichiayuan-tse. The Battery had, shortly before, arrived at the north-east extremity of the village, and, as the Infantry came up, was engaged in an artillery duel with the enemy at Poloh-paotse. Four minutes later, the Fifth Company of the Nineteenth Regiment, which had stolen round to the rear of the Chinese artillery, opened a murderous fire on the enemy's gunners, thus attacked from two sides. There could be but one result. The Chinese artillery was speedily silenced, and the guns captured.

All this time the large body of Chinese between An-tsuen-paotse and Poloh-paotse kept 1500 metres between themselves and the Japanese line, not offering to come any nearer. These men had to be driven back, so Colonel Aibara sent Major Ushijima with the Third Battalion towards An-tsuen-paotse, ordering him to attack the enemy's right. As the Battalion approached the Chinese drew back. On this, the Fifth Company (Captain Imamura Gishin), the Sixth Company (Captain Izaka Gei), and the Second Battalion of the Nineteenth Regiment, under Major Ohara Yoshijirō, were sent off to dislodge the enemy from

Poloh-paotse; while the Eighth Company (Captain Tagami Tajirō) of the same Regiment, was told to charge the enemy's right at the bayont's point. Colonel Aibara moreover called up the Second Battalion of the Sixth Regiment—which, though not subject to his command, was now placed at his disposal—and told the Commander, Major Onodera, to act as a reinforcement for the Eighteenth and Nineteenth Regiments in their occupation of Poloh-paotse. The Artillery accompanied these forces, as a matter of course. The Japanese were now ranged as follows:—The Eighteenth Regiment was at the western end of the line of attack, the Nineteenth being at the eastern extremity, while the Second Battalion of the Sixth Regiment, together with the Artillery, formed the centre. Two Sub-companies of the Nineteenth Regiment, which had hitherto been stationed at Chaochang, also made haste towards Poloh-paotse.



MAJOR USHIJIMA.

On the Chinese becoming aware of the Japanese approach, they fell back on Tafu-tun and Siao-fu-tun, about 1300 metres distant. The Japanese followed after them as quickly as the heavy snow would permit, but without firing. The detachment at the base of Hwangshih-shan then began to move also, in order to deliver a fire at right angles; and while this was doing Major-

General Ōshima came up and assumed command in person. The Chinese were now running for dear life, and they were so agile and expert at the business that the Japanese could not decrease the distance separating them from the foe. In a pinewood about 1000 metres north of Poloh-paotse the Japanese paused to take breath, and while they were here the Artillery came lumbering up and began shelling Tafu-tun, which village the Chinese as promptly evacuated. On reaching this village at 5 p. m. Major-General Ōshima commanded a halt and ordered the forces to return to

their former stations. The enemy, meanwhile, continued their run, never stopping till within the walls of P'ulai-tun and Liaoyang. During this long day of skirmishing and desultory warfare the Japanese had only 40 killed and wounded, the casualties on the Chinese side being vastly more numerous. They left over 200 dead on the field. Among the spoils taken were five field-guns, three breech-loading cannon of an obsolete type, and quantities of small arms and ammunition.

---

## II.—THE SECOND ATTEMPT.

ALTHOUGH the first attempt to recover Haiching had proved so eminently abortive—ending in a mere fizzle—the Chinese generals were by no means dissuaded from their intention. On January 22nd they again set out, this time probably from Kan-shen-pao, not far from Liaoyang, the attacking forces being joined by several other columns coming from other neighbouring towns and villages. At early dawn of the 22nd, they appeared in front of the Japanese line of defence, but not to find the invading Army either unprepared or at all concerned at their approach. The majority of the enemy marched toward Siaofu-tun and Tafu-tun; others came from the direction of Changho-tai and Ho-sanlichiao, their intention being to get at Haiching through the ravine lying between the two hills Shwanglung-shan and Hwangshih-shan. Avoiding the Japanese Artillery stationed on Hwangshih-shan, they made a detour and, passing by Shahō-ying to the north, advanced on Poloh-paotse. Another Column, stretched out to a great length, made for Ertai-tse, the village fronting Shwanglung-shan, themselves coming from the neighbourhood of Tōhō-paotse.

This time the Japanese had resolved to defeat the enemy with one crushing blow, and to that effect the following arrangements were made:—Lieut.-General Katsura, deeming the enemy's main strength to be in the Right Wing, ordered Colonel Sato to proceed in that direction. The Colonel's forces consisted of the Third Battalion, the Seventh Company of the Eighteenth Regi-



ment, the First Battalion of the Sixth Regiment, and the Second Battalion of Artillery. The Japanese outposts were also fully prepared to receive the enemy; the Right Wing stretching, under the command of Colonel Miyoshi, from the base of Shwanglungshan to a point east of Hwangshih-shan; another body holding the ground from the base of Hwangshih-shan to the Newchwang highroad—commanded by Colonel Aibara and under the personal supervision of Major-General Ōshima; a third posted from the Newchwang road to the base of Liukung-shan, and under the control of Colonel Tsukamoto; a fourth line from the base of the last-named mountain to the foot of Tangwang-shan, commanded by Colonel Sato and under the control of Major-General Ōsako; finally a fifth line reaching from Shuichiayuan-tse, midway between Tafu-tun, and Poloh-paotse, to Haiching. It being also necessary to defend the slopes and defiles of Hwangshih-shan, Colonel Aibara ascended this hill, taking the Ohara Battalion with him.

At Shuichiayuan-tse was the Battalion of Major Fujimoto Tarō, prepared to defend the hamlet to the last man.

A large number of the enemy now drew near Shwanglungshan, and it was evidently their intention to make a breach in the Japanese lines, and thus cut up the whole defense into smaller bodies, thereby rendering the attack much easier. Still, even though the Chinese attempted this, the various bodies of the defenders could not possibly leave the posts to which they had been appointed; for any movement of this sort would leave a gap through which other Columns of the enemy might enter. There was, none the less, one body that might resist in repelling the Chinese. This was the force under Colonel Satō, which extended far to the south-west, and from that quarter little danger was to be apprehended,—unless indeed the Yingkow garrison should attempt a sortie. Under the circumstances, therefore, Lient.-General Katsura ordered the Colonel to come back and help in making a counter-attack on the steadily advancing enemy. The enemy now fully perceived that the Japanese were aware of their intention of making a strong attack from the right; yet they continued to mass troops in that quarter, and finally, breaking up their formation into a number of lesser bodies, they began to move against Siechiayuan-tse. At 1.15 a. m. they had come within 1000 metres

of the Japanese lines, and as they did so they began a heavy fusillade. Continuing to fire they slowly advanced, yet without eliciting any response from the defenders of the place. The Fujimoto Battalion, stationed a little north of Shuichiayuan-tse and on the western side of the village, now concealed themselves behind the earth-works which had there been thrown up. The place thus fortified had originally been a hillock, but this had afterwards been leveled and on the resulting ground a row of redoubts erected. In the midst of these defences the men of the First Battalion of the Sixth Regiment—commanded for the time being by Captain Tokuda Tei-ichi,—concealed themselves as effectually as possible. Their example was followed by the Ushijima Battalion (Eighteenth Regiment) and the Seventh Company of the same Regiment, under Captain Terata Shakurui. This body faced westwards, while the former Battalion turned to the north. Major Heitō Masayo, with one Battalion of Artillery, then ranged his guns just behind the village of Sie chia-yuan-tse, and by a constant, intentionally careless, fire, led the Chinese to believe that the idea was to keep them from dashing towards the village. The ruse was successful, the enemy coming on as eagerly as possible. Their line was one of great extent, for the western end of their flank touched the Newchwang road, while the eastern portion reached the other Column marching southward from Poloh-paotse. Firing as they drew ever nearer, the Chinese come gallantly on, until they had approached the ambuscade within 200-300 metres. It was now 1.30 p. m., and Colonel Satō at this moment gave the signal for the counter-attack. Springing to their feet the hitherto concealed troops began to fire fiercely at short range, causing fearful damage among the enemy and taking them entirely by surprise. They faltered, then began to retreat. On this the order to “Charge!” was given, and with ringing cheers the Japanese rushed on the dismayed foe. Colonel Tsukamoto who, with the Second Battalion of his Regiment and the First Battalion (less two Companies) of the Eighteenth Regiment, had seen the successful repulse of the Chinese, now descended the hill with his troops and assisted in chasing the fugitive Columns.

Major-General Ōshima had meanwhile been viewing the whole scene from the top of Hwangshih-shan. Assured that there

were now no Chinese hidden in the villages north of the hill, he sent Colonel Aibara with the Ohara Battalion on towards Sie-chia-yuan-tse. But before this officer could reach his objective, the enemy on the western side were in full retreat. Infected by the panic of their comrades, the Chinese who had been advancing southwards from Poloh-paotse, soon began to retire also. Their retrograde movement was accelerated by the splendid fire of the two Battalions of Artillery stationed atop of Hwangshih-shan, the gunners here moreover succeeding in silencing the Chinese Artillery at Shahō-ying. Not content with this, the Japanese artillerists kept dropping shells at long range among the enemy about the hamlet of Lochia-paotse and caused many deaths among the troops fleeing from Poloh-paotse as well. The whole Chinese line was by this time in a state of great disorder. Some attempted to escape by running to the west of Poloh-paotse, hoping there to find the ground unguarded. But here, as will be remembered, were other Japanese troops, who fired so steadily and with such fatal accuracy of aim that the Chinese, in utter consternation, made for the direction of Tafu-tun. Several bodies of the enemy, who had been separated from the Main Column, were now hunted by Colonel Tsukamoto and his men, the Chinese suffering greatly and finally retreating northwards at full speed. At 2 p. m. the Ushijima Battalion was in possession of Tafu-tun, having driven the enemy thence at the bayonet's point.

Returning to Colonel Miyoshi, who was posted with his troops on Shwanglung-shan, we find that the Chinese stood facing this body for several hours without offering to come nearer than 1500 metres. They were probably awaiting for the success of the attack on Shui-chia-yuan-tse, in order to advance. But when they found that their right had been repulsed with such a heavy loss, they also began to withdraw, retreating until they came to a village two miles northwards. Colonel Aibara, however, was not to be balked of his prey in this manner, and, after hastily asking and receiving Major-General Ōshima's permission to chase the foe, made after the Chinese at full speed. In the meantime the Miyoshi forces had taken matters into their own hand and had got within less than 600 metres of the fleeing hordes.

Steady volleys being fired into the disordered mass, the Chinese were thrown into still greater confusion and began running northwards in little bodies of ten or twenty. The second attack on Haiching was thus, like the former, not only unsuccessful but also productive of great loss to the enemy; for whereas the Japanese had only 27 killed and wounded, the Chinese left more than 100 corpses behind them. Among the spoils taken were two guns, 70 rifles, 4500 rounds of ammunition, 4 banners, swords, a war-drum, trumpets, and 15 fur-lined great-coats.

---

### III.—THE THIRD ATTEMPT.

FOR more than three weeks after this last futile attempt to regain possession of their one-time stronghold, the Chinese remained tolerably quiescent. Yet it was evident that they had not entirely given up the hope of getting the bourg back into their hands, for they did not retreat very far and frequently made their appearance on the Liaoyang highway and near Tōhō-paotse. Again, having a camp on the Pulai-tun road, they showed up in small bodies on two or three occasions at Pih-erh-hwang and Changhoh-tai. Collisions between their scouts and the Japanese outposts were frequent at Ertai-tse and Santai-tse on the Newchwang highroad. At all events, it was evident that they were fully prepared not only to dispute any farther advance westwards and northwards, but also to drive back the Japanese whenever a favourable opportunity should present itself.

At dawn of February 16th, there were indications of another attack on the part of the enemy. Warnings were sent in from the outpost line, and in the Division everything was made ready to add another to the long list of victories. It was now ascertained that the Main Body of the besiegers was coming on from Changhoh-tai, and that they were shaping their course for Hwangshih-shan. According to subsequent estimates, the Chinese forces actually taking part in this third attempt numbered not less than 10,000, their commander being the redoubtable Tartar General E. The enemy's centre, consisting of an Army 10,000 strong, made for Hwang-

shih-shan ; their Left Wing, comprising 2000 troops led by General Chang of the Kilin Army, set out from Tōhō-pao and appeared to be contemplating an assault on the Japanese at Shwanglung-shan. Their Right Wing, composed of 10,000 recruits from Shanghai-wang kwan and the former garrison of Kaiping, came along the Newch road. A Reserve force was moreover stationed in the rear of the Szetu-ching highland. Besides this large host, another Column, 3000 strong, set out from Liukung-tun and advanced as far as the Yingkow road. The van of this Column—at least 1000—occupied the elevated ground 700-800 metres from Tangwang-shan, where a formidable battery of guns was placed. Several other smaller bodies came, later on, from the direction of Liukung-tun. The length of the enemy's line, from the Liaoyang highway east to the Yingkow road west, was fully six miles. A few minutes after 8 o'clock this same morning (Feb. 16th), a report came in that the enemy had got quite close to the outposts on Shwanglung-shan. A detachment under Colonel Miyoshi was therefore instantly despatched in this direction, where lay the Right Wing of the Japanese forces. Major Naitō Shinichirō, commanding the First Battalion, Seventh Regiment, called up all the men and sent the Second Company as a reserve on to Pienshui-kao. At 10 a. m. a body of about 1000 Chinese approached the Japanese line from Utao-kao and Erhtai-tse. They set up a battery of field-guns on the hill known as Sietoh-shan, a little to the north of Sanli-chiao-tse, and began firing on the Japanese on the opposite hills. Major Naitō then sent one Company to the hills east of Shwanglung-shan, another being despatched towards the southern base of the latter—a hand-to-hand conflict with the foe being momentarily expected. An hour later, the enemy showing no disposition to come to closer quarters, Colonel Miyoshi sent two Companies of the Tominaga Battalion to the aid of Major Naitō's little command, ordering these as well as the Naitō troops to keep themselves out of sight between the forces stationed on the two hills. Probably supposing that the Japanese Army was much less than it had been in point of numbers, the Chinese now marched to the southern end of Aitao-paotse. Here and again at Erhtai-tse they placed two guns, and began firing rapidly. It was now 11 o'clock in the forenoon. An hour later the enemy, grown bolder, had increased

to about 3000 men at these points, and now they come on finely, blowing their bugles and firing volleys as they advanced. Still the Japanese preserved their ominous silence. Gradually the distance between the two Armies lessened until it was not more than 400 metres, when a body of 1000 horsemen came at full gallop from Tashin-tun and, running within almost a stone's throw of the Japanese outpost-line, opened fire preparatory to making a charge. At this instant the Japanese troops in ambush suddenly sprang from their hiding-place and a flame of fire spread along the whole line. The enemy were, however, not taken wholly by surprise, having apparently suspected something of the kind. Taking advantage of every stone or tree, they obstinately drew nearer, until hardly 200 metres separated them from the Japanese: presumably hoping to overwhelm the defenders by sheer force of numbers. But now the cannon on the hill-top began to roar out their messages of death, mowing great lanes through the Chinese Columns. It was too much. The enemy faltered, and then began to retreat, breaking finally into a run towards Ertai-tse. The thousand horsemen lost no time in following this example, and were pursued by two Companies of the defenders, who finally entered and took possession of Aitao-paotse.

On Hwangshih-shan, the centre of the Japanese line, similar steps had been taken to repel the Chinese advance; for Major-General Ōshima had not only had a number of cannon posted on the brow of the hill but had also prepared an ambush, the other two Companies of the Tominaga Battalion being concealed in the hamlet of Chiaching-ching, at the western base of the hill.

The central attack of the enemy had thus been promptly repulsed; yet there were thousands of Chinese elsewhere, and these had to be accounted for. The Chinese who had started from Changhoh-tai had, in the meanwhile, faced south-west, stationed outposts here and there opposite the Japanese pickets, and put 2 cannon at Poloh-pao as well as several guns (using smokeless powder) at Chingchin-pao, not more than 1200-3000 metres from the Japanese troops there collected for defense. A brisk artillery duel ensued, the result being that the enemy was kept from drawing any nearer. The probable intention of the Chinese had been to throw the Japanese Right and Left Wings into confusion with

their batteries, the real attack being reserved for the Japanese centre. Nothing of the kind ensued, however, and, at 3 p. m., seeing the hopeless nature of the contest, the enemy began to retreat, their movements being considerably hastened by three Japanese Companies who chased them as far as Poloh-pao, which fell into the pursuers' hands.

On Liukung-shan, the centre of the Japanese Left, was Major-General Ōsako, with his Brigade; while the Ishida Battalion of the Eighteenth Regiment was on Tangwang-shan. On the brow of both hills cannon had been placed. At 10 a. m. a force of 5000 Chinese approached Tangwang-shan from the west and Luikung-shan from the north. Their line was subsequently extended for about 300 metres west of the former hill. This Tangwang-shan is too precipitous to climb on either the northern or western side; but to the south-east there is a ravine giving easy access to the summit. Here, it was supposed, the enemy would attempt the ascent; and in fact they did so—but only to be met by a tremendous artillery fire from the summit, then not more than 700 metres away. A retreat speedily followed. One smaller body did, however, succeed in getting close to Pali-hotse, the outpost just north of this hill, and there met with a detachment of Major Ishida's men, who kept them at bay with a well-directed fusillade. In a little while they retreated along the Newchwang and Yingkow roads; and thus the attack was beaten back at every point.

It seems almost incredible that so large a force should have accomplished so little; particularly that they should have inflicted so small an amount of damage on the little Army of defenders. For the Japanese had, on this day, only 13 killed and wounded; while the Chinese left nearly 200 killed to mark the site of their third failure.

---

#### IV.—THE FOURTH ATTEMPT.

THE last attempt to recover the castle-town of Haiching was probably the best planned of all; and indeed the Chinese would

undoubtedly have had things all their own way this time, had it not been for the pluck and dash of the Japanese, not to speak of the admirable defensive measures taken by their leaders. The Chinese losses on this occasion were exceptionally severe. The whole number of killed and wounded was never ascertained, but in front of Tangwang-shan alone more than one hundred corpses were counted. The probability is that the enemy must have lost several hundred men.

It was only five days after the third attempt that the fourth was begun, for at 8 a. m. of February 21st a number of Chinese were suddenly descried emerging from behind the village of Shahō-ying. Later on it was reported that the enemy's line reached Ying-ching-pao and a place a little to the east of Poloh-pao, while several bodies were seen gathering at Siaofu-tun and Tafu-tun, a battery finally being placed on the slope of Sietoh-shan, where the gunners at once began firing at the Japanese outposts. Staff-officer Ikata was sent to Hwangshih-shan in order to observe and report on the number of the enemy in sight, while the local command of the Division went on to Lochia-paotse in order to superintend the fighting. At 9.30 a. m. the larger portion of the attacking force, about 3000 strong, appeared intending to occupy Kiao-mai-shan, the troops moving with unusual celerity in that direction. Two of the Companies on guard at Chaoching-ching now set out to intercept the enemy's approach, exposing themselves at once to the fire of the Chinese battery on the above-named hill. Very little damage was done, none the less. Twenty minutes later a body of Chinese came from Shahō-ying towards Pienshui-kaio, while another moved in the direction of Sie-ai-ta-paotse—the ultimate object of both evidently being Shwanglung-shan. At 10.10 a. m. the enemy were within 2000 metres of the Japanese line, and were marching on Pienshui-kaio to the right of Shwanglung-shan. The distance between the two Armies steadily decreased to 1500 metres, when Major-General Ōshima ordered the Artillery to begin firing, the men behind the concealed breastworks simultaneously commencing a warm fusillade. The enemy south of Sanli-chiao-tse now attempted to overwhelm the Japanese outpost at Litse, but were driven back by the firing of a Company stationed there. The mass of Chinese, who had collected on the road between



Santai-tse and Erhtai-tse, further attempted to drive the Japanese from Pali-hotse, but unluckily for themselves happened to encounter at this point a detachment under Colonel Satō, on his way from Tashih-kiao to Haiching. Colonel Satō had, on the preceding day, sent out for Kaiping, as it was thought that the enemy intended to attempt the recapture of this bourg; but hearing that the First Division had already proceeded to the aid of the threatened garrison, he was retracing his steps towards Haiching when he fell in with the enemy. Quickly grasping the situation Colonel Satō went to reinforce Major Ishida around to the west of Pali-hotse, in order to have the Chinese between two fires; but the enemy did not wait to observe the neatness of this manœuvre. After a short skirmish they fell back, followed by shrapnel sent after them from the Japanese batteries on Tangwang-shan and Liukung-shan, the spherical shells causing fearful havoc in their ranks. At 11.30 a. m. the last attempt to recapture Haiching was at an end, and everywhere the ground was strewn with Chinese corpses—the losses of the enemy being very great at every point. On the other hand the Japanese lost only six in killed and wounded.

The Chinese never had the chance to make another attempt to recapture Haiching, their armies being effectually cowed and forced back by the battle of Newchwang and the taking of Ying-kow, their great base of supplies. The road to Peking was getting easier every day, for nothing that the enemy's most skilful generals could do sufficed to stop the advance of the invincible Japanese.

---

#### V.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

##### 1.—BUILDING A SNOW-FORT.

ON the occasion of the third Chinese attack on Haiching, February 16th, 1895, the Third Company of the Third Regiment deployed in the foremost line to the west of Shwanglung-shan. The earthworks and log-forts thereabouts were still covered with the

heavy snow that had fallen the previous day. All that the Company could do was to build with speed a snow-redoubt—a poor protection, doubtless, yet the best that could be had at the time. While the men were throwing up the rampart, the enemy continued to rain bullets in their direction. Here Nakamura Sanjirō, a first-class private, worked with conspicuous gallantry, his exertions nerving all the others to wellnigh superhuman exertions. In a very brief space of time the rampart was done, and the Japanese sheltered from the enemy's fire.

---

## 2.—A COOL DEED.

THE First Company of the Seventh Regiment was, on January 22nd, ordered to give chase to some Chinese in Hosan-li-chiao-tse and to capture, if possible, Mt. Sietoh. On this occasion the van was composed of the Third Sub-company, whose temporary Commander was First-class Sergeant Morisugi Tsunetzō: he who had been so conspicuous for his gallantry in the storming of Haiching. In front of all the rest marched the Sergeant, closely followed by three privates. On pressing into Hosan-li-chiao-tse, he caught sight of 2 or 3 Chinese horsemen on one side of Sietoh-shan, where they appeared to be stationed as lookouts. It was of course not known whether any other Chinese were near at hand or on the other flank of the hill; yet Morisugi and his immediate followers ran on towards the horsemen, hoping to capture them. Mounted though they were, the Chinese did not wait for their adversaries to come up, but fled headlong. Going still farther up the hill the Sergeant espied a body of hostile horse and foot, perhaps 1500 or 1600 strong. This body was about 400 metres to the north of the hill at the time, and opened fire so soon as the four Japanese were caught sight of. With truly splendid courage the Sergeant halted, and with his men began firing on the enemy, reckless of his own imminent peril. The brisk exchange of shots gave notice to the advancing Sub-company that the enemy had been encountered; and so time was gained for the men to deploy and come on in open order.

## 3.—SERGEANT TSUJINO.

THE Seventh Regiment was on guard at Haiching in January, 1895; and to the Second Company of this Regiment did Tsujino Iwamatsu, a Second-class Sergeant, belong. In pursuit of his manifold duties he had, on one occasion, to go on to Shwanglungshan, when the temperature was very low and the snow so deep that he sank in it to his knees at every step. To add to his discomfort it was night, and the wind blowing a gale, icy particles filling the keen air. Fire-wood was much needed for the troops, and the Sergeant had applied to his Lieutenant for permission to go out beyond the picket-line and collect the necessary fuel. The enemy had advanced their outposts to Erhtai-tse beyond Shihyen-tai: not more than 2000 metres distant from the Japanese outermost pickets. The undertaking was a most perilous one under any circumstances. Yet, after receiving permission to go, he and 2 or 3 privates walked on until well within the enemy's line, collected a large quantity of fuel, and came back without having aroused the attention of their adversaries.

Again, when the Japanese attacked Sietoh-shan, north-west of Haiching, during the night of February 28th, the Company to which Sergeant Tsujino belonged, formed the van. On reaching the base of the hill, being then about 5-600 metres distant from the enemy, the Japanese were suddenly fired upon by them. Sergeant Tsujino however kept his men from falling into disorder and replied with a withering volley. A few minutes later he proceeded towards the enemy and then, on the command to charge being given by his Commander, he was the first man to spring up and the first to dash into the enemy's lines, where he laid about him with reckless bravery. His excellent example stimulated the men to renewed efforts, and the Chinese were speedily dislodged and driven back at a sharp run.

---

## CHAPTER XVII.

### THE TAKING OF WEI-HAI-WEI.

---

#### I.—THE LAND ATTACK.

THE taking of Wei-hai-wei, the second greatest of China's maritime fortresses, was remarkable for several reasons. In the first place the port was defended as seldom any port has been: encircled by massive forts filled with guns of the best make and heavy calibre; the sea-approaches strewn with sub-marine torpedoes; the water-ways barred with booms of prodigious strength; the finest vessels of the once great Peiyang Squadron afloat in the harbour and ready to fight till they sank, the whole fleet being under the command of that brave man and gallant officer, Admiral Ting. Besides all this, it was where the Chinese made their last great stand: the culminating point of the conflict. If Wei-hai-wei held out, there was always some hope left for China: her battle-ships might still prevent the landing of troops anywhere near Peking. And to do them naught but justice, the Chinese themselves recognised these facts and fought with the utmost valour—at least, their fleet did. Nothing could be better than the record of this last great fight of the once-renowned Northern Squadron. But the leaders were out-generalled and the bravery of their men out-bid by the Japanese, who, in the flush of victory, the consciousness of power, and the magnificent manner in which they were led on to conquer, were invincible. Everything, humanly speaking, was done to prevent the fall of Wei-hai-wei into Japan's hands; the very elements seemed to have espoused the cause of China, for a storm which will long be remembered raged for three days, with

bitter cold and heavy snow, forcing the Japanese vessels back into the open sea and away from the threatened fortress. Moreover, it must be conceded that the Chinese seamen fought gallantly even when their defeat was a foregone conclusion; the garrisons on Liukung and Zih Islands leaving a most enviable record behind them. But the port was lost, first of all, from the land side. The coast-forts were not defended as they might have been. It is easy to talk *ex post facto*; yet it is undeniable that if the coast-forts had made a better showing, the desperate valour of the imprisoned fleet might have postponed the day of defeat, if not turned the tide of fortune for once in China's favour. And both nations had cause to bemoan the battle. China, because she lost all, including her best and bravest naval commander; Japan, because of the death of Major-General Ōdera, renowned alike for his personal courage and talents as a leader. If but half of what is said and written be true, Major-General Ōdera was a very Paladin, a Bayard of the 19th Century.

Although Port Arthur had fallen, the Japanese could not be said to be the masters of the Gulf of Pécili unless Wei-hai-wei was reduced; nor could they act freely on the sea until the Peiyang Squadron definitely became a thing of the past. One leaf of the portal guarding the water-road to Peking, had been wrenched away; it now remained to tear down the other. And in order to effect this plan, it was necessary for the Japanese Army to co-operate with the Navy, so that Wei-hai-wei might be attacked from two sides at once.

The land attack fell to the share of the Second Army. This was—or at least the contingent landed in Shantung was—composed of the Second and Sixth Divisions (less the Mixed Brigade under Major-General Hasegawa), the whole being commanded by Marshal Count Ōyama. The Second Division exchanged a Battalion of Field Artillery and an Ammunition Column with the First Division, the hilly nature of the province of Shantung not permitting the use of field-guns. The Eleventh Brigade was under Lieut.-General Kuroki Tamesada, Commander of the Sixth Division.

In consequence of Marshal Ōyama's order, the Second Division left Talien Bay on January 19th, 1895, sailing for Shantung, the

province in which Wei-hai-wei is situated. Prior to the departure of the troops, some Japanese men-of-war were sent out to ascertain, if possible, the condition and intention of the enemy; for it was not yet known whether the remaining vessels of the Peiyang Squadron were at Wei-hai-wei or not. On January 18th, the *Yoshino*, *Akitsu-shima* and *Naniwa*, composing the First Flying Squadron, steamed off in the direction of Tangchow, which they subjected to a desultory bombardment as a cover to the real movements of the Japanese forces. They succeeded in distracting the enemy's attention and concealing the fact that a landing was about to be made on the Shantung coast. On January 20th these three war-vessels steamed off and rejoined the Main Fleet off the Shantung promontory. The Combined Squadrons then proceeded, at dawn of January 20th, to Yingching Bay, the Second Army troops being of course on board. The *Yaeyama*, *Atago*, *Maya* and *Iwaki* led the van. A boat was, on making the bay, lowered from each of the four ships; the officers and men in the boats being entrusted with the cutting of the telegraph wires and the making of as thorough a reconnaissance as possible. In the first boat were three military officers; in the second, Naval Lieutenant Osawa had several telegraph operators; in the third, a Naval Sub-Lieutenant and some more telegraph men. The four boats were under the command of Lieutenant Osawa, who was just the man for this delicate yet most necessary undertaking. Each boat further carried several seamen, while all were armed with rifles. Boat No. 2 had moreover a 47 mm. Q.-F. gun. The total number of combatants and non-combatants composing the little party, was 37.

The first thing to be done was to find some convenient landing,—by no means an easy task, for it was only 5.20 o'clock in the morning and snowing heavily. The thick weather kept the boats from entering Yingching Bay, so they made for a smaller harbour to the east. Here the boats cast anchor, and, as they did so, roused some 30 native Chinese craft there to a consciousness of what was going on. The Chinese mariners speedily made preparations for flight, but not before one junk was captured by the Japanese. On questioning the crew, the scouts learned that 17 Chinese soldiers from Wei-hai-wei had recently been seen in

the vicinity. The boats then turned back and finally entered the bay proper at 6. a. m., or just at day break. There they concluded to land and cut the wires, although this was not the place originally determined upon. When the first boat drew near the beach, the faint outlines of some five or six men were seen at a little distance; and on landing a number of Chinese were found scattered here and there. Boat No. 1 therefore turned back, and as she did so a shot was fired in the crew's direction. This would seem to have been a signal, for immediately afterwards the Chinese concealed behind the junks on the beach fired a volley, the distance between the two parties being not more than 300 metres. A mob of Chinese now appeared descending the slope of a hill to the north-east. The boats then sent up a rocket to acquaint the war-vessels of their danger; and after the *Yaeyama* had signalled for the scouting party return, she as well as the *Atago*, *Maya* and the other ships of the Fourth Flying Squadron, commenced firing on the Chinese. On the boats' return, without any casualty to report, the Japanese vessels slowly steamed into the Bay, the bow of each ship being close to the stern of the one preceding. The Chinese, of course, broke and fled precipitately. The third boat, in which were Commander Niino Tokisuke and Fujiyama Harukazu, a professor of the Imperial Naval College, had been instructed to capture the light-house on the promontory. The two officers, followed by 8 seamen and some telegraph men, first saw that the telegraph-wires were severed. Commander Niino then went on to the cape and took possession of the light-house.

The Bay of Yingching is on the easternmost extremity of the Province of Shantung, China. The seaward approach to the bay is covered by the promontory: a rocky cliff against which the waves of the Gulf are forever breaking. Back of the cape there is an excellent anchorage. So soon, therefore, as the Chinese thereabouts had been driven back, the transports began to discharge their living freight. With material already prepared, 7 or 8 gang-planks were constructed; and in some instances the transports came close to the beach and had the soldiers walk ashore without using their boats. In all the transports came and went four times, and in five days from January 20th succeeded in landing the whole Army.

The town of Yingching lies inland about eight miles from bay, and as the enemy there withdrew before the Japanese came up, the place was easily taken possession of. On January 23rd Marshal Count Ōyama landed and, at noon of the 25th, divided the Army into two Columns, Right and Left, a Branch Column for Shintang-kau and another marching direct. The Right Column was put under the command of Lieut.-General Kuroki; the Left, under that of Lieut.-General Sakuma. The plan was to march from the south towards Paichi-yai-chiu, and the order to begin the advance was given on January 26th. At 3 p. m. of the following day the Advance Guard reached the vicinity of Szechia-hō and Shihchia-hō, while the Sixth Cavalry Battalion, which formed a part of the Advance Guard, came close to Pao-chia. The Battalion went on thence to the little village of Hotong. On the slope of the Pushan-hao hill a fort and several earthworks were descried, and over a hundred Chinese foot-soldiers. The Japanese then fell back on Paochia, without offering to fight, about fifty of the enemy following on their heels. That night the camp was guarded by the Cavalry. The enemy lay at Chiukau-tang, while the Advance and Main Bodies on the Japanese side passed the night at Peisao-tse, outposts being established in a westerly direction towards Szechia-hō.



LIEUT.-GENERAL SAKUMA.

At 7 a. m. of January 28th the Advance and Main Columns again took the road. One hour before this, at 6 a. m., the Cavalry Battalion had started out from Chiukau-tang, intending to get to Tsienchia-chwang and around to the enemy's right, where they were to reconnoitre the condition and position at Pushan-hao and Chiukau-tang. At 1 p. m. the Advance Guard again came to Pao-chia. On sending a detachment of Infantry on to Liuchia-chwang, the Japanese received the fire of some large cannon in a fort on the coast; in consequence of which



a reconnoitring party, composed principally of non-commissioned officers, was sent out to discover what road should be followed, as well as what the condition and position of the nearest Chinese forces might be. The scouts very thoroughly succeeded in reconnoitring the neighbourhood between Chuiyai-tsuen and Pushan-hao, upon which the Advance Guard bivouacked at Paochia, pickets being placed along and over the hills in a westerly direction. In the meantime the Main Body had advanced, in open order, towards the south of Chiukau-tang, reaching their immediate destination at noon of this day. They resolved to pass the night at Tonghao-tsuen and Chiukau-tang. The First Battalion of the 13th Regiment, which had gone on to Tsoitse-tung as the Main Guard, was so distributed as to connect with the right of the picket-line of the Advance Guard. This was done in order to carry warning, if so necessary, to the troops on the northern littoral.

On January 29th both Columns (Sixth Division) came to a halt, the arrangement of the troops being the same as before. The following day was to witness the attack of the whole Army, so this was spent in ascertaining the exact position of the enemy and what road should be followed. Naval Commander Niino, under orders from the Admiral, attended to the transmittal of messages between the land and sea forces. He had a station on a hill close by the sea, where everything could be seen and his messages easily communicated to the expectant Fleet in the offing. Lieut.-General Kuroki, in company with Chief of Staff Matsumura Muhon and Major Ōtani Kikuzō, greatly desired to get to Marshal Count Ōyama on this day, but was prevented from reaching the Mwan-chia-chwa hill, on which the Marshal had taken his station, by the heavy snow, which obliterated all the roads and rendered everything but the nearest objects invisible. Chief of Staff Matsumura did, however, force his way through the blinding snow, and so reached the Marshal's post and consulted with him about the movements of the ensuing day.

The forces of the enemy, during this day, divided into two parts. One of these, advancing from the ravine near the village of Ling-hau, south of Motien-ling, pressed onwards in the direction of the Japanese Right Column picket-line; while the other reached Chiu-yai-tsuen and Chienchia-chwang, near Siechia-chwang.

This body was repulsed and compelled to cross the little Wuchiu River and withdraw behind the earthworks at Siechia-chwang; for the hostile troops had been fiercely attacked by the Japanese advance outposts and were therefore unable to go on as they had intended. The Chinese did not retire from the contest until after 4 p. m. Judging from the number of banners they displayed, the enemy here must have been about two troops strong.

To return to the Left Column, we find that Major-General Sakuma left Yingching-shien, according to a command to that effect, on January 26th—in fact on the same day on which the Right Column set out. While on the road this Left Column fell in with the Chinese who had been at Chiaoton-shih, and drove them back to Wëntong. On the 29th the Column passed through a number of lesser villages, including Hao-teitse-sai, Mwan-chia-chwang, and Paoshin. On the day on which Yingching was left, one Battalion of the Fifth Regiment (less two Companies) and one body of the Second Battalion of Cavalry belonging to the Shintao-kau Branch, had been sent to Santao-kau, south of Yingching. This detachment was ordered to patrol the Chai-wo-chō highroad and prevent any Chinese forces from coming up from the south.

When the Right and Left Columns reached their destination, the order was to advance slowly against the enemy, yet to avoid the beginning of hostilities until a command to that effect should come from Marshal Ōyama. At 9 p. m. of the same day, the expected order to prepare for battle arrived. In obedience to this order the Army was divided into (1) the Right Wing, under Major-General Yamaguchi; (2) the Left Wing, commanded by Major-General Prince Fushimi Sadanaru; (3) the Reserve, under the



H. I. H. MAJOR-GENERAL  
PRINCE FUSHIMI.

personal command of Division-Commander Sakuma ; (4) the Pao-shin Detachment, led by Major Ishiwara Ryo ; (5) the Main Body (7th Regiment, less one Battalion, and half a Sub-company of the Second Cavalry Battalion), under Field-Marshal Ōyama himself.

The Right Wing by the Second Division broke camp at 6 a. m. of January 30th, and marched on in a northerly direction. The Left Wing set out half an hour earlier, and made for Hoshan ("Tiger Mountain"). The Reserve, starting at 6 a. m., took the road midway between Wênchwang-ten and Hao-teitse-sai, advancing in open order. At seven o'clock the Left Wing came upon some cannon posted by the Chinese a little to the east of Hoshan. The enemy promptly opened fire and did what they could to keep the Japanese from advancing. But Major-General Prince Fushimi commanded his veterans to charge, and so fierce was the assault thereupon that the Chinese could not stand against it and fled, leaving their cannon in the hands of the victorious Japanese. This occurred at 7.30 a. m., or perhaps 10 minuter later. The fugitive Chinese were chased as far as Pienchia-wo. Almost simultaneously the Right Wing began to be cannonaded by the enemy, and at 7.50 a. m. a body of Chinese foot-soldiers made their appearance on an elevated piece of ground to the left. Major-General Yamaguchi at once ordered his men to advance in open order, and a hot conflict ensued, the Chinese being finally repulsed. The First Battalion of the 16th Regiment, under Major Eda, immediately started in pursuit, keeping it up until the shore was reached, where the Chinese fleet in the harbour of Weihai-wei opened fire on them, using their heaviest guns. The losses on the Japanese side being very numerous, the Battalion withdrew, reached the outskirts of Funclin-shih at 9.50 a. m. The other bodies composing the Right Wing at first collected on a hill just fronting Funclin-shih, and then advanced northward, the elevated ground near Motienling being their objective. Here they captured two barracks, near the coast, south of Lungmiao-tsai. During this time Division Commander Sakuma had been on a little hillock south-east of Funclin-shih. From this point of vantage he had been able to view the whole scene and convey intelligence of the movements of the forces to Field Marshal Ōyama. In the meantime the Left Wing, facing Pienchia-wo, continued to fire at the enemy.

At 11.55 p. m. of January 29th, the Right Column (Sixth Division) was encamped at Tonghao village. Division Commander Kuroki, on receiving the order to begin active hostilities, divided his forces into three bodies: the Right and Left Wings, and Reserve Contingent. The Right Wing was put under the command of Major Watanabé Yuki, while the Left was led by Major-General Ōdera Yasu-zumi. The Reserve Contingent was united with the Naval Detachment and both combined were to attack the enemy, attempting, at the same time, to communicate with the Second Division. The command was issued that the Left Wing should advance to the attack of the hostile stronghold; while the Right should seek to make the enemy move towards the right. The van of the Left Wing broke camp at 3.30 a. m. of January 30th, and at 5.20 a. m. the Infantry reached Pushan-hao. A number of Chinese troopers being descried to the south of the village of Linghao, one Battalion of the Advance Column was sent in that direction. Passing around to the south of Chiukau, they advanced to the attack of the Yangfung-ling forts, north of this village. Two other Battalions swung around to the left, and made for the lofty Motien-ling forts, which were situated on the extreme Chinese left. At 7.40



LIEUT.-GENERAL KUROKI.

a. m. the Japanese Mountain Artillery lined up on Yientoi-shan, north-west of Chiukau village, and promptly opened fire. The Right Wing, at this moment, had occupied an elevated piece of ground north of Chui-yai village, and was preparing to attack. One Company of Infantry, taking advantage of the confusion in the Chinese ranks, crossed the frozen Wuchiu River and dashed with a cheer into the village of Sie-chia. A Sub-company (battery) of Artillery then lined up on some high ground in Chiu-yai-tsuen, and began firing on the already wavering foe. Division Command-

er Kuroki was, at this time, near the village of Hotong, where he was personally directing the movements of the Reserve Contingent. The battle now grew more hotly contested than before, for the enemy in and about Motienling and Yangfung-ling fired heavily on the foremost files of the advancing Japanese, the bullets falling among the ranks like a murderous rain.

The Motien-ling forts lie close to the coast east of Wei-hai-wei, facing Liukung Island. The latter is the larger of the two strongly fortified islets guarding the approach to the harbour, the smaller one being known as Jih or Zhih Island. From this place, following the curve of the shore and built along the ridge of the hills commanding the harbour, there are—or were—no less than 12 massive forts, containing 64 Krupp and Armstrong guns, many being of 24 c. m. calibre. The length of the ridge thus defended is, say, 640-650 metres. In the harbour lay more than ten men-of-war, all eager to wipe out the memory of the engagement off Haiyang. These ships acted in excellent concert with the land-forts, and did most praiseworthy deeds. The Motien-ling forts were taken by dint of sheer courage and dash on the part of the Japanese Infantry. Armed with single-fire Murata rifles, the foot-soldiers stormed up the steep slopes and took possession of the first fort in the most gallant fashion. It was a splendid deed, for not only were the great guns above roaring out death and defiance to the attacking forces, but also the blockaded fleet in the harbour below fired broadsides at the Japanese. Though sadly cut up, the storming troops went on, with unflinching courage, from one fort to the next, so that by 11 o'clock in the forenoon 11 out of the 12 forts were flying the victorious Sun-flag. The one fort still unreduced was that on extreme left of the line of defence. In a little while longer the Japanese advanced to the capture of this last stronghold, and while they did so the warships in the placid bay below made furious efforts to stop the onrush of the invaders. The garrison of the port moreover fought with conspicuous bravery. But all effort at resistance was futile, and soon this last fort was carried by a bayonet charge and its late defenders sent flying in every direction across the snow-clad steeps. Being now in undisputed possession of the land-forts to the east of Wei-hai-wei, the Japanese directed the cannon found

there—nearly all of which were serviceable—against the Chinese war-ships, and so excellent their aim and heavy their fire that the men-of-war had sullenly to withdraw under the lee of Liukung Island. During this brilliant engagement, Major-General Ōdera, popularly believed to be the bravest man in the armies of Japan and a universal favourite, was struck by a fragment of shell and died shortly afterwards in the camp at Pushan-hao. His place was taken by Colonel Okihara Mitsumasa, on whom the command of the Brigade henceforth devolved.

It was at 9 a. m. that Division Commander Kuroki reached a somewhat high piece of ground north of Pushan-hao.

On doing so he at once ordered his Reserve Column to advance in open order, sending one Battalion under Colonel Okamura Shizu-hiko to render aid to the Ōdera Brigade. A part of the Ambulance Corps was, at the same time, sent to the village of Chiukau and there a temporary lazaret established. Word was moreover sent to the Field Lazaret Contingent and the Infantry and Artillery Ammunition Corps to make all speed to Pushan-hao. On the ammunition being brought up, the Artillery opened fire on



MAJOR-GENERAL ŌDERA.

the Yangfung-ling forts, which were making the most obstinate resistance. One Battalion of Infantry then advanced to within 100 metres of the fort; but the Chinese there fighting in gallant style, a front attack was deemed inadvisable. So the Battalion wheeled to the right, just as Major Watanabé was leading the Right Wing around to the fort from the direction of Siechia-chwang. The Chinese, exposed to a triple fire, could no

longer hold their position and evacuated the place, running along the shore back of the Luchoh-tsai fort and finally retreating within one of the shore-forts known as Lungmiao-tsai.

The Motien-ling fort had, shortly before this, been entered by Lieutenant Idé Iwasuké, who was in command of the Mountain Artillery. Taking 20 gunners with him, he captured eight 8. c. m. Krupp cannon, two of which were at once trained on the Yangfung-ling forts. So fierce was the cannonade that a fire soon broke out in the bombarded fort, which had indeed been exposed to an attack of unexampled fury. The marines sent from the Japanese war-ships then entered, led by Lieutenant-Colonel Tejima Yozō, the Motien-ling fort. Staff-Captain Arita Jō, who represent the Staff in the absence of the Divisional Commander, thereupon assumed command of the naval land-forces, and led them to the nearest forts on the right side—Luchoh-tsai—and others on the shore. This was done in order to better attack the Chinese fleet and shell the forts still unsubdued. The plan was promptly and well executed. After capturing, at 12.20 p. m., the Luchoh-tsai forts, where it was found that the Chinese had prepared to start a fire, the Naval Contingent immediately trained the guns on the fortresses on Liukung and Zhih Island, besides engaging in an artillery duel with the Chinese war-ships. Later on, the Chaipei-tsai forts on the coast fell to these bold seamen. It was then just 3.30 p. m. Smaller detachments were sent to guard and keep the various captured forts on the ridge and coast, while the remaining forces bivouacked in the villages thereabouts. The Division Head Quarters were temporarily established in Kushan village.

All the forts south-east of Wei-hai-wei were thus in the possession of the Japanese, yet those in the immediate vicinity of the town (*i. e.* the western coast-forts) were still unconquered. Particularly the massive forts on Liukung and Zhih remained untaken, for it was impossible to get at them without crossing that part of the bay.

Field Marshal Ōyama had been a most interested spectator of the movements of the troops on this day. Everything had gone like clock-work, his plans having been carried out with admirable precision. But as the forts in the immediate proximity of Wei-hai-wei

still remained to be reduced, he resolved that they should be attacked on the following day. To this end the Sixth Division received orders to march from Changhong-sai and Chiu-tao towards the town; while the Second Division, marching around to Ai-siang-chwang and Tien-tsuen,—the road which the enemy would infallibly take after their defeat—was to blockade this way and further prevent any Chinese reinforcements from coming up. On February 1st the Second Division, which had spent the previous night in the camps at Peiho-kau, Wênchwan-tao, Chuifoh and Pingchia-wo, set out from Yangtei-shih and Shuichia-hokan-tse. On the preceding day the 17th Regiment had advanced—being the van of the troops—through Pingchia-wo and Changhong-sai to Chiu-tao. But on finding no enemy at the last-named village, the Regiment had stopped there and bivouacked for the night. The following morning this Regiment, together with the Third Battalion of the Second Regiment of Artillery; a Company of Engineers and half a Sub-company of Cavalry, went on from Yangtei-shih to Ai-siang-chwang, reaching the latter place at 11.30 a. m. The Second Division—the Fifth Regiment leading—made Yangtei-shih about half an hour earlier. Captain Ōkuma Jun-ichi, with two Companies from the Fifth Regiment, marched on to Shwenchia-tun, intending to sever the local telegraph wires. The enemy thereabouts had made numerous preparations for their defence, and were collected to the number of 1500, with four field-pieces. These troops were gathered south-east of the Shwenchia-tun plain; yet although the Japanese passed close by them, they did not notice the hostile forces, owing to the exceptional severity of the storm then raging. When the Chinese did become aware of the dangerous proximity of the Japanese, they found themselves outflanked, the invaders having taken up a most advantageous position on the Chinese left. But the Japanese might not halt here; they had to press on. Just as they were leaving the outskirts of Shwenchia-tun and taking the road for Liutao-kau, the Chinese began firing at their flank. Believing themselves to be engaging the Chinese Right Wing, the Japanese wheeled and commenced fighting very fiercely with the enemy.

The van of the Second Division was simultaneously moving towards Wei-hai-wei; but on hearing the sound of cannon and



rifles in the direction of Shwenchia-tun, a halt was made and Captain Onogi Shirō, with a Company of Mountain Artillery, directed to line up his guns on an elevated piece of ground north-west of Yangtei-shih. This was done with all despatch, and at 12.15 p. m. six mountain-guns began to shell the enemy. At this moment the Chinese who had fallen in with the Japanese Advance Guard were fighting most stubbornly; but the shrapnel fired from the mountain-guns made them falter, although it did not altogether stop the fight, owing to the blinding snow-storm. Meanwhile the three Companies forming the Main Body of the Advance Guard—commanded by Major Doi Yoshitoshi—pushed on towards the enemy's front, regardless of the heavy snow. The Chinese were not only firing down-hill, being on the summit of a broad mound, but were further protected by a stream frozen so firmly and smoothly that walking across it was next to impossible. When the Japanese forces deployed at a distance of about 300 metres from the enemy's front, the First Battalion of the Fifth Regiment had almost reached the enemy's Left Wing. The Battalion was commanded by Major Watanabé, and had come hither from Tongyang. Seeing that the Japanese would, despite all obstacles, soon be charging up the slope, the enemy broke and fled to the rear. The engagement at this point lasted altogether for quite two hours, and the losses in killed and wounded on the Japanese side amounted to fifty—owing to the blinding storm and the disadvantageous nature of the ground.

A detachment of the 13th Regiment (Sixth Division) thereafter passed through Kiuna-chiu, and, on February 2nd, acting as a flank reconnoitring body, entered the town of Wei-hai-wei, to find it absolutely deserted by the garrison. There were only 2 or 3 forts left, facing Liukung Island, and these were well-covered by the Chinese war-ships in the harbour. At about the same time the First Battalion of the 17th Regiment, the Second Battalion of the 16th Regiment, and the Second Battalion of the Fourth Regiment—all belonging to the Second Division—came up and entered the town. The forces were not, however, destined to rest; for the command was at once given to proceed to the capture of the northern coast-forts. No time was lost in getting on the move, the Battalions advancing swiftly towards the doomed

strongholds. Noticing this movement on the part of the Japanese, the Chinese men-of-war began firing their large guns at them, using shrapnel, and thus kept the troops from approaching the forts, three of which—the Chih-sze, Hwang-ni-yai and Shwuilei-ying forts—were exceptionally strong. At last the Fifth Company of the 17th Regiment, regardless of the murderous shrapnel, dashed forward and into the Chih-sze fort, passing through a hail of shot and shell in Mato-chieh. This was at just 11 a. m. One other body succeeded crossing Peh-shan, but on endeavouring to reach the Peh-shan-tsai fort, the shrapnel from the Chinese war-ships again proved a hindrance. The Japanese thereupon went around Mt. (or hill, rather) Takau, and, at 2 p. m. forced their way into the Peh-shan-tsai fort. On entering they found the place entirely deserted. Noting that the fort was taken, the ships below at once began bombarding the place, to the no small peril of the Japanese. Some hours later the Eighth Company of the 16th Regiment and a detachment from the Fourth Regiment dashed into the Shwuilei-ying and Hwang-ni-yai forts, and with this the whole range of northern forts was captured. Towards evening of this day the Second Division reached the occupied district and there halted, no command to advance having come from Field Marshal Ōyama. Some little time before this the Staff of the Second Army Corps had entered Wei-hai-wei, where Staff Quarters were selected. The gendarmes belonging to this Corps at once begun to pacify the townspeople and do everything to preserve law and order. Such houses as were vacant were carefully sealed, and the people thus given to understand that promiscuous looting was not included in the Japanese programme. With this the town itself and all the many and great forts radiating from it were in Japanese possession. Fighting was, of course, still going on among the men-of-war and on Liukung and Zhih Islands; but there was no more work for the land forces to perform. The solution of the problem now lay with the Japanese Fleet outside the harbour. The forts might be employed in co-operating with the Fleet, but that was all. But this much was done most effectually. The Japanese Army made splendid use of the guns in the forts behind Wei-hai-wei, and materially assisted the Fleet in accomplishing its object—the capture of the harbour and the destruction or capitulation of

the crippled Peiyang Squadron. Finally, on February 12th, as we shall presently see, the Chinese war-ships still above water surrendered. On February 18th the Head-Quarters of the Army were established at Wei-hai-wai, and a great banquet was held on the following day in honour of this signal victory. The captured forts were thereafter completely dismantled; the victorious troops returning to the Kinchow Peninsula.

The Paoshin Detachment, which had been sent on to Wëntong and the vicinity, succeeded in getting into the bourg, although the garrison made considerable resistance. Among the spoils taken by this Detachment here and elsewhere were

- 4 Krupp 8 c. m. field-guns ;
- 57 rifles ;
- 100 shells ;
- 50,000 rounds of ammunition.

The roads thereabouts being very steep and difficult to traverse, the Japanese were unable to bring the guns back with them, so contented themselves with removing the breeches. On February 8th the troops begun to retrace their steps. On the road they encountered, at 3.30 a. m., about 200 Chinese foot-soldiers coming from the direction of Wëntong. Taking a short cut known to them, the enemy suddenly attacked the Japanese scouts, who were then in Chwangli-chia-chwang. For some time the fighting was quite severe at these points, but the Chinese were at last repulsed in disorder. The Independent Cavalry Contingent of the Second Division occupied Nien-hai-chuh on February 10th, the Chinese there offering no resistance.

In the land-battles about Wei-hai-wei the Japanese lost 300 in killed and wounded, against 900 on the Chinese side. The spoils included,—

- 80 rifles ;
- 63 cannon ;
- 540,000 rounds of ammunition ;
- 110 bags of powder for cannon ;
- 77 cases of rifle-powder ;
- 3,900 shells ;
- 320 bayonets ;
- 2 banners ;

2,100 bags of rice.

and an innumerable quantity of other miscellaneous things.

---

## II.—THE SEA-FIGHT.

WE have already shown how strong and numerous were the land-defences of Wei-hai-wei. Properly defended, the place should have been impregnable; for outside of the cincture of land-forts, armed with cannon of the best make and heavy calibre, there were the two strongly fortified islands of Liukung and Zhih just at the entrance of the harbour. Moreover Luchoh-tsai on the east and Lungwang on the west were supplied with fortresses intended primarily to defend the entrance, the great guns being trained on the channel running towards the anchorage. And from the former promontory to the latter were stretched booms composed of heavy timbers and steel hawsers, the waters about the boom being finally strewn with torpedoes. Humanly speaking, it seemed impossible to get beyond that boom; and even should one succeed in breaking through this ponderous sea-wall, there were the torpedoes just beyond and, last but not least, the remaining vessels of the once-formidable Peiyang Squadron. The fleet in the harbour comprised the *Ting Yuen*, *Chen Yuen*, *Lai Yuen*, *Ping Yuen*, *Ching Yuen*, *Tsi Yuen*, *Wei Yuen*, *Kwang Tsi*, *Kwang Ping*, *Chen Nan*, *Chen Peh*, *Chen Sze*, *Chen Tung*, *Chen Chung* and *Chen Peen*, in all fifteen men-of-war. There were, besides these, thirteen torpedo-boats. All this shows how gigantic was the undertaking to reduce this place, even had the defenders been—what they were not—mere “men of straw.”

On the Japanese side the fleet was much stronger numerically, consisting as it did of the Flagship *Matsushima* and 24 men-of-war, with 16 torpedo-boats, the latter including the famous *Kotaka*. Despite all this the odds were in favour of the besieged, owing to the numerous and superb land-defences and the fortresses on the two harbour-mouth islands. In order to reduce the place it was necessary to attack it simultaneously by land and sea; or, at all events, silence the land-forts before beginning active

hostilities against the blockaded fleet.

The Japanese war-ships were divided in the following manner :

I. The Main Squadron, consisting of the Flagship *Matsushima* (with Vice-Admiral Itō on board); the *Chiyoda*, *Itsukushima*, and *Hashidate*.

II. The First Flying Squadron, composed of the *Yoshino* (leader), *Takachihō*, *Akitsushima*, and *Naniwa*.

III. The Second Flying Squadron, whose ships were the *Fuso* (leader), *Hiyei*, *Kongo*, and *Takao*.

IV. The Third Flying Squadron, comprising the *Katsuragi* (leader), *Yamato*, *Musashi*, *Kaimon*, and *Tenryū*.

V. The Fourth Flying Squadron, the *Tsukushi* being the leader, followed by the *Maya*, *Chōkai*, *Atago*, *Ōshima*, *Akagi*, and *Iwaki*.

The torpedo-boats were divided into three flotillas, as follow :—

1. First Flotilla, under Commander Mochihara Heiji: Nos. 23, 13, 12, 7, 11 and the *Kotaka* ("Little Falcon");
2. Second Flotilla, under Commander Fujita Ko-emon: Nos. 21, 8, 9, 14, 19 and 18;
3. Third Flotilla, under Commander (Captain) Imai Kanemasa: Nos. 22, 5, 6 and 10.

The First Flying Squadron was, it will be remembered, sent to make a feint at Tangchow on January 19th, in order to draw the attention of the enemy in that direction and conceal the real advance on Wei-hai-wei. The other vessels of the Fleet conveyed the troops composing the Second Expeditionary Army from Talien Bay to Yingching Bay, and superintended their landing. From January 21st to 29th, the Japanese Fleet was making active preparations for the coming final struggle, patrolling the waters outside the great harbour and in the entrance to the Gulf, keeping a vigilant look-out for the Army and communicating with the leaders as it came on, and generally lending all assistance possible to the land-forces. On the evening of January 29th, Commander Kōkura, second in command of the *Matsushima*, assembled all the men of the Flagship under the poop and addressed them in the following words: "At dawn to-morrow the Japanese Army will attack from Paichih-yai-chiu, on the eastern littoral of Wei-hai-wei. You must therefore lie down at your posts, near the guns, using mats

for beds and not slinging your hammocks." Leaving the *Tenryū*, *Kaimon* and *Iwaki* to guard the transports, the rest of the Japanese fleet steamed, at 2 a. m., out of Yingching Bay, reaching the offing of Wei-hai-wei at about 6.30 a. m. Two hours after the men-of-war had set sail, the torpedo flotillas took the same direction.

On this day it was the intention of the Army to storm the forts south-east of Wei-hai-wei, while it was the duty of the Fleet in part to entice, if possible, the Chinese war-ships out of the harbour, and partly to render what aid might be given to the land-forces in the capture of the forts. A little before 6.30 a. m., as the Third and Fourth Flying Squadrons were passing Paichih-yai, an order was signalled to them to assist the movements of the Army by bombarding the forts at the eastern entrance of the harbour. The Main and Second Flying Squadron at the east entrance, and the First Flying Squadron at the west, then began steaming to and fro, hoping to draw the attention of the Chinese men-of-war to themselves, the while narrowly observing the movements of the enemy on sea and land. The dull roar of cannon was now heard, like a continuous peal of thunder, so that the Fleet knew that the land-forces had begun the storming of the eastern coast-forts. It was a most exciting moment; all the more so, perhaps, as the Fleet, debarred from entering the harbour and making short work of the Chinese war-vessels, could do practically nothing. At 10 a. m. the noise of the battle had swelled to an almost deafening roar. At noon, the Third and Fourth Flying Squadrons, off Paichih-yai-chiu, had their first opportunity to assist the land forces, and began shelling the forts at long range. Meanwhile the *Ting Yuen*, *Tsi Yuen* and *Ping Yuen*, with four or five gunboats, were assisting the defence of the coast forts, steaming for this purpose slowly to and fro between the two islands of Liukung and Zhih. Just then the *Yoshino*, the flagship of the First Flying Squadron, signalled the *Matsushima* that the *Ting Yuen* had come to the eastern entrance of the Bay. Forming a column, the Fleet at once went back to the offing and there steamed again to and fro, in expectation of an attack. But none of the enemy's ships came forth to give them battle. A violent explosion was then heard among the forts on the east coast, and a huge column of white smoke was seen curling up from the spot. One

of the enemy's powder-magazines had, it appeared, been exploded. The Chinese were thereafter seen scampering out of the forts, which were promptly taken possession of by the Japanese and the guns in them directed towards the hostile fleet in the bay below. It was just 3 p. m. The First Flying Squadron, which had been watching the western entrance, and the Main and Second Flying Squadrons, which had been steaming about the eastern entrance, now combined, forming one long line of war-ships. The *Matsushima* leading, followed by the *Chiyoda*, *Hashidate* and 12 other men-of-war, were sailing hither and thither in the offing when the Third and Fourth Flying Squadrons, which had been lying off Paichih-yai-chiu, drew near. The *Tsukushi* led the van, followed closely by the *Akagi*, *Chökai*, *Maya* and *Atago*. They reconnoitred Liukung and tried to get near the eastern entrance of the harbour; but on recognising the Fleet's intention the forts on Liukung began firing heavily at the Third and Fourth Flying Squadron, the fort on Zhih Island soon following suit. The Squadron then shaped a different course, steaming towards the western entrance, while the *Matsushima* signalled the Second Flying Squadron to cannonade Zhih. In consequence of this order, the Squadron—the *Fuso* leading, then the *Kongo*, *Hiyei* and *Takao*, in the order named—passed by the Paichih-yai-chiu promontory, working slowly towards the eastern entrance, and receiving as they did so the concentrated fire of the forts on the two islands. The sun was setting and shone directly in the eyes of the Japanese gunners, rendering it impossible to take accurate aim; so the course of the Squadron was changed. On the Main and First Flying Squadrons approaching the mouth of the harbour, they too were fired at by the forts on Liukung but without receiving any damage, as the shells fell short. At 6 p. m. the First Flying Squadron took up its station near the eastern entrance and Aichi Island, and there once again began steaming slowly to and fro, not going farther away than this Aichi Island. The Main and Second Flying Squadrons lay in the offing of Chihming Island, steaming in a circle with a periphery of 30 nautical miles, and preserving a north to south course. The Third and Fourth Flying Squadrons anchored near Chihming Island. As for the torpedo-boats, the First and Second Flotillas lay just outside the harbour of Wei-hai-wei. The Third

Flotilla, under Commander Imai, made a bold attempt to break through the boom and reach the inner harbour. In this, however, they were unsuccessful, the boom being so massive and powerful a structure.

On January 31st, at 5 a. m., the Main and Second Flying Squadrons steered towards the eastern entrance, while the First Flying Squadron made for that on the western side of the harbour. At 8 a. m., the three Squadrons were again sailing to and fro before the barred ingresses, longing to get at closer quarters with the foe. The Third and Fourth Flying Squadrons, lying about 5 nautical miles off the coast, in vain endeavoured to bring the enemy's notice to themselves. The Chinese war-vessels made no attempt to reply to the challenge of the Japanese Fleet; but with the fort on Zih Island only kept up a desultory fire at the eastern coast-forts which were now in Japanese possession, while the strong-holds on Liukung and the forts near the west entrance sent occasional shells in the direction of the Squadrons in the offing. At 11 a. m. the weather had a very ugly look. A thick snow began falling, while the wind rose momentarily. At 3 p. m. the storm was exceedingly severe, and the sea outside the harbour quite mountainous. Withal it was so cold that the thermometer fell 25° below freezing point. The side, decks, armor, masts and rigging were soon covered an inch thick with snow and ice, the roll of the vessels measuring no less than 34°. It was impossible to stay so near this perilous coast; so leaving the work of patrolling the entrances to the harbour to the First Flying Squadron only, the other war-ships made haste for Yingching Bay. All that day and the next the storm continued to rage with unabated fury. In the afternoon of February 2nd, the wind having gone down a little, the Main Squadron steamed out of Yingching Bay at 2 p. m., and anchored, five hours later, near Chih-ming Island. At dawn of February 3rd the First and Second Flying Squadrons rejoined the Main, and all once again began sailing in the offing, keeping in single file. By this time the Japanese land-forces had entered the town of Wei-hai-wei and captured all the forts thereabouts. The enemy, it was reported, had fled in large numbers in the direction of Chefoo, but the Chinese men-of-war in the harbour still kept up hostilities, backed



by the forts on Liukung and Zhih. The Third and Fourth Flying Squadrons were now steaming near Ying-shan-kau, while the Second, at 10 a. m., drew near the eastern entrance. The *Fuso* fired at Liukung, eliciting a prompt reply. The Second Flying Squadron then suddenly veered and came on, in single file, to the entrance of the bay, firing simultaneously at the forts on Liukung and Zhih and the Chinese Fleet. The engagement lasted for about two hours, the Chinese war-ships, together with the forts, replying vigorously to the Japanese fire. At noon the Flagship signalled to cease firing, after which the *Tsukushi* and the other vessels composing the Fourth Flying Squadron steamed to the mouth of the harbour to reconnoitre, but soon returned. Subsequently the *Yamato*, *Katsuragi* and *Musashi*, of the Third Flying Squadron, went to the bombarded entrance. Yet as the sun was now setting and the snow again falling heavily, the Japanese Fleet could do nothing but return to the anchorage at Ying-shan-kau.

The next day, February 4th, the Main and First Flying Squadrons steamed toward the offing of Wei-hai-wei. Again they offered to do battle with the Chinese Fleet, and again the latter refused to accept the challenge. Admiral Itō and his officers then held a consultation, during the course of which they came to the following conclusion:—"The reason why the Chinese Fleet continue their stout defence despite the capture of Wei-hai-wei and all the forts on shore, is either because they intend to risk their fortunes in one more decisive battle, or because they hope to slip off unobserved if opportunity serves. There is no doubt, however, that their courage is greatly daunted by the situation. We must therefore adopt the offensive more vigorously than heretofore, and begin with torpedo-boat attacks by night." A part of the boom at the eastern entrance had already been broken away by the torpedo-boat No 6. So that night, while the First Flotilla patrolled the western entrance, the Second and Third Flotillas prepared to force their way to the doomed war-ships. At 2 a. m. of February 5th, the moon having gone down, these two flotillas slipped unperceived through the breach in the boom. Torpedo-boat No. 9, of the Second Flotilla, got within good range of the *Ting Yuen* and



The *Ting Yuen* after the torpedo-boat attack.

discharged an effective torpedo at her huge adversary. This done, the little boat turned at once, but on her way back to the breach in the boom was subjected to a storm of missiles from the now thoroughly awakened Chinese Fleet. Her engines were destroyed and four men in that part of the boat killed outright. No. 19 at once came to her aid, and fortunately succeeded in rescuing the remainder of the crew. No. 22, of the Third Flotilla, struck against a sunken rock and was wrecked. The enemy were now fully aware of their imminent peril and fired furiously at the other torpedo-boats, disabling them from coming to closer quarters. They therefore returned, left the harbour through the breach, and reached in safety the anchorage at Ying-shan-kan.

Another attack was planned for the following night; so at 2.45 a. m. of February 6th, Commander Machibara, with the First Flotilla, left the anchorage. No. 23 was leading, followed by *Kotaka* and Nos. 13 and 11. At 4.30 a. m. they reached the eastern entrance of the harbour, when, hearing the sound of a violent cannonading in the vicinity of Liukung Island, they

supposed this was being done to obviate any possibility of an attack as on the previous night. The water was plowed up by shells and the larger vessels kept rockets going up every now and then; yet, despite the tremendous risk, the tiny craft crept through the broken boom, and approached the Chinese Fleet at full speed. At 5 a. m., the cannonading having subsided, the boats separated and continued to search here and there for their adversaries. It was, of course, pitchdark as yet. The next thing was that some of the boats struck the enemy's search-light, their position being thus completely exposed. Ten minutes later one of the watchful vessels sent up a signal-rocket, upon which all the men-of-war in the harbour began to fire at random. The *Kotaka* had, by this time, singled out three of the hostile vessels, and now discharged a fish-torpedo at the largest, which lay midway between the other two. The torpedo was sent on its errand at a distance of 400 metres, but failed to strike its objective. The *Kotaka* then crept within 25 metres of the fated ship and discharged another torpedo. This hit the vessel and a fearful explosion ensued. Knowing that she had sunk at least one of the enemy's war-ships, the *Kotaka* then wheeled, passed through the boom unscathed, and reached Ying-shan-kau in safety. This was at just 6.30 a. m. Torpedo-boats Nos. 23 and 11 also sank one ship each. No. 13 did not succeed in attacking the enemy, while No 7 had to retire without getting within the harbour, having struck against the boom in attempting to steam through the breach. Despite the furious fire to which the First Flotilla had been exposed, none of the torpedo-boats received any injury whatever. The vessels which they had succeeded in sinking were the *Lai Yuen*,—which had played a conspicuous and gallant part in the long days of fighting—the *Wei Yuen*, and the *Pao Hwa*.

On February 7th the Combined Squadrons made an attack in force on Zhih and Liukung Islands, advantage being taken of the enemy's enfeebled condition. Leaving the torpedo flotillas at the western entrance in order to prevent any escape in that direction, the *Fuso*, leading the Second, Third and Fourth Flying Squadrons,—14 men-of-war all told—steamed, at 7.22 a. m., in the direction of Zhih Island, upon the signal of the *Matsushima*.

The Main and First Flying Squadrons headed for Liukung, and at 7.34 the *Chiyoda* began firing, followed by the *Itsukushima*, the *Hashidate*, and the rest. The forts on either island replied boldly and at once. The Main Squadron, led by the *Matsushima*, got within 2000 metres of the enemy and steered, still firing, around to port. The First Flying Squadron also advanced, firing incessantly. When the engagement had reached its height, the 13 Chinese torpedo-boats suddenly made a dash for the western exit. This was at once espied by the watchful Japanese, who promptly steamed in their direction, the *Yoshino* firing two or three shots after the fugitive boats. The latter then fled westwards at full speed, while the First Flying Squadron, and, a little later on, the Main Squadron, gave chase. With the exception of two, all the rest of the torpedo-boats ran aground and were either destroyed or captured by the Japanese. The two that escaped reached Chefoo in safety, though not without scars to testify of the imminence of their peril. During this attack the *Matsushima's* funnel was struck and three men wounded; the *Naniwa* received a shell in her coal-bunkers, but no one saw injured. The fort on Zhih Island was this day entirely destroyed.

On February 8th every vessel in the Japanese Fleet was vigilantly guarding the exits of the harbour. In order to better attack the few ships still afloat in the bay, it was decided to destroy the boom at the entrance. So, at 11 p. m., a tender and a boat were sent from each of the four men-of-war composing the Main Squadron, and these made for the eastern entrance. The officers in the torpedo-boats attached to the *Yoshino*, *Naniwa* and *Akitsu-shima*, destroyed the boom with electric cable, while the seamen of the *Takachiho* cut the timbers asunder. In all about 400 metres of the boom here were broken up.

At 8 a. m. of the 9th, the Third Flying Squadron, the *Tenryū* leading and the *Katsuragi* bringing up the rear, opened fire on Liukung, steaming around to the eastern entrance. The *Yoshino*, *Takachiho* and *Akitsu-shima* of the First Squadron, with the *Chiyoda* from the Main Squadron, meanwhile guarded the eastern entrance. At 10 a. m. the Second Flying Squadron joined with them, and after a short bombardment of the island forts and ships, went back to the offing. During the engagement, two

shells from the captured fort at Lukentsoi struck the *Ching Yuen* between wind and water, the ship sinking quickly. Thus only four men-of-war—the *Chen Yuen*, *Tsi Yuen*, *Ping Yuen*, and *Kwang Ping*, with six smaller gunboats, were left afloat in the harbour. At 4.45 p. m. the Third Flying Squadron withdrew to the Ying-shan-kau anchorage; and 11 p. m. the Japanese Fleet attempted to destroy the remaining portions of the boom. From this they were prevented by the tremendous fire from the forts on Liukung and the devoted ships still above water.

Nothing of importance occurred on February 10th. The *Itsukushima* stayed close to the entrance on guard, where, after the sun had set, she was joined by the *Matsushima*, *Chiyoda* and *Hashidate*, the four vessels bewildering the sorely-harrassed foe by their broadsides.

The following day, February 11th, being the *Kigen-setsu*, or festival in honour of the foundation of the Japanese Empire and the enthronement of the Emperor Jimmu, the ships celebrated this national holiday, each vessel being gaily dressed with bunting. None the less, at 9 a. m., the Third Flying Squadron again advanced to bombard the fort on the south-eastern extremity of Liukung Island, while one or two of the captured land-forts assisted in the cannonade. The *Tenryū* lost Captain Nakano Shinyō, and four seamen (all killed) while Takano Yasukichi, an engineer, and four seamen were wounded, the vessel's bridge being completely shot away by a well-aimed shell. The *Yoshino* had four wounded, including her Second Engineer. The *Katsuragi* had a 24 c. m. shell strike her larboard quarter, one man being killed outright while six others—among them Captain Kurita Nobuki—were wounded. Her bow-chaser was also destroyed. Of the marines sent from the *Iwaki* and *Katsuragi* to aid the landforces, several were wounded, one chief gunner quite severely. At 11 a. m. the Second Flying Squadron came to the aid of the combatants, and the firing was kept up continuously until 1.30 p. m. As night fell the First Flying Squadron, just outside the western entrance, maintained a brisk fire on Liukung and the ships still floating in the harbour. This was done in order to distract the attention of the Chinese from the eastern entrance, where great efforts were being made to destroy the boom com-

pletely. Yet these efforts failed, owing to the high wind and heavy sea.

The Chinese had long since known that their fate was sealed; nevertheless the poor remnants of the Peiyang Squadron kept fighting till the very last, and this in a manner well worthy of that Squadron's fame. Admiral Ting and his officers had done all that men could do; escape was impossible; it was either capitulation or total annihilation. And so, on the next day (February 12th), the gallant Admiral surrendered, with all the war-ships in the harbour and the still unconquered forts on Liukung Island. And that same day he and two other high officers committed suicide.

---

### III.—THE SURRENDER.

AT dawn of February 12th, 1895, the once great Peiyang Squadron was almost a thing of past. Four men-of-war and six gunboats still floated in the harbour of Wei-hai-wei, and of these several were so greatly mauled as to be almost incapable of fighting any longer. The Zhih fort had been silenced, the magazine there having been exploded by a shell; the forts on Liukung, though still bidding defiance to the Japanese, had reached the limit of endurance. And so, at 8 a. m., one of the smaller gunboats, the *Chen Pe*, came steaming out of the harbour, flying a white flag. She made directly for the *Matsushima*, and as she did torpedo-boats Nos. 5, 6 and 13 at once ranged alongside the Flagship to render assistance, if necessary. Staff-Commander Shimamura Haya-o, who, in full uniform, was on board No. 5, then hailed the *Chen Pe* and asked why the gunboat had left the harbour and what their business with the *Matsushima* might be. He was answered that Commander Ching Peih-kwang of the *Kwang Ping* was aboard, bringing a letter from Admiral Ting to the Commander of the Japanese Fleet. A boat was lowered from the *Chen Pe*, and the messenger rowed swiftly to the *Matsushima*, where he handed the long-expected missive to Vice-Admiral Itō in person. The text ran as follows:—"I, Ting, Commander-in-

chief of the Peiyang Squadron, acknowledge having previously received a letter from Vice-Admiral Itō, Commander of the Port of Saseho. This letter I have not answered until to-day, owing to the hostilities going on between our fleets. It had been my intention to continue fighting until every one of my men-of-war was sunk and the last seaman killed; but I have reconsidered the matter and now request a truce, hoping thereby to save many lives. I beseech you most earnestly to refrain from further hurting the Chinese and Westerners in the service of the Army and Navy of China as well as the townspeople of Wei-hai-wei; in return for which I offer to surrender all my war-ships, the forts

on Liukung and all material of war in and about Wei-hai-wei to the Empire of Japan." The writer further added that if Vice-Admiral Itō acceded to these terms, he desired to have the Commander-in-chief of the British war-ships in the offing become the guarantor of the contract; finally, an answer was required by the next day. The letter was dated, in accordance with the Chinese calender, "18th day, 1st month, 21st year of Kwanghsū."



H. I. H. CAPTAIN PRINCE  
ARISUGAWA TAKEHITO.

On the receipt of this letter a council was hastily assembled on board the *Matsushima*, those present, besides Vice-Admiral Itō,

being Commander Samejima Kazunori (First Flying Squadron), Commander Ai-ura (Second Flying Squadron), H. I. H. Captain Prince Arisugawa Takehito, in command of the *Matsushima*, and Captain Dewa Shigeto, Chief of Staff. Captain Muraoka Tsunetoshi, Chief Gunnery Officer, was further sent at once to Field Marshal Ōyama, then at Hoshan, in order to obtain his advice in the matter. Before, however, Captain Muraoka could return, Vice-Admiral Itō and his Staff Officers concluded to accept Admiral Ting's proposal with the exception of asking the British Admiral

to guarantee the contract. A dozen each of beer and champagne was sent to Captain Ching, with a box of *kushi-gaki*, or dried persimmons, Vice-Admiral Itō's reply accompanying the little gift. Soon after Ching had returned, Lieut.-Colonel Ichiji Kōsuke, Adjutant of the Chief of the Second Army Staff, accompanied by Captain Ishii, came from Field Marshal Ōyama; and all began to discuss what future arrangements should be made. Admiral Itō's reply ran thus:—

“I have the honour to acknowledge the receipt of your esteemed favour and to accept the proposal therein contained. Accordingly I shall receive all the men-of-war, the forts, and all warlike material from your hands. As to the time when the surrender is to take place, I\* shall consult with you again on receiving your reply to this. My idea is, after taking delivery of everything, to escort you and the others referred to your letter on board of one of our war-ships to some safe place, where your convenience may be suited. If I be permitted to speak quite frankly, I advise you, for your own and your country's sake, to remain in Japan until the war is over. Should you decide to come to my country, I assure you that you will be treated with distinguished consideration. But if you desire to return to your native land, I shall, of course, put no obstacles in your path. As for any British guarantee, I think it quite unnecessary, and trust fully in your honour as an officer and a gallant man. Requesting your reply to this by 10 a. m. to-morrow, I have the honour to remain, etc.”

At 8.25 a. m. the next day, Commander Ching came once more, but this time in the *Chen Chung* gunboat, the Chinese flag flying at half-mast. On handing his superior's reply to Vice-Admiral Itō, he stated that when Admiral Ting had read the Japanese Admiral's letter, he had said that there was nothing left for him to desire, Vice-Admiral Itō having acceded to his request. He had immediately afterwards calmly taken his own life, an example promptly followed by Liu Pu-chen, Captain of the sunken *Ting Yuen*, and Chang Wang-sen, Commander of the Liukung forts. Vice-Admiral Itō and his Staff were much shocked at this news, all the more so as the dead Admiral had,

---

\* The term used in the original is *Shokan*, or “petty officer.”



until the outbreak of the war, been on intimate terms with Vice-Admiral Itō. Admiral Ting's last letter was as follows:—"I am delighted to learn that you are in the enjoyment of good health.\* I thank you heartily for your kind reply and the assurance that the lives of those under me will be spared. You have kindly forwarded me certain gifts, but these, while I thank you for them, I can not accept, our two nations being at war. You write that you desire me to surrender everything into your hands to-morrow.



ADMIRAL TING.

This is too short a period in which to make the necessary preparations, and I fear that the troops will not be able to evacuate the place by the time specified. I therefore pray you to wait until the 22nd day of the 1st month (Chinese calender=February 16th). You need not fear that I shall go back on my word." This was dated "18th day, 1st month", or February 12th. On this, Vice-Admiral conferred with the Officers of his Staff, and finally sent the following reply:—

"To the Officer in Command of the Chinese Fleet.

H. I. J. M. *Matsushima*,

Feb. 13th, 28th Meiji.

I have the honour to acknowledge the receipt of Admiral Ting's letter under date of the 18th day, 1st month (February 12th). As to the request therein contained that I shall consent to the postponement of the date of the transfer of the war-ships, etc., I consent on the following condition, that a plenipotentiary Chinese Official shall come this day at 6 p. m. on board my Flagship, the *Matsushima*, to arrange the manner in which the men-of-war and all other things shall be surrendered to Japan; the liberation of the Chinese combatants and their foreign employés in and

\* A much-used formula at the beginning of Chinese letters.

about Wei-hai-wei. In my last communication to the late Admiral Ting, I expressed my desire to confer with him personally concerning the time and other details of the surrender. But as the Admiral is now deceased, I desire that some one shall be sent hither in his place. Moreover would I specially emphasize the fact that the Officer who will come to the *Matsushima* to make the final arrangements, must be a Chinese and not an Occidental. I shall welcome a Chinese. I have the honour to be, etc."

Commander Ching left the Flagship at 10.40 a. m., on which the *Matsushima* signalled the sad news of Admiral Ting's death to the rest of the Japanese men-of-war, prohibiting, at the same time, any other music to be played by the bands than dirges, in honour of the deceased Admiral. At 5.20 p. m., Niu Chang-pin, Commander of the Liukung Island garrison, accompanied by Commander Ching and armed with plenipotentiary powers, came to the *Matsushima*, the *Chen Peen* being the gunboat which carried them. After negotiations lasting several hours, the two Chinese officers left the Flagship, the time of their departure being an hour before midnight. Despite what had occurred, the Japanese Fleet still maintained a watchful attitude, the torpedo-boats being all night on the alert; for sad experience had taught the Japanese that a Chinese promise was not necessarily trustworthy.

On the following day, February 14th, Lieut.-Colonel Ichiji Kōsuke returned to Hoshan in order to prepare to escort the Chinese troops beyond the Japanese lines. At 3.30 p. m. of this day the two Chinese Plenipotentiaries came again to the *Matsushima*, this time bringing a list of the Chinese and foreign officers in the Chinese Army and Navy thereabouts, together with the number of soldiers still within the forts, the amount of warlike material, etc. They moreover gave the names of those officers charged with handing over the men-of-war, forts, etc., to their new masters. The remaining articles of the agreement were not completely decided, for Vice-Admiral Itō had to refuse, and very positively at that, several requests preferred by the Chinese. The Japanese Admiral told one of the Plenipotentiaries, Niu Chang-pin, that it was impossible to criticize Admiral Ting's death in an adverse sense. There seemed to be nothing else for the kindly, gallant Chinese Admiral to do: he had no choice but

die. But so deeply did he, Vice-Admiral, feel the loss of this brave seaman and former friend that he would voluntarily return one of the gunboats, the *Kwang Tsi*, to the Chinese, in order to have the body conveyed in state to China. He added, most courteously, that he would let them choose whatever destination or port they might desire; that, if they so wished, the officers of the Chinese land and sea forces might depart on the same ship carrying the corpse of the late Admiral. The two Plenipotentiaries were profoundly grateful for this kindness and thanked the Admiral repeatedly for his words, rising to their feet in order to make low obeisance. Undoubtedly the forbearance and courtesy displayed by Vice-Admiral Ito on this occasion mainly contributed to the rapidity with which the terms of the surrender were agreed upon. The document contained eleven articles in all, and was signed by the Plenipotentiaries on both sides, each receiving a copy. The articles were as follow:—

Art. I.—The names of the Chinese military and naval officers shall be given to the Japanese in the order of their rank. With regard to the foreign employés, their respective countries shall be stated. Only the number of the soldiers, seamen and Chinese employé's need be given.

Art. II.—The officers of the Army and Navy shall give their written parole not to take part again in the war.

Art. III.—All the munition of war, the weapons, etc., shall be collected in a certain fixed place, the name of which place shall thereupon be told to the Japanese Admiral. The land-force shall land on Chiu Island, whence they shall be escorted beyond the Japanese lines at Wei-hai-wei. The landing of the troops shall take place between the hours of 5 p. m., February 14th, and 12 m. February 15th.

Art. IV.—Niu Chang-pin, acting as Plenipotentiary for the Chinese Army and Navy at Wei-hai-wei, shall nominate a Committee to attend to the delivery of the men-of-war, forts, etc., to the Japanese. The Committee shall supply the Japanese with full particulars concerning the war-ships, forts, etc., the number of large and small cannon, tonnage of the ships, the number of weapons other than cannon, etc., by noon of February 15th.

Art. V.—The Chinese naval and military officers, of native or

foreign birth, as well as the seamen, shall, in accordance with Article V. of this agreement, be permitted to leave Wei-hai-wei in the *Kwang Tsi* at noon of February 16th.

Art. VI.—The Chinese naval and military officers, of native or foreign birth, shall be permitted to take with them only their private and personal property, but not their weapons. And even this property shall, if deemed necessary, be examined and may be confiscated.

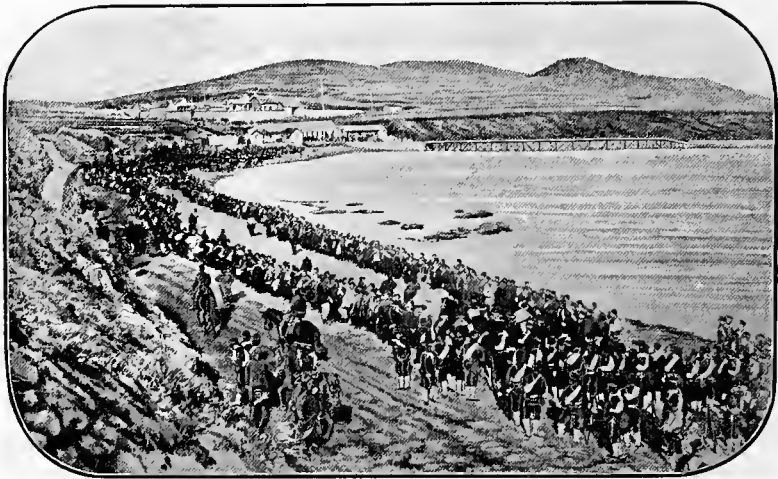
Art. VII.—The inhabitants of Liukung Island shall be told to stay on the Island as heretofore.

Art. VIII.—The landing of Japanese officers and soldiers on Liukung Island, in order to take over the forts and material of war, shall begin at 9 a. m. of February 16th. However, on this agreement being signed, the Japanese war-ships may freely enter the harbour of Wei-hai-wei, should such entrance be deemed necessary. The Chinese seamen, either of native or foreign, birth, may stay on board their respective vessels until 9 a. m. of February 16th. Those seamen who desire to leave Wei-hai-wei overland, shall land at the same time and place with the Chinese Army, and shall be escorted beyond the Japanese lines in like manner. The landing of such seamen shall begin at noon of February 16th, *i. e.* after the Army has completed its landing.

Art. IX.—Old and young men, women and other non-combatants may, if they so desire, leave Liukung Island by either of the two exits in native Chinese craft. But such craft shall be examined by the Japanese torpedo-boats and other war-ships lying off either entrance to the bay. And this examination shall further extend to the persons and baggage of the passengers.

Art. X.—The coffins of Admiral Ting and those of the officers next in rank, shall be sent out of the harbour at any time between noon of February 16th and noon of February 23rd, the *Kwang Tsi* acting as transport.

The *Kwang Tsi* which, out of respect for the spirit of the late Admiral Ting, (who did his duty manfully by his country), Vice-Admiral Itō has given back to the Chinese, shall be used at the will of Niu Chang-pin, now acting as Plenipotentiary Agent of the Chinese Army and Navy in Wei-hai-wei.



The Escorting of the Chinese Troops beyond the Japanese Lines.

The *Kwang Tsi* shall, on February 15th, be examined by Japanese naval officers in order to see that the ship's armament has entirely been removed.

Art. XI.—The Chinese naval and military officers in Wei-hai-wei shall make no further attempt to oppose the Japanese land and naval forces. Should there be any such attempt, this contract shall at once lose its force and the Japanese will at once re-commence hostilities.

Signed this 14th day of February, 28th year of Meiji and 21st of Kanghsü, on board H. I. J. M. *Matsushima*.

[L. S.]

Niu Chang-pin.

[L. S.]

Vice-Admiral Itō.

\*

\*

\*

\*

\*

The following morning the *Kwang Tsi* should have reported for examination but did not, the weather being very stormy. But early on February 16th the gunboat put in her appearance and was thoroughly examined and disarmed. On board were found 3 torpedoes, 30 rifles and 4 small cannon of an obsolete type. The torpedoes and rifles were removed, but the cannon were left so that a salute might be fired when the coffin containing the late Admiral Ting should be taken aboard. All the foreign

employés were sent on board the *Matsushima* for examination, and their written parole tested if penned by themselves or not. Thirteen were liberated, the rest being detained. The Chinese liberated, were as follow:—

Naval Officers	183
Cadets	30
Warrant Officers and Seamen	2841
Military Officers	40
Non-commissioned Officers and Rank and File	} 2040
Total	

More than 3,000 of the whole number were sent under escort beyond the Japanese lines, the remainder being taken to Chefoo in the *Kwang Tsi*, which made several trips for that purpose. The captured war-ships, including gun-boats, were the *Chen Yuen*, *Ping Yuen*, *Tsi Yuen*, *Kwang Ping*, *Chen Tung*, *Chen Hai*, *Chen Nan*, *Chen Pe*, *Chen Chung*, and *Chen Peen*. Prize crews were sent on board of these, and the ships despatched to their destination. And thus the Peiyang Squadron ceased to exist.

---

#### VI.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

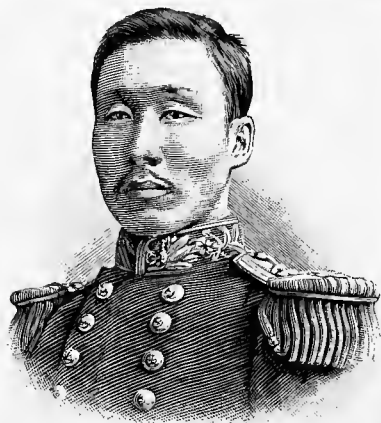
##### 1.—H. J. M. YOSHINO.

THE *Yoshino*, one of the finest vessels in the Japanese Fleet, was built in England in 1893. Her displacement is 4216 tons, and she is fitted out with 15,968 horse-power engines and carries 34 guns. The ship is built throughout of steel. The chief officers of the *Yoshino*, during the war, were Captain Kawahara Yo-ichi, Commander Yamada Hikohachi, and First Lieutenant Katō Tomosaburō, the latter being in charge of the battery. On the outbreak of the Tonghak Rebellion in Korea, the *Yoshino*, *Takachiho*, *Akitsuishima* and *Naniwa*, forming the First Flying Squadron, left Chemulpho on July 23rd, leaving the other vessels of the Fleet off Phungdo. On the 25th of the same month the Squadron returned to this island, there encountering with the

Chinese war-ships *Tsi Yuen* and *Kwang Yi*. The war began *de facto*, if not *de jure*, at this spot, for the Chinese vessels opened fire on the Japanese Squadron. The *Yoshino* instantly took up the challenge and gave chase to the *Tsi Yuen*, a running fight ensuing.

Again, on September 17th, in the great sea-fight of the Yellow Sea, off Haiyang, the *Yoshino* was the leader of the First Flying Squadron, and so in front of all the rest. The Chinese war-vessels, it will be remembered, began firing so soon as the interval between them the Japanese Fleet had decreased to one of 6000 metres; but the Japanese reserved their fire until not more than 3000 metres separated them from their antagonists. At this instant Captain Kawahara gave the order to fire, and thenceforth the guns were served with admirable precision and steadiness

of aim, not a shell being wasted. The result of the great battle we have narrated at length in another chapter.



CHIEF GUNNER KATŌ,  
H. I. M. *Yoshino*.

Now here, in Wei-hai-wei, the *Yoshino's* duties were manifold, and her crew were tireless in their endeavours to get at the Chinese Fleet in the harbour. When the enemy's 13 torpedo-boats stole, on February 7th, out of the harbour, the *Yoshino* was the first to give chase, and so succeeded that 11 out of the 13 boats were either captured or destroyed. Two only, steaming at the rate of 24 knots, managed

to make good their escape to Chefoo. They did not get to Chefoo directly, because of the *Yoshino's* hot pursuit, but concealed themselves in an inlet not far from that port, where they remained until the worst danger was over.

And so the *Yoshino*, owing to her powerful frame, engines and splendid guns, was conspicuous throughout the war: whether at Chemulpho, in the Yellow Sea, Talien Bay, at Port Arthur or

Wei-hai-wei: the Chinese coming finally to regard her as the fiercest and most-to-be-feared war-ship in the Japanese Fleet.

---

## 2.—THAT BABY!

THE assault of the Chaopei-tsai fort was a comparatively easy task for the Japanese, for the Chinese garrison was soon vanquished and the fort readily seized by the attacking forces. After all was over, a fine-looking Chinese woman was seen approaching the Japanese lines, having evidently lost her way. The woman was, in all probability, nothing more than the concubine of one of the Chinese officers in the fort before its capture; yet the Japanese took pity on her for the sake of her sex, and Lieut.-Colonel Kawamura Masanao, who was commanding a Battalion of Engineers in the Sixth Division, showed her what road to take and saw that she reached in safety a house in the nearest village. A few minutes later on some of the soldiers found a well-nourished Chinese baby boy lying on the ground, and it was supposed that the child belonged to the woman who had just been sent beyond the lines. Pitying the little fellow, who was crying bitterly, Captain Higuchi Seizaburō, of the Sixth Division, picked him up and did his best to console the baby. But as the young Chinaman refused to be comforted, Captain Higuchi called up one of the prisoners and told him that he, the Captain, would give him his liberty if he took that baby to its parents. To this the Chinese captive, a stalwart fellow who looked as if he might have children himself, joyfully consented; but the baby refused to be separated from its Japanese friend, and cried harder than ever when the Chinese tried to take it in his arms. So, holding the baby in his left arm while he grasped his sabre with the right, Captain Higuchi marched to the capture of the next fort, receiving at one time a bullet through his cap. The fort was taken in gallant style, the baby meanwhile looking on in wondering surprise at the din and uproar of the battle, perfectly content to rest on the kind-hearted Captain's shoulder. When all was over



this gallant officer gave his tiny charge to some of his troopers, who bore the child in safety to a Chinese house in a village hard by.

---

3.—CAPTAIN NOMURA.

BEFORE proceeding to the assault of Wei-hai-wei, it was necessary to find a suitable landing-place for the troops; and to this effect, as already narrated, the *Yoshino*, *Takachiho*, *Naniwa* and *Akitsu-shima* made search in the vicinity of the Shantung promontory.



CAPTAIN NOMURA, Commander  
H. J. M. *Takachiho*.

The actual condition and plans of the enemy the Fleet could not reconnoitre; for the war-ships might not approach during the day-time as they would instantly be sighted. Getting at last near Yingching Bay, the *Takachiho* lowered a boat for purposes of reconnaissance, and in it was Captain Nomura, with three or four marines. In the scouting that ensued Captain Nomura was foremost and utterly

reckless of himself. He returned to report that the enemy had failed to defend the all-important Bay as it should have been defended, and that a landing was practicable. Acting on his representations, the transports were speedily brought in and the whole landing of the Army accomplished in two days.

---

## 4.—BEFORE THE TORPEDO-BOAT ATTACK.

It being impossible to lure the Chinese war-ships out of the safe waters of the harbour—safe in so far as they were protected by the boom, the forts on Liukung and the numerous gun-boats,—it was resolved to attempt a torpedo-boat attack at night, the little craft to enter the harbour through the breach in the boom effected by No. 6. Vice-Admiral Itō therefore sent for Captain Imai, who was in command of the Third Torpedo Flotilla, and addressed him as follows:—"It will not do for us to continue any longer in the present way. To-night, immediately after the moon has set, an attack must be made by our torpedo-boats on the Chinese men-of-war in the harbour." "We shall do our best, Sir," replied Captain Imai with manly promptitude; "yet as the breach in the boom is very narrow, the torpedo-boats which do get through may very well be unable to return. If you do not object to this, Sir, I am quite ready for the attack." This was said with an unmoved countenance, but the Admiral was struck with the words and dauntless spirit that prompted them. Dashing away a tear that he had in vain endeavoured to conceal, the Admiral replied, a little huskily, "All right, then. If the worst happens, there is no help for it. I should be deeply grieved to lose you, but this deed must be done for our country's sake. Do the best you can, and inscribe your name high up on the walls of the Temple of Fame! The Second Torpedo Flotilla must also make a dash for the inner harbour to-night, so tell Commander Fujita what I have just said." There was a quick stern glance; a warm clasp of the hands; and the two heroes parted without the hope of seeing each other once more. But Captain Imai succeeded in his perilous mission and, after sinking the enemy's most powerful war-ships, regained the Fleet and won for himself undying fame.

## 5.—A NOBLE ACT.

ON February 11th, it will be remembered, the *Katsuragi* and

several other Japanese war-ships had a severe fight with the island forts. In the heat of the action, a hostile shell struck the breech of one of the *Katsuragi's* larger guns. As quick as thought, Takada Tomikichi, seaman of the third class and then employed in serving powder to the gunners, seized a large bag of powder close by the gun and sprang backwards with it, at the same time receiving an ugly wound in his right arm from a fragment of the shell. It was a most gallant act, for if he had not removed the powder a fatal explosion might have occurred, if not the loss of the ship.

---

6.—HOW THE BOOM WAS DESTROYED.

KŌZAKI TATSUJIRŌ a warrant-officer of the first-class, was present at the fighting at Talien, Port Arthur and Wei-hai-wei; further taking part in the protecting landing of the forces at Hwayang-kau.

Kōzaki was attached to torpedo-boat No. 6, and a favourite with all because of his activity and fearlessness. This No. 6 was struck no less than 17 times in various places, either by the hostile men-of-war or torpedo-boats, and ran several times the gauntlet of the enemy's guard-boats, being time and again exposed to the utmost peril. In the worst moments the duty of steering this gallant No. 6, fell to Kōzaki, who was ever calmest when the danger was extreme. On several occasions he kept at the wheel day and night continuously. During the attack on Port Arthur he never left the wheel for twenty-eight hours, yet gave no sign of fatigue nor offered to relinquish his post to another. But his great personal merit was never so apparent as in the destruction of the boom at the eastern entrance to Wei-hai-wei harbour.

It was during the night of February 3rd, after the moon had gone down, that No. 6 stole noiselessly through the murky water to the harbour-mouth. After a prolonged search, a narrow passage was discovered between the eastern extremity of the boom and Lungmiao-tsai. With infinite caution the torpedo-boat

was steered through the narrow road, and into the harbour beyond ; for it was necessary to begin the destruction of the boom from the inside or not at all. At a distance of less than 1500 metres were the dim outlines of seven of the enemy's torpedo-boats, all in a line and apparently doing picket-duty, and quite conscious of the entrance of the intrepid No. 6, as, for the last 30 minutes, they had been keeping up a steady fire in the direction of the massive steel and wooden boom. The fort on Zhih Island now also began firing, using a 12 c. m. Q.-F. gun. Shells flew everywhere above and about No. 6, but the darkness being intense and the boat lying low in the water not one struck her, though several shells flew whizzing close past her sides.

The night was bitterly cold, a thin film of ice covering the sea and preventing rapid movement. The only knowledge of the whereabouts of the gallant vessel that the Chinese could have, was when she moved forward, the crackling of the ice betraying her. It seemed utterly impossible to escape destruction, yet the crew of No. 6 behaved like the heroes they were. With infinite difficulty a heavy charge of blasting powder was fastened to the boom ; but, most unluckily, a fluke of No. 6's anchor cut through the wire connecting the explosive with the battery, and all the work was rendered useless. Then Kōzaki sprang from the wheel-room where he had been, and, with an encouraging word to the others, speedily repaired the damage with a bit of copper wire and some packing. But either the powder itself was faulty or wet or something the matter with the wire, at all events the charge failed to be exploded. There was nothing left but to try hand-charges. To make these take effect was a most difficult and perilous piece of business at any time, and doubly so now in the darkness of the night, while the enemy's shells and bullets were flying about the men or ricocheting over the heaving sea. Yet Kōzaki, walking out to the bow of No. 6 and getting on the boom in this way, succeeded in fastening three heavy charges to the timber. Clambering back to the boat, the lanyard was pulled taut and all three charges burst into flame, with tremendous effect, a great piece of the boom being torn away. Every ship in the harbour was now awake to what was going on, and the forts on Liukung and Zhih Islands roared out their anger,

while the Chao-pei-tsai fort, in possession of the Japanese, was not slow to reply to the thunder below. The great shells came crash, crash, striking the water on both sides of No. 6, or flying with a sinister scream just above her deck. Yet in all this turmoil and confusion Kōzaki steered the devoted vessel back to the narrow entrance, past the furiously picket-boats, unscathed and without injury. In a few minutes more the heroic men were beyond the reach of shot and shell and steaming at full speed for the anchoring-ground. It had been hot work, but grandly conceived and superbly accomplished, thanks chiefly to Kōzaki. Through this breach, a little later on, the torpedo-boat flotillas entered to destroy to finest of the Chinese fleet and thus secure the downfall and surrender of Wei-hai-wei.

---

#### 7.—TWO BRAVE MEN.

ON February 4th some members of the crew of the *Itsukushima* were sent to garrison the eastern coast-fort. Among these men were Taguchi Kōtō, a seaman of the first-class, and Kayano Iha-chi. All were placed under the orders of Captain Nakashima, then commanding the fort. On the 7th of the same month, Sub-Lieutenant Kawahara, who was in charge of the Chao-pei-tsai fort, ordered the men to aim the 24 c. m. cannon at Zhih Island in the roadway below. The huge gun was fired and the projectile struck the powder-magazine on that island, causing an instant and fearful explosion. This at once placed the key of the eastern entrance to Wei-hai-wei in the hands of the Japanese.

The subsequent surrender of the imprisoned fleet and the fortresses on the harbour-mouth islands, was directly attributable to this fatal shot. And that the great cannon which sent the shell on its message was serviceable, is due to the meritorious labour of the above-mentioned two men. In the attack on the Chao-pei-tsai fort, they had taken active part. But when the Chinese in the fort had become convinced of the futility of defence, they voluntarily fired the powder-magazine, resolved that the guns in the fort should not fall into the hands of the Japanese.

The five cannon there were overthrown, or driven deep into the ground by the tremendous force of the explosion, and all the instruments used by the gunners were scattered to the four winds. So thorough had been the work of destruction that the Chinese doubtless considered the cannon utterly useless thenceforth. But so soon as Taguchi and Kayano got into the fort, they set to dig out and train the 24 c. m. gun on the Zhih Island fortifications. It was a heavy piece of work, the cannon being imbedded in the icy gravel, but finally the untiring efforts of the two men were crowned with merited success, and at the fourth shot they exploded the Zhih Island powder-magazine.

Not content with this, Kayano got a 28 c. m. cannon into position, and, after a prolonged search, found the missing gas-check of this gun quite 80 metres from the fort. As this had been damaged he repaired it with such rude tools as he could find, and finally had the gun in working-order. The process of repairing the gas-check and certain parts of the gun was done solely by the light of the moon; for by day he could not leave the fort without exposing himself to a storm of missiles from the Chinese war-ships in the harbour, nor might he, for the same reason, use a light by night. Yet despite all difficulties he got the bursting charge into order as well as the much-injured breech of the gun. When the moon failed him, he worked on by the pale reflection of the snow. With the thus refitted cannon, Kayano did much damage to the enemy's fleet and the forts on the two harbour-mouth islands. Later on, some men from the *Yamato* coming into the fort, this gun was trained on the Liukung strongholds, and by a shell destroyed a large cannon in one of them.

---

#### 8.—THE SHIPS AND THEIR COMMANDERS.

THE names of the Japanese war-ships taking part in the capture of Wei-hai-wei and the Chinese Fleet, as well as of the officers in command, are as follow :—

VESSEL.	COMMANDING OFFICER.	RANK.
<i>Yoshino</i>	Kawahara Yoichi	Captain.
<i>Takachiho</i>	Nomura Tadashi	Captain.
<i>Matsushima</i>	H. I. H. Arisugawa Takehito	Captain.
<i>Itsukushima</i>	Arima Shin-ichi	Captain.
<i>Chiyoda</i>	Uchida Masatoshi	Captain.
<i>Akitsuishima</i>	Kamimura Hikonojō	Captain.
<i>Naniwa</i>	Tōgō Heihachirō	Captain.
<i>Fusō</i>	Arai Aritsura	Captain.
<i>Kongō</i>	Kataoka Shichirō	Captain.
<i>Hiyei</i>	Sakura Kikunosuké	Captain.
<i>Takao</i>	Sawa Ryōkan	Captain.
<i>Tsukushi</i>	Miyoshi Katsumi	Captain.
<i>Tenryū</i>	Serada Tasuku	Captain.
<i>Kaimon</i>	Yabé Okikatsu	Captain.
<i>Musashi</i>	Itō Tsunesaku	Brevet-Commander.
<i>Atago</i>	Inoue Yoshitomo	Commander.
<i>Katsuragi</i>	Oda Tōru	Commander.
<i>Maya</i>	Hashimoto Masa-akira	Commander.
<i>Chōkai</i>	Hosoya Suke-uji	Commander.
<i>Yamato</i>	Uemura Shōnojō	Captain.
<i>Akagi</i>	Hagazaki Gengō	Commander.
<i>Yayeyama</i>	Hirayama Tōjirō	Captain.
<i>Amagi</i>	Nashiha Toki-oki	Commander.
<i>Banjō</i>	Kashiwahara Nagashigé	Commander.
<i>Ōshima</i>	Mukai Atsutada	Commander.

## TRANSPORTS AND CRUISERS.

<i>Yamashiro Maru*</i>	Captain Geki Yasumasa.
<i>Ōmi Maru*</i>	Captain Ogata Koreyoshi.

\*Ex-merchant steamers.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

---

### THE BATTLE OF TAPING-SHAN.

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

AFTER the successful siege of Kaiping by the Mixed First Brigade under Major-General Nogi, the immediate plan of the Japanese commanders was to overwhelm the enemy in the vicinity of Yingkow, by using Kaiping as a base of operations.

The Chinese troops around the former city steadily increased in number; indeed, according to the reports brought in by Japanese scouts, there were not less than 40,000 fighting men in the neighbourhood of Yingkow and Tienchwangtai. So confident did the enemy appear in their own strength, that it became evident that a strong assault would shortly be made on the Mixed Brigade. In order to reinforce this body, therefore, the First Division, hitherto stationed at Kinchow, started over the snowy roads northwards on January 18th, reaching Kaiping just four days later.

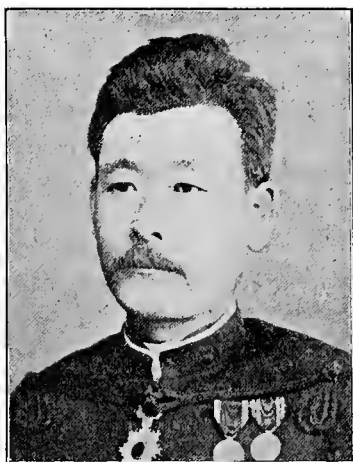
A glance at Taping-shan—most erroneously thus named, for the Chinese style means “Mountain of Great Peace”—and its neighbourhood will make clear the subsequent movements of the Japanese forces. The plain of Yingkow covers about 20-28 miles north to south by 6-8 miles east to west. On the south it is bounded by the mountains, or rather lofty hills, running just north of Kaiping; on the east lie the hills of Tashihkiao; while the Liao River and Gulf of Péchihli enclose the plain on the south and south-west. In spring the whole plain is, as a rule, a great swampy morass, the excessive moisture being due to the snow melting on the surrounding hills. In the midst of this marsh



stands the hill known as *Taping-shan*,—of not great height, 70 or 80 metres at most, but commanding the plain as well as the *Yingkow* roads. From *Kaiping* two roads lead to *Yingkow*, the one following the coast-line and passing through *Haishan-chai*, *Langchih-chang* and *Hongchia-chang*; while the other is a roundabout highway touching *Pohtai-tse*, *Senchia-kautse* and *Laoying-miao*. But while the latter route is longer, it passes through a much greater number of villages, and thus has more attractions and conveniences. *Taping-shan* lies midway between these two roads. In the *Yingkow* plain itself there are a good many hamlets, but none large enough to serve as a halting-place for passing troops. From the eastern portion of the plain the broad expanse of the Gulf is visible. Yet in February the sea freezes over all along the coast, so firmly indeed that heavy weights can pass over the frozen surface; while the whole expanse of the plain, during the winter months, is covered with deep drifts of snow, the roads thereby being rendered quite indistinguishable.

Beginning with January 24th, the Mixed Brigade had several skirmishes with the enemy, but all of a minor nature. In consequence of this, however, one detachment was sent to hold the important places on *Taping-shan*. On February 21st a force of about 5000-6000 Chinese entered the villages of East and West *Shihlikow*, north of the hill, and shortly afterwards the Japanese pickets were attacked by a number of these men, the Japanese being compelled to relinquish their posts, knowing that it would be madness for them to contend with so overwhelming a force. The Main Body of the Brigade was then at *Pohtai-tse*, while the other troops were stationed in the neighbourhood of *Kaiping*. The Brigade Commander, Lieut.-General *Yamaji*, at once recognized the fact that it would be extremely unwise to leave *Taping-shan* in the hands of the enemy; and so he determined to attack the Chinese in the vicinity of the hill on February 24th. To this effect he collected the whole Japanese force, on the 23rd, at *Pohtai-tse*, and made the following arrangements:—Major-General *Nishi*, with the Second Regiment of Infantry, one Sub-company of Cavalry and one Battalion of Artillery, to proceed to the left of the hill—the western side; Major-General *Nogi*, with the First Brigade of Infantry and two Battalions of Artillery, to

go around to the right or eastern side of Taping-shan. Both of these bodies were ordered to set out at 7 a. m. of the following day. Moreover, one Battalion of Cavalry was to keep on the right flank of the Japanese forces as a cover, for that was the most exposed part. Camp was broken at midnight in consequence of these directions, the Brigade Commander with the Third Regiment leaving the place at 2 a. m. At 6.30 a. m. the Japanese Left, under Major-General Nishi, began firing on the enemy in a small village west of Taping-shan; and in a little over an hour later they were in unquestioned possession of this and the adjoining hamlet, the beaten enemy flying north and westwards under a heavy artillery fire. The Chinese troops in these two villages numbered in all 2700. At 7.30 a. m. the Japanese Right, under Major-General Nogi, began active hostilities, and, at 8.30 a. m. marched into North Taping-shan village. In the meantime the First Regiment of Infantry, to the right, assisting the Fifteenth Regiment, did good work in driving the Chinese out. Taping-shan was thus completely in the occupation of the Japanese by nine o'clock in the forenoon. None the less, East and West Shihlikow, villages about 5000-6000 metres distant from the northern spur of the hill, were still strongly defended by the Chinese, who showed no disposition to budge. Major-General Nogi now despatched the Fifteenth Regiment to the capture of East Shihlikow, an undertaking in which they were entirely successful. But the enemy at West Shihlikow were much more obstinate in their defence of the place. No less than 20,000 Chinese were gathered here shortly after 10 a. m. They had ten cannon and a number of machine-guns, using smokeless powder. These pieces kept up a constant fire at the approaching Japanese, the aim being excep-



MAJOR-GENERAL NISHI.

tionally good. Seeing the many casualties caused in the Japanese ranks, the enemy spread out on either side, keeping the village in their centre, and acting as if they thought to completely surround the attacking troops. The Chinese front, composed of not less than 5000 men, swung around to meet the First Regiment, then a little south of Laoying-miao, but halted in the snow as they came face to face with the Japanese. Towards the Japanese Left came another body of 8000 troops, advancing steadily but very slowly. Now the Japanese had already made themselves masters of Taping-shan, the prime object of the movement; but, under the circumstances, the fighting had to be continued, though at such enormous odds. It was absolutely necessary to dislodge the enemy and break up their camp; yet so strong was their position and so great their numbers that Lieut.-General Yamaji desired, if possible, to avoid a pitched battle. But the Chinese, conscious of their own strength, seemed not in the least disposed to retire. The conflict was inevitable. At 11 a. m. two Battalions, with a battery, were sent to East Shihlikow with the command to open fire on the enemy, and thus precipitate matters. The Japanese Artillery dashed boldly over the plain, in full view and easy range of the enemy, who were not slow to take advantage of the situation. Halting on a level space of ground a little to the north-west of the village, the Japanese gunners at once began firing heavily upon the enemy crowded in West Shihlikow. The Chinese Artillery replied to the challenge and the roar of the guns was kept up for three hours, at the end of which time the enemy, though greatly galled by the Japanese fire, still showed no disposition to evacuate West Shihlikow. This would not do: nothing would serve but the total suppression of the foe at this important point. The Brigade Commander therefore resolved upon attacking the enemy's centre, and to this end Major-General Nogi was ordered to storm, with the Fifteenth Regiment, the village sheltering the Chinese Army. At the same time the First Regiment, on the Japanese right, menaced a body of the enemy, about 6000 strong, south of Laoying-miao, and kept them from communicating with the forces in West Shihlikow. Major-General Nishi was instructed to march his men around to the west of Taping-shan, to prevent any reinforcement from coming up in that direction,

and, in case of need, to act as an aid to the devoted Fifteenth Regiment—now about to engage in a struggle to the death. Just as these orders were about to be carried out, the Chinese Right boldly advanced in order to attack the Japanese Left. Their approach was, however, prevented by the Artillery there stationed, whose splendid fire not only kept the foe at a distance but even compelled them to withdraw within their own lines. Shortly after 3 p. m. the Fifteenth Regiment set out on their perilous mission, the attention of the Chinese meanwhile being entirely absorbed by the operations of the First Regiment and the troops under Major-General Nishi. It was a grand sight to see the brave Fifteenth march through the deep snow to the attack. With all the drill and precision of a parade they pressed steadily nearer the foe, the serried lines as regular and trim as if it had been a field-day instead of a duel of doubtful issue. Lieut-General Yamaji, deeming the task well nigh beyond their powers, now sent to the Regiment's aid the First Battalion of the First Regiment and two Battalions from the Third Regiment. While this reinforcement rapidly followed after the advancing troops, the enemy, who had been fallen back before the Japanese Left, suddenly veered around and pressed against the Left Wing of the approaching Fifteenth. At the same time the Chinese hitherto engaged with the First Regiment turned and attacked the Fifteenth's Right Wing. A tremendous hand-to-hand conflict ensued, the Chinese fighting for all they were worth; but nothing could withstand the desperate valour of the Fifteenth. At 4.30 p. m. the redoubts of West Shihlikow were captured, and in a few minutes more the vast multitudes of Chinese were in full flight along the Yingkow road.

The carnage had been fearful. At the back of Taping-shan the Brigade now began burying the dead, but although they worked the entire night, this sad duty was not ended when the next day dawned. During the night the First Regiment under Major-General Nogi bivouacked in East Shihlikow, keeping a sharp lookout for any return on the part of the Chinese. But the enemy had been too thoroughly cowed to dream of making an attempt to regain the villages—where the dismantled farm-houses, corpse-strewn streets and general desolation eloquently spoke of

the horrors of war.

In this battle the Japanese lost 280 killed and wounded, including many officers. The Chinese losses were considerably over two thousand, the village of West Shihlikow in particular presenting a fearful and ghastly spectacle. It was not until noon of the following day that the Japanese succeeded in burying all the Chinese dead.

---

## II.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

### 1.—A GALLANT FOOT-SOLDIER.

THE cold was intense when the Fifth Company of the Third Regiment began the wearisome march north-wards. And yet, despite the unusual amount of impedimenta with which each soldier was burdened, the men managed to cover between 18-19 miles daily. Many of the poor fellows suffered severely from frost-bitten or wounded feet. Niyama Tomekichi, a second-class reservist private in this Company, had dreadfully injured feet, so that he was able to wear neither shoes nor straw-sandals, and the surgeon advised him to give and go to hospital. But this advice gave him intense disappointment, and he said:—"I can not refuse to go if you order me to do so. Yet it would be dreadful to be put on the sick list for such slight injuries. I want to die in the smoke and din of battle, even if both my feet have to be cut off. Pray, Sir, permit me to keep up with the Company." Moved by the brave man's words, the surgeon consented, though reluctantly, for he well knew that every step must give the man agony. So Niyama was able to take part in the battle of Taping-shan, where he acquitted himself most manfully, although his sufferings before and after the struggle must have been dreadful.

---

### 2.—ORIHARA TAMEKICHI.

A THIRD-CLASS private of the Sixth Company, Third Regiment, Orihara Tamekichi, distinguished himself at Taping-shan

by kindness and devotion to his wounded comrades. On March 24th, on the way back to the camp, after the battle was over, one of the men dropped out and fell down by the roadside. But as it was very late and a dark night, no one knew of this occurrence until the Company came to a halt at midnight, in order to bivouac where they were. A Sergeant at once offered to go in search of the missing man, but Orihara, hearing of the matter, called out: "I am not yet so very tired. Please let me go and search." Permission being granted, Orihara set out at once, without removing either knapsack or anything else. After retracing his steps for about 1000 metres, Orihara discovered the injured man—for he had fallen out because of a wound—lying senseless. Orihara tried his best to arouse him, but without avail. Stripping the injured man of his accoutrements, but without laying aside his own, Orihara raised his unconscious comrade on his back and staggered off. The night was a blustering, rainy one, so that Orihara lost his way; yet he never faltered, and finally regained the bivouac shortly before three o'clock in the morning. It is gratifying to narrate in conclusion that the rescued man thereafter recovered.

---

### 3.—ACCOMPLISHMENT OF DUTY.

WHEN the First Division of the Second Expeditionary Army advanced to the attack of Kinchow-ching, the larger part of the Division was obliged to make for Sanshih-lipu, branching off the Petsewo highway, and reconnoitre the adjacent territory with unusual care and precaution. This had to be done on account of the imperfect nature of the maps with which the leaders were supplied. At this time Sergeant Ogawa Ikutarō of the First Cavalry Battalion, in company with his Captain, was conspicuous for the skill and address he displayed, guiding finally the Division with celerity and in safety to Sanshih-lipu. The road taken by the Sergeant was so deep in the hills and apparently so devious that it was at first surmised that some mistake had been made. Yet it afterwards appeared that the Sergeant had dis-

covered and selected the best and shortest possible route.

Again, after the capture of Kaiping-ching in January, 1895, Sergeant Ogawa was active in scouting the enemy, his Battalion being at the time stationed at Chiu-chia-ten-tse. Later on, accompanied by only three mounted troopers, he went towards Peh-miao-tse on a reconnaissance. On getting near the place, they were surprised by being suddenly fired upon by the enemy, a random bullet striking the bold Sergeant in the breast and inflicting a mortal wound. But, nothing daunted, he turned to his comrades and said that, the main part of their reconnaissance having been achieved, they might not draw rein until their report was handed in. He, for one, was determined not to die until this duty should have been accomplished. The enemy were then in hot pursuit of the four cavalry-men and chased them for quite 5 kilometres, when the Japanese gave them the slip. Sergeant Ogawa was now suffering almost mortal agony and could hardly keep in the saddle, yet bravely pressed on. At last, after a long and most painful ride, the four men regained their Company, and Sergeant Ogawa, standing erect, minutely reported all that had occurred or had been seen. One seeing that his Captain fully understood what had been said, the dying man smiled and gasped out, "I have done my duty." These were his last words. It is astonishing to learn that he had ridden fully 26 kilometres after receiving his mortal wound. Nothing but the most unbending and determined will kept him alive until he had accomplished his duty.

---

#### 4.—CARELESS OF HIS WOUND.

HAIBARA KAORU, a private of the second-class in the Twelfth Company, First Regiment, acted as a despatch-bearer during the battle of Kaiping. When this Company crossed the frozen Kaichow they were subjected for a time to so fierce a fire that they were obliged to come to a halt. His rifle slung on his back, Haibara paid no heed to the bullets of the enemy, though they buzzed all about him, and passed unconcernedly through the line

of battle in order to deliver a message. The strap of his gun was shot away while he marched on, but he received no injury and at last had the satisfaction of doing as he had been ordered.

Later on he was, at the attack on West Shihli-kow, fighting most gallantly under Lieutenant Odagiri Seijun. He was particularly exposed to an incessant fire, the enemy using smokeless powder, from a large and strongly built house in the village; the building being well-defended and half-hidden in the deep snow. At this point many Japanese were killed or wounded. When at a distance of 400 metres from the enemy, a bullet struck his head, grazing but not fracturing the skull. Badly as the wound bled and painful though it must have been, Haibara kept on fighting till he could fight no more, and was borne on a stretcher to the rear. During the contest he had never once assumed a recumbent position like the rest, but had fired kneeling or on his feet.

---

#### 5.—A SERGEANT'S PRESENCE OF MIND.

WHEN, at 7 a. m. of February 24th, the Second Regiment advanced to the attack of the southern part of Taping-shan, the enemy in the villages west of the mountain-base were strongly entrenched and defended. A line of skirmishers was thrown out, and the men began fighting severely with the foe; while the Eighth Company of this Regiment advanced at a distance of about 300 metres behind the foremost line of battle. An order to this effect being given, the Company wheeled and, passing to the left of the skirmishers, made for the western end of the village, where was the enemy's Right Wing. Before advancing far they were subjected to a fierce cross-fire. The ground here was most disadvantageous for the Japanese, being a dead level without any shelter whatever. Moreover the snow was so deep that any advance was attended with great difficulty. There was only one thing to do: charge the enemy at double-quick; for any loitering meant that the losses in the ranks would be very great. So the Japanese charged on, at an accelerated pace, the enemy's fire



redoubling in intensity as they came on. The roar of the firing was so tremendous that all orders became inaudible. Nagara Tamekichi, a First-class Sergeant and then engaged on special duty, was sent by his Captain to with an urgent message to the commander of a Sub-company a little to the rear. As he hastened along he shouted out words of encouragement to his sorely-trying comrades, and finally delivered his message. On the way back a bullet transfixed his breast, the wound being of course a fatal one. With unmoved countenance he sank to his knees and after three great shouts of "*Teikoku Banzai!*"\* rolled over dead.

---

---

\* "Long live the Empire!"

## CHAPTER XIX.

---

### THE FIGHTING AT KWANTEN-SHWÊN.

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

At 7. 30 a. m. of February 15th the Twelfth Company of the Eleventh Regiment set out from Shanlu-kau-ling, and, advancing towards Kwanten-shwên, proceeded to reconnoitre the condition of the enemy. After a toilsome and chilly march of 14 miles through the deep snow-drifts, they reached Santao-kau, where they halted for the night. The next day at the same hour camp was broken, and the Regiment had advanced to about 1500 metres south-west of Kwanten-shwên when, at 4.02 p. m., the sound of a heavy fusillade was heard westwards of the village. Special Sergeant Nakatsu was then ordered to reconnoitre, and, taking two small bodies of foot-soldiers with him, he went along the brow of a hill towards the western gate of Kwanten-shwên. Nakatsu and his men did all they could to discover the whereabouts and intentions of the enemy, and in the meantime the Cavalry composing the Advance Column found that the Chinese had actually been in the castle. At 4.20 p. m. the Japanese horse were sighted and fired upon by the enemy, and, 5 minutes later, Lieutenant Kutsunoya, with his two detachments, made a charge with fixed bayonets and entered the bourg from the southern gate. The enemy retreated in disorder and fled to the north-west. Placing one detachment on guard at the captured gate, the Lieutenant ordered the other to charge through the streets in search of any lingering foes. At 4.40 p. m. Lieutenant Kimata, also with two detachments, took the western gate and the men then advanced into the town. Ten minutes or thereabouts before

this, desultory firing had been heard toward the rear of the Japanese forces. To ascertain the reason of this, one detachment was sent in the indicated direction. They found that about 80 Chinese had attacked the Japanese train, which was guarded by Sergeant Kishi and six privates. The little reinforcement soon drove the enemy off, and shortly afterwards re-entered the bourg through the southern gate, which was then guarded or rather held by Lieutenant Kutsunoya with his Sub-company. At 4.45 p. m. Special Sergeant Nakatsu returned with the news that about 300 Chinese soldiers were ensconced in a place some 1200 metres west of Kwanten-shwên, and it was resolved to beat them back. Shortly before half-past five a mob of 200 Chinese foot came around to the Japanese rear. Deploying in a village 800 metres south of the bourg, they advanced slowly in open order. At the same moment, on an elevated piece of ground south-west of the castle, about 400 Chinese were seen approaching in two columns, and, as they did so, the enemy directly in front of the Japanese forces approached to within 1500 metres.

The Company thereupon resolved to press against the Chinese Right Wing and then to withdraw to Shin-ling, south-wards. To this intent the Company subalterns rallied the men at the various gates, while Lieutenant Kutsunoya drew up his Sub-company on the wall by the south gate. As the enemy marched on the Japanese fired never a shot, though the Chinese kept shooting irregularly. But when the attacking forces were no more than 400 metres off, Kutsunoya's men opened a fierce and well-sustained fire, which not only made the enemy waver but even caused them to retreat to a forest in the rear. And as Kutsunoya's Sub-company began their so effective volleys, Lieutenant Kimata dashed forward with his men into the plain and spread out in open order before the south gate, at the same time firing rapidly and thus acting as a cover for another detachment now pouring out through the gate. None the less did the Chinese keep up a rapid and well-directed fire, the bullets falling among the Japanese ranks in a continual shower. Moreover the drifted snow was fully two feet deep, rendering all swift evolutions very difficult if not quite impossible. A Sub-company under Lieutenant Tasaka, under cover of the fire of Kimata's command, now moved forward and deployed

towards the left of the Kimata Sub-company. Kutsunoya's men also dashed forwards and, occupying a building standing some what apart, on the left, served as a shield to the Japanese Right Wing, which now withdrew. After this each Sub-company successively took up their station in this building and did their best to discomfit the Chinese. But the latter, at a distance of not more than 300 metres, responded readily to the heavy fire, for once being quite secure of keeping their ground. Moreover the enemy on the hill above referred to had not only been keeping up a brisk fire but had also got much closer to the Japanese lines, until finally they were not more than 500 metres off. The Japanese fire was, however, so well-directed and so galling that it caused the Chinese Right to waver; and taking advantage of this moment the Company began to retreat along the Shin-ling road. Evening now setting in, the Japanese were enabled to avoid a collision with any other foes, and reached Shin-ling at 9.30 p. m., where a part of the Tenth Company had already succeeded in establishing communication with the Main Body. Collecting the scattered men, the little handful of Japanese continued to fall back,—the Chinese fire and pursuit not being over-heavy—and finally succeeded in reaching Changten-ching at 1 p. m. of the 27th.

The above battle—for it is quite worthy of this name—was fought after the Japanese had made a most difficult and toilsome march through the deep snow. Moreover the cold was intense throughout, acting as an efficient aid to the assaulting Chinese. The Japanese losses were, after all, only 32 in killed and wounded. The enemy were quite 1000 strong, whereas the Japanese had only 156 men in the field, including the commanders of the sub-companies.

---

## II.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

### I.—A SOLDIER'S DEVOTION.

WHILE the scouts were fighting fiercely with the enemy, Koga Hikoshirō, a second-class private, acted as orderly to Sub-

Lieutenant Tasaka Kaya. As the men slowly retreated, fighting as they fell back, the young officer received a severe bullet-wound. Some of the soldiers at once sprang to his side and begged to help him to the rear; but knowing that he would never be able to get there, the Sub-Lieutenant decided to commit suicide in order to avoid falling while still living into the merciless hands of the Chinese. To this, however, the soldiers would by no means consent, Koga, in particular, out of his great love for his officer, positively refusing to let the deed be done. Starting up, Koga went alone in order to seek for his Commander. The night was dark and Koga soon lost his way, yet kept on till he reached the base of the Shin-ling hill. There he met with the commanding officer he sought, and learned that the Sub-Lieutenant had been brought back to the rear by Private Ōsu Kajumaru. On this Koga set off once again for Kwanten-shwên, hoping to see the young officer once more. On his way back he met with scattered bands of soldiers, whom he questioned as to the whereabouts of the Sub-Lieutenant. After marching through the dark for about three *li*, he was still unable to find his beloved officer. Pressing on, though well-nigh exhausted, he came to the place where the Sub-Lieutenant had been wounded. Here he saw many Chinese horsemen, riding to and fro with lighted torches in their hands. They were evidently on the lookout for any Japanese wounded. Not at all intimidated by this but in despair at not finding the object of his search, Koga went back, yet not until he had picked up four rifles and one sword from among the Japanese dead. These weapons he brought back with him.

---

## 2.—A CHEER FOR THE EMPEROR.

DURING the reconnoissance of Kwanten-shwên by the Twelfth Company, a fresh body of Chinese was at one time encountered. These at once went around the Japanese, and the two parties began fighting with great fury. In this contest, which was exceptionally bitter, First-class Sergeant Serikawa Kunihiko led his men on with the utmost skill, his command evincing great

eagerness to get at close quarters with the foe. Afterwards, when the Japanese met their impetuous charge from the south gate of Kwanten-shwên and pressed on the Chinese Right Wing, the enemy's bullets fell among the ranks like rain, inflicting much damage. Sergeant Serikawa was shot in the breast, and fell with a cry of "I regret this!" The wound was a mortal one and caused him fearful pain; yet in a little while he raised his head and was heard to say faintly,—the more echo of a cheer—"His Imperial Majesty live forever!" After he had uttered these words, he closed his eyes and slept.

---

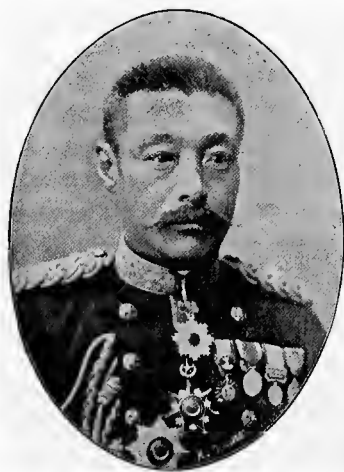
## CHAPTER XX.

---

### THE BATTLE AND CAPTURE OF NEWCHWANG.

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

ON March 4th, 1895, was fought the greatest battle of the war after Phyöngyang. Kwangwasae was fully as fiercely contended, the fighting at Taiping-shan as sanguinary ; yet at Newchwang the number of the combatants was very large, and both sides fought with embittered fury. This was the last great conflict in Manchuria.



LIEUT.-GENERAL OKU.

The distribution of the First Expeditionary Army—the Third and Fifth Divisions being here engaged—was simple. The idea was that the castle should be assaulted simultaneously on the north-west and north-east. To that end the command of the Fifth Division was, on Feb. 17th, removed from Kiulien-ching to Funghwang-ching. On February 23rd all the forces left Funghwang-ching and Suiyen. Lieut.-General Oku Yasukata, commanding the Fifth Division, collected his troops at Hwanghwa-ten. At 1 a. m. of Feb. 24th the Division set out from this place, marching westwards ; the Advance Column

being composed of two Battalions of Infantry from the 21st.

Regiment, and one Battalion of Artillery. This Column was led by Colonel Taketa Shūzan. On reaching Lungtao-sai the foremost Battalion of Cavalry came into collision with the enemy, but soon defeated them and rode on to Sanchia-tse, while the remainder of the Division encamped that night at the village in which the enemy had been encountered. The next day, February 25th, the Semba Battalion (under Major Semba Namitarō), which had hitherto kept in the rear, took the place of the Advance Column. They met with some small bodies of Chinese at Motien-ling, and these they soon defeated and dispersed. The following day the van once again encountered with the enemy in the neighbourhood of Panchia-paotse, with the usual result. The Battalion of Cavalry and the Advance Guard stopped that night at Shinlo-kau, while the other troops stayed at Liutse-ku and Heiku on the Tomuh-ching road. On February 27 the Advance Column passed through Chihtung-ku, in front of which village outposts were placed. The Division encamped that night at Peisai-ling and Chihtung-ku. February 28th, the Division and Advance Column both bivouacked at Chingchang-li. On March 1st, at 7.30 a. m., the Advance Column left Chingchang-li and, after passing through Pahoi-sai, met and defeated a body of Chinese soldiers. That day Shiashih-chao-tse was made. An order was received on March 2nd to the effect that, as the Third Division, which had been staying at Haiching, had been ordered to act as the Second Column and was intending to attack the enemy at Anshan-tan on that day, the Fifth Division should act as the first or foremost Column and also march towards Anshan-tan. This is a large village between Haiching and Liaoyang, the centre of the Chinese forces coming from Liaoyang. But before the Japanese could reach the village, it was evacuated by the enemy. That night the Divisional Staff Quarters were established at Tangkau-tse, and the Fifth Division also lodged near the village.

Suddenly, at midnight, an order came to the effect that the First Army should break camp at dawn and march on Newchwang. This was done; while the Third Division, which had arrived at Chan-chün-tun by way of Anshan-tan, passed through and similarly advanced towards Newchwang. The Fifth Division marched along to the left; its Advance Column was composed of



the First and Third Battalions, 21st Regiment, one Sub-company of Cavalry and one Company of Mountain Artillery: the whole being under the command of Major-General Ōshima Yoshimasa. One Independent Battalion of Cavalry went ahead, being charged with the duty of reconnoitring the road to be followed. The Main Body of the Division was made up of the First and Second Battalions of the 22nd Regiment; the Second Battalion of the 21st Regiment; the First Battalion of the 11th Regiment; one Battalion of Mountain Artillery; one Company of Field Artillery; and one Company of Engineers: Lieut.-General Oku Yasukata in command. At 7 a. m. the Main Body broke camp, reaching Tsaichia-chwan, 6 miles from Newchwang, that night.

The Third Division, or other half of the First Army, which had had little to do since the capture of Haiching on December 13th, left its quarters on February 27th. Some few days before this date, Lieut.-General Katsurō Tarō, Commander of this Division, had had a meeting with the Commander-in-chief, Lieut.-General Nozu, and Lieut.-General Oku. The Commander-in-chief was now at Haiching. In order to attack the enemy, who were at a place between the Liaoyang and Kaiping highway, Lieut.-General Katsura submitted the following scheme:—To storm the village called Shaho-yen, midway between the Newchwang and Liaoyang roads, thus cutting the enemy's forces into two bodies. In order to carry out this idea, which was adopted as excellent, the majority of the Division was made the principal body for the attack, while Major Okamoto Tadayoshi, Commander of the First Battalion, Sixth Regiment, with one Company of Artillery, was selected to lead the Shuichia-yuen branch. His duty was to cover the road pursued by the Main Body. The Third Regiment, with one Sub-company of Cavalry and a Company of Field-Artillery, belonging to the First Division, was ordered to leave two mountain-guns at Haiching and guard the town from Tangwang-shan, Liangchia-shan, and the Yingkow and Newchwang Roads.

From statements made by prisoners it was learned that the enemy were fully 40,000 strong, and that their line extended from the Liaoyang road east to the Yingkow highway west, and up to the immediate vicinity of Newchwang—the whole line being

above 6 miles in length. At 3 a. m. of February 28th, the Naito Battalion attacked the high ground known as Sietoh-shan, about 3000 metres to the north-east of Hwangshih-shan. The enemy here defended themselves stoutly, yet the Japanese, without firing a shot, took possession of the place, thanks to a fierce and most effective bayonet charge. Major-General Ōshima's attack on Shaho-yen was greatly facilitated hereby. Lieut.-General Katsura, on the summit of Hwangshih-shan, had a clear view of what was going on and thence issued his orders.

At 4.20 a. m. Major-General Ōshima Hisanao had set out with the Sixth Brigade and a Battalion of Field Artillery. Marching towards Shaho-yen, he encountered the first Chinese about 40 minutes after starting. They fired at the Japanese flank, from the village of Ta Shaho-yen, to which attack the Japanese promptly replied. A little later on the eastern sky grew bright and the marching became correspondingly easier. The Company of Mountain Artillery, under Major Naito Shinichirō, which had been on the Japanese Right, took up a position on Sietoh-shan, and there awaited the break of day. Now the time had come for action, and the cannon began to pour their deadly messengers into the ranks of the enemy at East Shaho-yen. Major-General Ōsako Naotoshi, the Brigade Commander, left Haiching through the west gate at 4 a. m., and reached Chao-chün-chang without mishap. Passing on through Yienchui-chan the brigade arrived at a place south of both Ta Shaho-yen and Siao Shaho-yen.\* The enemy fired at the Japanese, from behind fences and palisades in the two villages, but without eliciting any response from the invaders. The Field Artillery now came up, yet before the cannon opened fire the enemy, evidently believing discretion the better part of valour and having learned to appreciate the Japanese shrapnel at its full value, hastily evacuated the villages and fled north-east and north-west. Lieut.-General Katsura, seeing that all had been successfully accomplished now descended from Hwangshih-shan, and proceeded northwards to Yienchiuchan, where the reserve Regiment of Artillery and the Battalion of Engineers had already arrived. The enemy at Shaho-yen having thus been effectually repulsed, Major-General Ōsako was ordered

---

\* Literally "Greater Shaho-yen" and "Lesser Shaho-yen."

to press on to Tafu-tun, the Division Commander sending both the Field and the Reserve Artillery to his aid. The Second Battalion, 18th Regiment, commanded by Colonel Satō, which formed, as already stated, the Main Body of the Division, took the same direction, the Sixth Regiment following. The detachment under Major-General Ōshima Hisanao thereupon defeated the enemy at Peimiao-tse, and then captured Changhotai, to the north of the former place. Following up their advantage, the troops occupied the elevated ground to the east of the villages about North Changho-tai. Lieut.-General Katsura, who was at Changho-tai, now received word from Major-General Ōsako that Tafu-tun had been captured. In consequence of this intelligence, Major-General Ōshima was ordered to capture East and West Yientai, on the Liaoyang highway. Meanwhile Division Commander Katsura, after passing through Shaho-yen and by Sietoh-shan, reached Wutao-hotse, where he and his men made a brief halt. Then another report came in that the troops under Major-General Ōshima Hisanao had taken both East and West Yientai. At dusk therefore the Division marched to Tōhō-paotse and West Yientai, where camp was made. The local Chief Command of the Army and Third Division was then removed to West Endai. The Advance Column under Major-General Ōshima Hisanao stopped that night at the same village, while the Ōsako Brigade bivouacked at Wuchia-hotse.

At 6 a. m. of March 1st, Lieut.-General Katsura set out to get more accurate information concerning the enemy's disposition. A very heavy snow was falling, yet despite the fury of the storm Lieut.-General Katsura went on to East Yientai, where he met with Major-General Ōshima. A little while later the latter departed for Kanshien-pao. On getting within 1000 metres of a village somewhat farther on, the party fell in with a mob of the enemy and a brief but hot fight ensued. Major Naitō's Battalion swung around so as to get at the enemy's left, while the Hayashi Battalion made another flank attack on the Chinese in Kanshien-pao, and before long the hostile troops were in full retreat, making directly for Anshan-tan. Lieut.-General Katsura then moved on to the north end of Kanshien-pao, keeping a sharp look-out for any signs of the foe. But the Chinese, having ranged a number

of cannon on Tehsie-shan and Laoho-shan, intended luring the invaders on to Chungsong-tun and Tangkau-tse, where they hoped to annihilate them. The Advance Column proceeded as far as Shintai-tse; the rest of the Division however, could press no farther on, the firing there being exceptionally heavy. The Ohara Battalion was thereupon entrusted with the placing of outposts, the other bodies bivouacking at Tangho-tse with the exception of the Ōsako Brigade, which pushed on to Haoliu-hotse and To-cheong-tse, intending to reconnoitre in the vicinity of Kwanfuen-chi and Pulai-tun. The Main Division bivouacked at Kanshien-pao in order to send on warning, when necessary, to Kwanfuen-chi and Pulai-tun.

At 7 a. m. of March 2nd Lieut.-General Katsura broke camp. Shortly after setting out, the Commander received the intelligence that the enemy had evacuated Laoho-shan and Tehsie-shan over night. During the forenoon the Advance Column passed through Anshan-tan and marched on without stopping, no signs of the enemy being visible. The Ōsako Brigade, on the left, reached Shiacheong-tun without meeting with any resistance. Evidently the Chinese troops had fallen back on Newchwang. The Third Battalion of the 19th Regiment, which had separated from the Main Body at Kanshien-pao, desired to occupy the elevated ground north of Kwanfuen-chi, and at 7.30 a. m. passed by the centre of the Ōsako Brigade and the Main Body. No enemy were to be seen. On this day, while the Main Body was marching from Shintai-tse to Tangkao-tse, they fell in with some officers of the Fifth Division, communication being thus established between the Third and Fifth Divisions. The 7th Regiment now halted; yet only the Staff of the Division entered Anshan-tan, the Advance Column, under Major-General Ōshima Hisanao, going to a village some two miles farther off. This Anshan-tan is a village of some importance on the Liaoyang highway, surrounded by hills on the east and west. The space between the hills is only about 300-400 metres broad, and in this valley is the castle or bourg defending the village, the walls of the bourg being 7 metres in height. The original plan had been to carry the village—or rather town—by the united force of the Third and Fifth Divisions; but the enemy evacuating the place without resistance, the Third Division

occupied it at noon of this day (March 2nd). The Fifth Division soon reached Tangkau-tse, while the Third Division encamped at Changchwên-tun, a village on the Newchwang road running through Pulai-tun. The Staff Head Quarters were temporarily established at Tangkau-tse. Lieut.-General Nozu, Commander-in-chief, intended having the Third Division pass through KENCHWANG-tse, while the Fifth Division should go by PEHLUNG-sai: both thus marching westwards simultaneously, so that the attack on Newchwang might be made on March 4th. The *ordre du jour* was thereupon changed:—The detachment under Major-General Ōsako, which had reached Chingchia-tai and had acted as the Left Flank Column, was sent on to Kucheong-tse, as the Advance Column; while Major-General Ōshima's troops made the Main Body of the Division. The Hayashi Battalion became the Right Flank, marching together with the Fifth Division—the Tominaga Battalion of the 7th Regiment was made the Anshan-tan Column—the Ohara Battalion (19th Regiment) formed the Zo-shan-tse Column. The last two Battalions were specially instructed to watch the roads and approaches to Liaoyang. At 7 a. m. of March 3rd the Main Body left Changchwên-tun, reaching KENCHWANG-tse in the afternoon. Here a halt was made and a brief rest taken, preparatory to the next day's attack on Newchwang.

Though styled Newchwang-ching, the last syllable being applied to castle or walled towns only, this city has no outer massive walls. In the absence of these there were ramparts or breast-works around the principal buildings and gate-ways. Particularly at the entrance to the city, walls 30 centimetres thick had been built. These formed the first line of defence. The larger buildings were turned into small fortresses, loop-holes having been made in the brick walls, and gatlings placed at the corners. The number of the enemy in and about the city had been reported to be very large; in reality however there were not more than 10,000:—about 5000 soldiers commanded by General Li Kwang-chu; 3000 under Wei Kwang-tao; and above 2000 under a certain Commander Yo. This may be variously accounted for. A good many had probably retreated as far as Yingkow, unwilling to stand the brunt of the Japanese attack; or they may have intended to attempt once more the re-capture of Haiching, possibly believing that the Japanese

garrison had withdrawn and gone towards Liaoyang. At all events these 10,000 men formed the whole defence.

March 4th, the eventful day, dawned. Lieut.-General Nozu had concluded to send the Third Division along the road to the north of the Newchang highway, so as to reach the north-western portion of the city; while the Fifth Division was to begin the assault from the north-east. The Advance Column of the Fifth Division remained unchanged, but the Yamaguchi Battalion—from the Main Body— became the Left Flank, together with one Sub-company of Cavalry and one Company of Artillery. Making a detour, they marched toward the Yingkow road, along which it was expected the enemy would attempt to retreat. Lieut.-General Oku, commanding the Fifth Division, advanced from the western end of Tsefang-tun, as did Major-General Ōshima Yoshimasa, with the Advance Column: both intending to make a front attack. A Battery of Mountain Artillery took up a position at the north-west end of Tsefang, whence they fired at the concave portion of the Chinese defences, which here formed an arc. The troops in the van advanced to protect the Artillery, the Battalion under Major Okuyama Yoshiaki taking the foremost line. For 800 metres in front of Tsefang-tun there was an open plain, without any shelter whatever. This the enemy had taken advantage of, throwing up earthworks in various places, loop-holes being further made in all the redoubts so that the defenders might fight under cover. From these earth-works and the above mentioned concave point, the Chinese now began to fire, using their excellent quick-firing guns. Instead of continuing the artillery duel the Japanese at once made a charge, the foremost columns being closely followed by the Battalion under Major Mori Gikei. Major-General Ōshima Yoshimasa, Colonel Taketa Shūzan and other officers of rank did everything to stimulate the ardor of the troops, riding rapidly from one place to another despite the fierce rain of bullets. Other batteries of Mountain and Field Artillery now reached Tsefang-tun, on the south-western outskirts of which village the guns were speedily ranged. Major Watanabe Jutsu's Battalion, a Company of Engineers under Captain Taketa and the Battalion commanded by Major Semba Tarō—these forming the whole reserve forces of the Division—

advanced to the western end of Tsefang-tun. The battle gradually grew hotter and more fiercely contested, the last-arrived troops on the Japanese side pressing to the fore and thus relieving those who had made the first charge. Turning to the right, there was Lieut.-Colonel Tomioka Sanzō, with the Battalion which had been under Major Imada Tadaichi's command, starting out from Tsefang-tun, intending to press on to the Mutoh Bridge in the Newchwang suburbs. The troops marched through the hail of deadly missiles, the Lieut.-Colonel doing all he could to urge the men on; and on arriving at the Mutoh Bridge the Battalion at once joined hands with the other forces there and steadily drew nearer the enemy's double line of breastworks and the gates of the city. The Main Body of the Division now got well within the outlying houses, and occupied a large building that had been fortified by the Chinese, making this the temporary Staff Quarters.

After two hours of the most fierce and incessant fighting, the Battalions commanded by Major Okuda Yoshi-aki and Major Imada captured the enemy's first line of defence, at the eastern end of the town. The enemy hidden within the fortified buildings were, however, by no means defeated yet, keeping up a most obstinate resistance. They fired from loop-holes and coigns of vantage at the completely exposed Japanese, thereby causing numerous deaths or inflicting severe wounds. Charge after charge was made through the streets, the houses falling one after another into the Japanese hands. Some soldiers hidden in a liquor-store east of the Taping Bridge and near the city gates, were exceedingly stubborn in their defence, fighting with really desperate valour. A charge here would have been accompanied with too great a loss of life; so Lieut.-General Oku ordered the attacking troops to cease firing, while the Engineers under Major Baba Masao proceeded to break the walls down. Major Baba ordered Captain Taketa, of the First Company, to take 15 kilograms of dynamite and a quantity of gun-cotton and therewith destroy the first wall. This was gallantly and quickly done, two breaches being made, the one 1.5 metres broad at the base, the other 3 metres wide at the top. The successful Engineers now pushed through this breach to the second wall, at the base of which they exploded 25

kilograms of dynamite, this time making a very much larger hole. Again passing through, the Engineers placed 40 kilograms of gun-cotton at the base of one of the large out-lying buildings—temporarily serving as a fortress—when the enemy, recognizing that further resistance would be of no avail, hung out a white flag in token of surrender. Two hundred and ten Chinese soldiers then came forward and surrendered unconditionally. A little farther on the enemy in a large wine-store, which had walls of double thickness, still kept up their hopeless defence. Paying no heed to this, three bodies of Japanese Infantry—from the 18th, 21st, and 22nd Regiments—now entered the city through the breaches made by the Engineers. Many prisoners were taken, particularly by the Third and Fourth Companies of the 22nd Regiment. Half of a battalion belonging to the same Regiment stopped at the Mutoh Bridge, the men fighting with the enemy defending the city-gate in that direction. This conflict continued until night fell. The line of outposts or pickets stretched along the left bank of the river, while the 21st Regiment patrolled the space between the Taping Bridge on the right and the Mutoh Bridge on the left; the 22nd Regiment keeping guard between the Mutoh and the Liutun bridges.

The intention of the Third Division had been, it will be remembered, to besiege the city from the north-west. Colonel Satō's Regiment, which had that day marched north-wards as the Advance Column of the Division, was taken command of by Major-General Ōsako Naotoshi. Setting out from Kucheong-tse at 7 a. m., they went on to Shin-chia-wo-fang, acting as cover to the Main Body of the Division. Lieut.-General Katsura then gave minute orders as to the manner of attack: the Ōsako Brigade to go around to northern part of the town, while the Ōshima Brigade should begin operations from the west. It was just 10 a. m. when Major-General Ōsako sent Colonel Satō to advance against the northern portion of the town. Taking two Battalions with him, the Colonel set off at once. The Artillery under Colonel Shibano ranged their guns at a place about 200 metres in front of Shin-chia-wo-fang, whence they opened fire in order to cover the advance of Colonel Satō's contingent. The latter marched rapidly, firing as they advanced, until only 800 metres separated them from the enemy,



who made no reply, having evidently taking a leaf out of the book of Japanese tactics. On getting within 200 metres, the enemy suddenly opened fire with their small arms. The Chinese were concealed behind the strong walls of the houses thereabouts and had evidently made up their minds to defend the place for all they were worth; but their fire was scattering and not effective, the Japanese advancing rather more rapidly than before in the teeth of the iron storm. A Battalion under Major Ishida now came up as a reinforcement, having been sent hither by Major-General Ōsako, who thought the van was having far too hot a time of it. This was the Reserve Battalion of the Brigade. At this moment Colonel Satō had ordered his men to fix bayonets and charge. Catching sight of the reinforcement, the men dashed forward with renewed vigour, running in between the walls of the fortified dwellings and crossing bayonets with the defenders. The Chinese could not stand much of this and so began sullenly to retreat, followed closely by the besieging troops who forced or fought their way from street to street.

Major-General Ōshima Hisanao, leading the Regiment of Colonel Miyoshi Nariyuki,—with Major Naitō's Battalion on the right and that of Major Suzuki Tsunetake on the left—made a detour from the vicinity of Siao-niang-miao, in order to get at the only road left along which the enemy might hope to retreat. The order being to attack from the south-west, they approached the city from this direction. The enemy in the farm-houses in the suburbs fired on the steadily advancing troops, but soon after began to retreat in a south-westerly direction. Colonel Miyoshi, noticing this, at once commanded his Regiment to march towards and occupy a row of strongly-built and large houses in the north-west portion of the city; while the Battalion under Major Naitō gave chase to the fleeing Chinese and marched at full speed southwards. Major Suzuki's Battalion in the meantime made a telling charge on the north-west side. With Major Hayashi Taichirō's Battalion, Major-General Ōshima Hisanao followed the first line of battle, and then, making a long detour to the north-west, reached the south-west side of the city. A little before this Major-General Ōshima's immediate troops had entered the town with fixed bayonets, simultaneously with the men on the northern side.

A part of these troops had turned back and again gone northwards; but the other—the Naitō Battalion—forced their way deeper into the town. Joining with the men going southward, they encountered a body of the enemy, who were completely defeated by the soldiers of the First Company. In fighting through the streets a large number of Chinese soldiers was discovered concealed in a strong and big building, all the approaches to which had been shut and barricaded, except one on the north-west side. Some troops from Colonel Sato's Regiment attacked the building from this quarter, while others belonging to the Tomioka Regiment besieged the place from the north-east, yet without getting very near, it being found that the enemy had no hope of escape in that direction. Colonel Miyoshi thereupon ordered the Naitō Battalion to storm the building from the south-east, breaking down the gate there. The gate was however very strongly made and most ably defended, for the Chinese fought with the energy born of utter despair. A fire now broke out on the west side, followed by another near the Naitō Battalion. The Japanese instantly darted forward and clambered over the outer wall—for there were two strong walls of defence about the great building. The enemy inside the second wall however still continued their resistance. But the fire that had broken out was steadily increasing in volume, and its terrible effects were emphasized by shells thrown into the building from two mountain guns which had been hastily up. The fire reached the powder-magazine, which blew up with terrific violence, and then and not till then did the truly heroic defenders open the great north-western gate in order to let their messengers go forth and sue for peace. It was just 10 o'clock at night. During the course of the night the Division which had started from the camp in the north, entered the city. The Ōsako Brigade bivouacked in the open space north of the city, while the Ōshima Brigade did the same at the south. Some men from the latter Brigade were sent along the highway leading to Tien-chwangtai and Yingkow, to the south; while a detachment of the Ōsako Brigade went northwards. The casualties on the Japanese side were, as might be expected from the desperate nature of the defence, very heavy, there being no less than 242 killed and wounded. The Chinese losses were, as nearly as could be

ascertained, 1884 in all. Seven hundred prisoners were taken, while among the spoils were 2138 rifles; 1,518,000 rounds of ammunition; 21 field and mountain guns; 216 banners and flags; 42 spears; 1648 cases of powder; 1120 *koku* of clean rice; 150 *koku* of barley; 110 *koku* of millet\*; 89 tents; 213 sycees of silver; with numberless uniforms, fur-coats, etc., etc. The captured horses in especial were so numerous that they could have carried more than twice the baggage of the whole Army.

---

## II.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

### 1.—TAKASE TSUNEMATSU.

FIRST-CLASS private Takase Tsunematsu, of the Seventh Regiment, was conspicuous for his bravery in the battle of Newchwang. Under Lieutenant Shishimichi Shozō he was, on February 4th, sent out to reconnoitre the disposition of the hostile forces in or about Yientai and Liuhōtse. The detachment with which Takase was, occupied a hill close by West Yientai, and there kept up brisk fire on the enemy, who were not more than 600 metres distant. On the latter's retreat, it was seen that a Chinese picket had been left behind and that he was trying to get into a little hollow lying about midway between the combatants. The order for the picket's capture being given, Takase ran out, regardless of the hail of bullets about him, and took the man prisoner.

During the fighting inside the town, Takase acted as a picket of the Shishimichi detachment. Here he met with a Chinese who had fallen behind his fugitive comrades and was making a very stout resistance. Takase gave chase, came up with and killed him after a long fight. On entering the town he had discovered a large building in which quite 300 of the enemy were concealed. On a breach being made in the wall by the Japanese gunners, Takase was the first to spring through and into the midst of the foe. His comrades were greatly excited by his gallantry, and promptly followed in his footsteps.

---

\* *Taka-icibi* in Japanese, or *Kao-liang* in Chinese.

## 2.—A RESCUE.

IT was on February 28th, while the Third Division marched along the frozen roads to Newchwang. After the capture of Chao-chê-tai, one Company, in attempting to get around the rear of the Column's flank, was suddenly exposed to a heavy fire from the enemy. One of the soldiers fell, having received a wound in the foot. After going on a little further the wounded man was missed, on which the Captain called out for volunteers to go back through the shower of bullets and save him. He had hardly spoken the words when first-class private Shidaka Eikichi and second-class reserve private Nogami Toyotarō sprang from the ranks and ran at full speed to where their comrade had fallen. Shidaka picked up the fallen man's rifle and accoutrements, while Nogami raised him to his back. This done, the two men walked slowly back, all three reaching safety.

---

## 3.—PRIVATE NAKADA.

SECOND-CLASS reserve private Nakada Chōnosuke, of the Eighth Company, Seventh Regiment, was a participant in the fierce fight which ensued after the capture of Chao-chê-tai. During the engagement he was struck in the groin by a ball, which remained imbedded in his body. At first he told no one that he had been wounded, and continued to fight with great gallantry; but finally his weakness betrayed him and they attempted to carry him to the *hōtai-jo*, or place where the wounded were temporarily bandaged. Yet Nakada begged to be let stay, and did remain until the fight was over. Hereupon his Captain ordered that he should be carried to the rear, but Nakada stout-heartedly insisted that he could walk and needed no assistance. To reach the field-lazaret, fully 1000 metres in the rear, Nakada had to pass one place where the hostile bullets were still raining. To this he gave no concern whatever, and walked slowly the whole long distance, despite his necessarily great pain. He

reached the lazaret in safety, and there received prompt and skilled medical treatment.

---

4.—BOLD MEN.

AT the storming of Newchang, the Tenth Company of the 18th Regiment forced their way, with fixed bayonets, to the northern extremity of the town. Lieutenant Kawaguchi Kinno-suké, with about 20 men, was leading at the time, the bulk of the Company being about 100 metres farther back. Suddenly they came upon a Chinese ambuscade, whence a fierce volley was fired, and 14 men dropped either killed or wounded, the Lieutenant himself being severely injured. Seeing his officer fall, Tachibana Minékichi, a second-class private, who had just succeeded in driving the Chinese back at the bayonet's point, came running up at full speed. At the imminent risk of his own life he raised the the Lieutenant to his back and bore him to safety.

\*                    \*                    \*                    \*

Almost simultaneously with the above occurrence, second-class private Kikuma Umékichi, of the same Company, was struck in the back of his head by a fragment of a shell. He fell in great agony, but as he fell he called out to his Lieutenant, "Sir! I have received an honourable wound. There are still some cartridges left in my ammunition-case. Please distribute them among my comrades." These were his last words.

\*                    \*                    \*                    \*

While this Tenth Company was forcing its way through the streets, Suzuki Sampei, a second-class private, being then about 50 metres distant from the nearest Chinese, received a bullet in his left shoulder. The shock made him reel, but he immediately cried out, in a loud, distinct voice, "I have been struck by a bullet, but I don't need anything done!" So saying, he shouted encouragement to his comrades, who, rendering mutual assistance, pressed on with unabated ardor and soon dashed into the Chinese lines. It was not until after the battle was quite over that Suzuki had his rather severe wound bandaged.

## 5.—TWO YOUNG OFFICERS.

THE Commander of the First Sub-company, Second Company of the 22nd Regiment, was Lieutenant Tanabé Morichika, and he had a great name for energy and pluck. If there was a fight on, he was sure to be well to the fore, and his men followed him with the devotion which such spirit never fails to inspire. At the outset, at Phyöngyang, he showed of what stuff he was made, and in the many subsequent battles in which the Company took part Lieutenant Tanabé did great deeds. And now, when the Japanese forces were about to attack Newchwang, the Second Company was ordered to seize the villages and earth-works to the east of the town. The Company had already set out and Lieutenant Tanabé was, as always, well to the fore, when another order came to the effect that the young officer and his men should join the Right Wing of the First Company. This command was promptly obeyed; the men wheeled, joined the Right Wing, and, led by Lieutenant Tanabé, were soon in the heart of the villages and in possession of all the forts. This measure prevented the Chinese from making any movement eastward. But the work was not yet over, for all the Chinese soldiers thereabouts had to be accounted for; so, running along the main road, the Japanese chased those fugitives who were making for the camp in the town itself. After crossing the Mutoh Bridge—across which the highway ran—the First and Second Company men made a vigorous assault on the Chinese camp. Bullets were whizzing everywhere, and for a time the work was very hot. Lieutenant Tanabé fought like a lambent flame over the ground, his men following hard after their heroic leader. Getting finally within the precincts of the camp, the young officer captured a mountain-gun, cutting down those who endeavoured to oppose him. Unfortunately at this moment a bullet struck his head, inflicting a severe though not fatal wound. To this the Lieutenant paid no heed whatever, and continued to fight most bravely until the battle was definitely over and Newchwang in the hands of the Japanese.

No less brave was Lieutenant Nakaya Sokutetsu, in command of the Second Sub-company of this same Company. Ever

since landing in Korea he had proved himself a man of mighty prowess. Among the soldiers he was a great favourite, and there was not one in his command but who would willingly have gone to the death for his sake. In the capture of Newchwang he was among the foremost from first to last, leading on his men with the utmost gallantry. In the taking of the eastern villages and forts he fought side by side with Lieutenant Tanabé, nor was he at all inferior to the latter. With Tanabé he crossed the bridge leading to the centre of the town and the Chinese camp, and in the fierce fighting thereupon ensuing he was very conspicuous. Like Tanabé he was, before long, struck by a bullet, the wound being of such a nature that he could no longer walk or stand erect. Yet even this failed to quench his dauntless spirit. Sitting cross-legged on the bullet-swept field, he tried to stanch the blood while he continued to encourage his men and direct their efforts. When the battle had come to an end, it was found that his Sub-company had done marvels and succeeded in everything they had undertaken.—We have, from the beginning of this book, laid more stress on the deeds of common soldiers: for of an officer one naturally expects great things. But these two young Lieutenants were of too noted bravery to let pass unnoticed; and so we here give this very hasty and inadequate record of their deeds,

---

#### 6.—PREDESTINED.

BUGLER Moriwaki Eitarō was a private of the second-class in the Tenth Company of the 21st Regiment of Infantry. Although ardently patriotic he had not been permitted to show to any great advantage, having been taken ill and thus debarred from fighting a few days before the great battle of Phyōngyang. Yet he had kept up with the Regiment in its wanderings over the snowy Manchurian hills and, though weak, had always fought boldly. In the storming of Newchwang Moriwaki was found in the foremost line of battle. Singing a war-song, he dashed on, cheering his comrades by word or deed. But in the charge he met his death, a bullet killing him instantly. It seems, strange to say, that

Moriwaki had known he would meet his doom this day. The whole preceding night he had spent in writing a letter to his parents at home. One of his comrades had expressed surprise at this and asked Moriwaki why he spent his hours of rest in this fashion. "What's the use of being in such a hurry with your home-letter?" said he; "there's no need for such haste: any other day will do as well." But Moriwaki quietly replied, with a mournful shake of his head: "No, I am of quite a different opinion. Our country has had many burdens to shoulder because of this war. And I am a soldier, though of the lowest. This, I think, is honorable for me, as it is the duty of every patriot to fight for his country. Moreover, since I joined the Army last year, H. M. our Emperor has sent us frequent messages of encouragement and thanks, and shown himself ever mindful of our well-being. Being an ignorant man, I have not until this day been able to win any merit or show the depth of my feelings for our country. This has given me much anxiety. Now I feel quite sure that I am to die to-morrow, and, by my death, I hope to repay a small portion of the grateful debt we all owe His Majesty the Emperor. Therefore am I writing this letter to my parents. I am only taking farewell of the world. I have not yet shown myself a particularly filial son, or assisted my parents as I should. Yet, though I am to die in battle, fate is unavoidable, and then again it is for my country. So I have no regrets whatever. With regard to my parents and their love for me, they will not be, I trust, too greatly afflicted. And I am now offering my condolences on my own death and telling them that my mind is made up and that I shall die for my country." On hearing these words, the former speaker was abashed and had nothing to say in reply. And, as Moriwaki had foreseen, so it fell out; for he was shot dead on the field of honour.

---



## CHAPTER XXI.

---

### THE TAKING OF YINGKOW.

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

NOTHING, it seemed, could stop the victorious advance of the invading armies. Neither cold nor all the horrors of war could force back that iron line; yet the Chinese, as has already been seen, again and again made desperate stands or tried to recover the lost ground. But Japanese pluck, Japanese determination, Japanese endurance were factors on which the most strategic of the Chinese generals had not reckoned. There was no pause at all; one battle followed another in quick succession, without giving the enemy time to breathe. And herein lay one of the reasons of the continued success attending the Japanese arms. The First and Second Army Corps never permitted their opponents to rally their shattered forces: their prime object being to keep the Chinese constantly on the move and, as far as possible, in a disorganized and demoralized state.

After the defeat inflicted on the enemy in the neighbourhood of Taping-shan, on February 24th, the First Division rendered their position at Taping-shan and Tashih-kiao as strong as possible, facing the enemy's posts and strongholds at Liaoyang-pu, Chian-chia-hwan, Yingkow and elsewhere. This was done in consequence of the agreement with the First Army to join arms at these places after the enemy should have been driven back from and defeated at Anshan-tan and Newchang, the united force of both bodies being necessary in order to cope successfully with the foe at Yingkow.

Probably of all the Shinking cities, Yingkow is the most flourishing. It lies close to the River Liao, on the left bank of

that stream, and has a population of close upon 35,000 inhabitants. The occupation of such a place, therefore, meant much to both combatants. The only places thereabouts still in the hands of the Chinese were Liaoyeh-miao and Chian-chia-hwan, and after their great discomfiture at Taping-shan the enemy kept quiescent. On March 4th, however, a body of the enemy, about 2000 strong, suddenly appeared about East and West Shihlikow, two hamlets some 3500 metres distant from Taping-shan. This body, which consisted of Infantry and Cavalry, with one or two batteries of field-guns, seemed disposed to march southward; so Major Imamura Shinkei, commanding the Third Battalion of the First Regiment, took up a position on Taping-shan, on the north-eastern slope of which a battery was placed by the Artillery of the Fourth Company. No sooner was this done than a galling fire was directed at the Chinese Infantry, much to their discomfort. Other bodies of the Japanese forces now came up, prepared to dispute the passage at all hazards, while one other Battalion of Infantry and one Company of Artillery were sent from the Division to the advanced line. But the fire of the Japanese troops and guns on Taping-shan was so destructive that the Chinese soon broke into a run and retreated rapidly, passing through Liaoyang-pu and making for Lao-pien. It afterwards appeared that the Chinese Generals Sung-kiang and Son Ta-yé had come in person to direct the forces at Liaoyeh-miao, but, despite their tactics, had been compelled to retreat to Tienchwangtai.

On the following day, March 5th, Lieut.-General Yamaji left the Advance Column under Major-General Nogi in their former quarters at Taping-shan, and, in company with the Main Body of the Division, stationed in the vicinity of Sanchia-tse and Hotaitse, marched off in the direction of Tashih-kiao. This was done because the astute Lieut.-General intended to attack the Chinese about Laoyeh-miao—supposing this to be in the enemy's line of outposts—on the 6th or 7th, thereafter uniting his forces with those of the First Army, and then delivering a combined assault on Yingkow. The scouts reported, however, that the enemy had, on the previous night, removed their outposts from the villages about Yingkow, and that the Main Body had fallen back on Tienchwangtai. Major-General Nogi therefore ordered the First Battalion of

the First Regiment to make a reconnaissance about Laoyeh-miao. On the van of this body reaching the village in question, it was found to be quite deserted; so the Japanese quietly occupied it. The remaining Infantry of the First Regiment were now sent to the neighbourhood of Siao-ping-shan, so called in distinction from the larger Taping-shan. In this way the disposition of the enemy about Yingkow had undergone a complete change.

Towards night of the same day, March 5th, the Commander of the Division sent word to Major-Generals Nogi and Nishi Kwanjirō to have everything in readiness to attack Yingkow on the following morning. At 5 a. m., March 6th, the whole Army set out. Major-General Nishi, commanding the Infantry of the Second Brigade, left the bivouac at Tashih-kiao, and, passing through several villages of minor importance, including Lao-pien, reached Hao-chia-yu-hwan, four miles to the east of the doomed town. This Brigade formed the Japanese Right Wing, as on its right again was the Battalion of Cavalry, acting as an independent body. Major-General Nogi, with the Infantry of the First Brigade (less one Battalion), and one Battalion of Artillery, set out from Sonchia-paotse, taking the road leading through the villages of Chiang-chia-hwan, Chien-tan-chia-ya-tse and Kanchia-ya-tse. This body formed the Japanese Left Wing. Finally, Lieut.-General Yamaji, with all the remaining troops, took the road lying midway between the two wings. The Advance Column was under the leadership of Colonel Woki, and was composed of the First and Second Battalions of Infantry, one Company of Engineers, and the First Company of field-guns belonging to the Artillery of the First Regiment. This Column proceeded the Left Wing, and, keeping a strict lookout the while, advanced as far as Kanchia-shio-hwan, where it was found that the enemy were firing from the coast-forts in the direction of the invading forces. These forts lay to the west of Yingkow. It was not clear, however, what steps the enemy had taken or would take to defend their position at Yingkow; so Colonel Woki ordered a halt and then sent on an officer to the east of the town to reconnoitre. After proceeding for about 1500 or 1600 metres, the scout suddenly fell in with a handful of Chinese horsemen, who, probably believing him to be the forerunner of a vast host, made off at

the top of their speed, without so much as firing a shot. The scout entered into the spirit of the thing and gave chase, following close on their heels until both he and they had passed through the eastern gate of the bourg. By this time Colonel Woki, with the rest of the Advance Column under Major Takenaka Yasutarō, and the van of the Main Body, commanded by Major Kagawa Tomitarō, had come up and reached the town-walls. Captain Hongō Tōshirō was then ordered to take possession of the city gate and the telegraph-station, while the other troops were deployed just outside the eastern gate, thus effectually blocking the line of retreat. The enemy within the walls now made an attempt to cross, from the central portion of the northern suburb, the frozen Liao, hoping in this way to steal off unperceived in the direction of Tienchwangtai. But this little plan was frustrated by Major Takenaka, who sent the Third and Fourth Companies to intercept their flight. These two Companies crossed the upper part of the stream and fired about fifty volleys, at a distance of 500-1000 metres, at the fugitives. By midday the number of fleeing Chinese who had reached the north-west bank of the river, had grown very large; and despite the constant fire of the Takenaka Battalion their flight could no longer be stopped. The Company of Cavalry commanded by Captain Nishibata Gaku then appeared, and to them the chase after the fugitives was entrusted, but with no greater degree of success.

At this point, Major Kagawa Tomitarō, Commander of the Second Division, First Regiment (forming the Main Body of the Left Wing's Advance Guard), was ordered to capture one of the west-coast forts, lying about 1500 metres from the east gate of Yingkow. Lieutenant Nagabori Hitoshi, with a picked Sub-company, led the van, followed by Major Kagawa with the Seventh and Eighth Companies, and one Sub-company of Engineers, the latter marching ahead of the rest. Captain Kawaguchi Kiyotoshi, of the Eighth Company, was commanded to proceed to the southern bourg. On reaching the place, he found that the Chinese had fled. Kawaguchi's detachment then went on to the northern castle, the gate of which was discovered to be barred and barricaded in a very secure fashion. Without stopping to force an entrance, the men clambered over the wall, and, entering the

castle, discovered it entirely deserted. Just about this time Sergeant Sugimoto and his pioneers reached a small bridge some 1500 metre distant from the fort. While searching about they came upon four mines sunk in the foundations of the bridge. These exploded, killing or wounding two of the pioneers. Thereafter a number of other mines, in the immediate vicinity, exploded in rapid succession, so that the Pioneer Sub-company was quite enveloped in the powder-smoke. Meanwhile the coast-forts kept firing heavily, the shells dropping among the devoted little band of Engineers, yet without inflicting much damage. None the less it was a most perilous time and situation. The Kagawa Battalion formed into single file and, coming to a little hollow, stopped there for shelter. The Pioneers, however, continued actively searching for other mines, and found very many wires leading to sunken explosives in front of the forts and castle. Despite the galling fire of the Chinese, the work of severing the wires went on undisturbed. At one time seven mines were exploded, yet there were no casualties to report on the part of the intrepid seekers. Deeming it most unwise to attempt an attack of the Chinese under the circumstances, Major Kagawa drew off his men and retired to a village in the rear.

In the meantime, Colonel Woki, with the Fifth and Sixth Companies of the Second Battalion, had got opposite the East Gate, and thence saw the Takenaka Battalion pursuing the fugitive enemy; he also recognized the difficulty of capturing the western coast-forts, against which the Kagawa Battalion had been sent. Calling up two Companies of the Reserve, and taking with him a battery of field-artillery, the Colonel marched to the spot where the Kagawa Battalion had been and had the guns unlimbered, preparatory to opening a heavy fire on the forts. But the short spring day was now at an end, and nothing could be done after night-fall. Posting a line of pickets along the littoral, the Colonel therefore commanded his forces to bivouac where they stood.

At early dawn of the next day (March 7th), the Kagawa Battalion and a battery were ordered to storm the fortress; no reply however being made to the Japanese fire, the troops entered the forts unmolested, to learn that the enemy

had decamped during the night. Several cannon and a large quantity of ammunition were here taken. Thus the strong town of Yingkow was seized without any fighting worthy of the name, if we except the desultory efforts of the coast-forts. Among the spoils taken were 45 cannon, 180 rifles, 58 cases of powder, 15 cases of canister, 4 boxes of leaden bullets, 500 military uniforms, hundreds of hats and caps, more than 500 bags of rice, the *Meh Ying* (a small Chinese man-of-war), two small steamboats and a host of other things. There being foreigners resident in the town, Lieut.-General Nozu sent two of his Lieut.-Colonels, Fukushima Yasumasa and Muraki Masayoshi, to Yingkow to inform the consular representatives of the United States and Great Britain, of the condition of affairs, as well as to ask if any foreigners or their property had received harm. He sent moreover three Companies from the First Division in order to act as a special guard for the foreign community, lawless acts on the part of the dispersed and desperate Chinese soldiery being apprehended. Thus everything was done to ensure the safety and well-being of Yingkow's foreign community.

---

## II.—THE WORK OF THE ENGINEERS.

ON the Advance Column, then commanded by Major-General Nogi, reaching the ground just in front of the eastern gate of Yingkow, about 1000 Chinese, who had collected in the immediate vicinity of the gate, promptly took to their heels.

On the coast-line west of Yingkow were two forts, and, to all appearance, their garrisons seemed to have fled on the approach of the victorious Army. The task of capturing these strongholds, was entrusted to the Second Battalion of the First Regiment, one Sub-company of the First Engineer Company being sent to join the foot-soldiers. Promptly obeying the command to advance, the Engineers placed themselves in front of the Infantry, delighted with the task set before them. On the way to the forts, Lieutenant of Engineers Hirai Yasuhei ordered Sergeant Sugimoto to take a few men and make a reconnaissance about the

Hwangten-chan encampment. There the scouts found and captured two bronze cannon and a quantity of gunpowder. The Sergeant's party was then sent on to the south-eastern encampment. At 1.50 p. m. they reached a small bridge about 1500 metres due east of the coast-forts. Here they found two wires connecting with mines sunk in the foundations of either end of the bridge, a portion of the mines being laid bare in consequence of the recent thaw. Sergeant Kaneko was at once told to sever the wires. Taking four second-class privates—Saitō Seijirō, Shimizu Nasokichi, Asano Washirō and Shimada Kakuji—with him, the Sergeant succeeded in cutting one of the wires. One of the mines was thus rendered harmless. It seems that the enemy in the supposedly evacuated fort must have noticed what had been done, for a flag was at once hoisted above the ramparts and the hitherto silent fort burst into flame, two heavy and several smaller cannon firing into the thick of the Japanese troops. The other large wire leading to the second mine in the bridge, was connected with a number of mines: three to the west and one to the east of the bridge, the latter exploding and killing two soldiers; two sunk in a small mound about 40 metres to the rear and three others in a second mound some 200 metres to the left. Every one of these exploded, the Company of Engineers being at once hidden by a sulphurous cloud. Taking advantage of this apparent success, the Chinese in the nearest fort rained shells and bullets among the attacking forces. The Japanese were literally surrounded by sunken mines and in the utmost peril. The Chinese used for the purpose of exploding the mines a steel cable with seven strands, the whole being so strong that the Engineers were unable to cut it with their hatchets. The Japanese Infantry therefore fell back and took up a station back of the camp of the Kan troops. The Chinese in the forts then turned the guns in their direction, and began to cannonade the foot-soldiers at comparatively close range. Just at this moment it was discovered that some mines had been sunk under the powder-magazine in this camp. Unless the wire here was instantly severed, the Japanese troops were almost sure of being decimated. Sergeant Sugimoto again sallied forth to cut the wires, despite the tremendous cannonade to which he and the others were exposed. Taking

second-class privates Itō Yasuzō, Yaguchi Hatsutarō, Tanohara Sakutarō and third-class private Mukōgasa Tsunéjirō with him, he succeeded in severing the thick cable. With this, however, the work was not yet at an end. Again the gallant Sergeant sallied forth, this time in company with second-class privates Nakazawa Mohei and Kawashima Kakuzō, and third-class private Udagawa Toyokichi. Assisted by these men, Sergeant Sugimoto rendered powerless seven mines which had been sunk in the front part of the west wall of this fort. While this was being done, seven other mines near at hand were exploded by the watchful Chinese. So great was the force of the explosion that the men almost fell to the ground. And in the meantime, of course, they were still exposed to the galling fire of the coast-fort. With all this not a soldier offered to withdraw, and, strange to relate, not one was injured. Their escape was marvelous.

Under the circumstances it was deemed inadvisable for the Battalion of Infantry to take active part in what was going on. So, at 5.40 p. m., the forces withdrew to the south of the town and there bivouacked, well-knowing that the evacuation or capture of the coast-forts was a matter of a few hours only.

---

### III.—THE ADMINISTRATION OF YINGKOW.

YINGKOW is the northwesternmost treaty port in the Chinese Empire, and lies on the River Liao at a distance of about 10 miles from where it flows into the Gulf of Péchili. The town is better known to Europeans and Americans under the name of Newchwang, yet, in reality, the latter is the style of a larger town 17 miles farther north. Yingkow is thus the port of Newchwang. The port lies on the eastern estuary of the Liao, has a population of about 35,000, and carries on a brisk trade, principally in bean-cake and bean-oil. Yingkow is thus unquestionably the most important tradal centre of the Liaotung Province and Shinking in general. The staple products of the country round about find their way to the store-houses in this prosperous treaty port, into which also are imported those various articles of which the Man-



churians have need. In the northernmost portion of the town lies the small settlement of "Newchwang", the one place in that thickly inhabited country where one may breathe in a purer, wholesome atmosphere.

During the War the town was defended by a number of forts, erected in the suburbs at a distance of about three miles in a southerly direction; while the Taotai or Mayor had some 10,000 braves under his immediate command, all well-armed and supplied with plentiful ammunition. Under the circumstances there seemed no likelihood of the port's being disturbed. But when, on March 4th, the older city of Newchwang fell before the victorious arms of the invading troops, the intelligence of this fresh Chinese disaster speedily reached Yingkow, hundreds of beaten soldiers streaming into the port with various versions of the city's fall. This news so greatly intimidated the Taotai that he immediately retreated to Tienchwangtai, leaving everything in the town nicely prepared for the immediate use of the Japanese Armies. As it happened this was about the best fate that could have befallen Yingkow, and to the prudence of the Japanese forces and the cowardice of the Taobai the preservation of the port is undoubtedly attributable. For, had there been any hitch, Yingkow with all its wealth and inhabitants would have fallen a victim to fire and the sword, as Tienchwangtai later on actually did fall.

As soon as the Taotai left, the criminal portion of the town began to give great trouble, and the streets presented a horrible sight: all sorts of crimes, robbery and burglary being committed by the unrestrained rabble. Most fortunately, however, the U. S. man-of-war *Petrel*, Captain Emory, was in port, and it is due to the prompt and noble exertions of this officer that the rioters were kept within bounds and foreign property unmolested, to the great gratitude and satisfaction of the residents. When the Japanese troops entered the town they were surprised to find the people peacefully occupied as usual and all traces of the riots gone.

The taking of Yingkow necessitated the appointment of a man of ability and experience in order to manage municipal matters; which were all the more complicated as they had intimate connection with the welfare of the foreign residents and the maintenance of peaceful relations between these foreigners and the native

inhabitants. To this important post the Head Quarters at Hiroshima appointed Mr. Sannomiya Yoshitané, then Vice-Grand Master of Ceremonies. This gentleman reached Hiroshima on March 15th, 1895, and, two days later, embarked with his suite from Ujina. The River Liao being still blocked with ice and the port still under the thralldom of King Winter, the party had to stay at Kinchow and Port Arthur until the ice melted and navigation once more became possible. So, after a long and vexatious delay the party reached Yingkow on board the Japanese man-of-war *Chôkai*. Mr. Sannomiya was cordially welcomed by the British and American Consuls, the representatives of the local foreign firms, and the Captains and officers of H. B. M. *Firebrand* and the U. S. *Petrel*, both of which had been stationed in the harbour to protect the lives and interests of foreign residents.

Mr. Sannomiya, as Special Commissioner to the Port of Yingkow, at once held a meeting with the Consuls, in which various diplomatic and consular questions were raised and thoroughly discussed. At first it appeared difficult to come to an agreement, but findly everything was settled

in an amicable manner, satisfactory both to the Japanese Government and the representatives of the Treaty Powers. This was the first occasion since the occupation of Yingkow that Japanese officials had met with the Consular Body. Friendly regulations were enacted with the cordial co-operation of all parties, and Mr. Sannomiya's mission and office—not to speak of his amiability and tact—will surely long be remembered by the European and American residents of Yingkow. That the Special Commissioner was so successful and acquitted himself of his manifold duties in so praiseworthy a manner, is, as he himself states, largely owing to the good-will shown and assistance rendered by the Consuls of



H. E. MR. SANNOMIYA.

Europe and America, and Captain Emory.

While busily engaged in the solution of important international questions, Mr. Sannomiya had to give much attention to the business of the Customs, which was a complicated and arduous task. The delicate question of deciding upon a new tariff had to be determined, as well as the making of new harbour regulations and the organizing of a new Customs' staff. There was not only no suitable official building in which to carry on the new administration, but the Commissioner was also greatly hampered by the scanty number of subordinates who composed his suite and had to do the multifarious work connected with the occupation. All difficulties were, none the less, got over with extreme adroitness, and by April 12th the Japanese Customs were, for the first time, inaugurated and in working order in Yingkow, only nine days after the arrival of Mr. Sannomiya. The new Custom House was styled "Office of the Special Commissioner to Yingkow," and the building used was the *Kwantien*, or "Mandarins' Waiting House". It was decided that the Customs duties, fees, etc., to be levied by the new Japanese Custom House, should be the same as those formerly imposed by the Chinese Government. The first ship to clear the harbour was the British steamer *Dukay*, with passengers and a full cargo. Thereafter many vessels both entered and cleared, and thus the commerce of Yingkow prospered and grew apace, the total amount of duties levied reaching nearly 650,000 *yen*. For the better protection of the people and the maintenance of peace and order, the Japanese warships *Atago* and *Chōkai* were stationed in the port, to the gratification of all. On land, at the same time, one Battalion of Infantry under Major Ishida, afterwards commanded by Major Watanabé, guarded the town, and so the joint land and sea forces kept everything and every body in good order during Mr. Sannomiya's beneficent sojourn in Yingkow. Fifteen days after his arrival everything was settled and the whole official business in good working order: imperfect, it may well have been, yet best suited to the requirements of the time and place. Mr. Sannomiya's stay had originally been determined for one calendar month. But it was found impossible during this very short period to settle satisfactorily all international questions and institute thorough-going

reforms in those departments where Chinese mismanagement had been most glaring. Mr. Sannomiya therefore requested that his term of office be prolonged for one month more, which request was granted. After the expiration of the second month Mr. Mitsunashi Nobukata, until then Secretary of Kanagawa Prefecture, took the place of the Commissioner, having been appointed Chief of the Sub-administrative Division of Yingkow. On May 3rd, after bidding farewell to his new friends, who parted from him with many sincere expressions of regret, Mr. Sannomiya left Yingkow for Japan, leaving behind him a most enviable record.

We must add, in conclusion that Mr. Alexander Hosie filled the post of Acting British Consul, and Mr. J. J. Frederic Bandinell that of Vice-Consul for the United States, during Mr. Sannomiya's sojourn. Mr. Bandinell had, moreover, until then acted as Honorary Consul for Japan.

---

## CHAPTER XXII.

---

### THE BATTLE AND CAPTURE OF TIENCHWANGTAI.

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

YINGKOW fell into the hands of the First Division of the Second Army a very easy prey. The First Army had come up, and on March 7, 1895, it was intended to inflict another crushing blow on the foe. Yet the Chinese did not offer to make a stand here, but fled towards Tienchwangtai, as we have seen already. The combined Japanese forces therefore resolved upon attacking the latter place.

A few days before the taking of Yingkow, Lieut.-General Katsura, in command of the Third Division, had instructed Major Hyōdō, Commander of the Second Battalion of Field Artillery, Third Regiment, to reconnoitre about Newchwang, the Shihsan-shan-tan highroad, and the River Liao. The detachment, with one Company of Cavalry, left Newchwang at 3 p. m. of March 4th—the very day of the town's capture—and after a toilsome march of 10 miles reached the Liao-ho, in front of the village of Sia-kan-tse, about the same hour on the following afternoon. After testing the thickness of the ice on the river, reconnoitring the neighbourhood thereabouts and many minor skirmishes with the Chinese who were numerous about the village, they regained Newchwang in safety early the next morning. Lieut.-General Katsura, however, did not take his troops along the route followed by Major Hyōdō's detachment, but chose another, rather more direct, road. At high noon of March 5th, the Division left Newchang for Tienchwangtai. Two days later the van reached Li-chia-ten, while

the Main Body of the Division halted at Niu-chien-tse. In order to ascertain the number and disposition of the enemy's forces, Major-General Ōshima, who was in command of the Advance Column, had set out on foot shortly before dawn of March 2nd, with a number of scouts armed to the teeth. This little body succeeded in quietly ranging more than a dozen field-guns along the bank of the Liao River, whence they opened fire on Tienchwangtai. Nothing intimidated, the enemy collected a force of at least 6000 men on the opposite bank, with batteries numbering more than thirty guns, and appeared to be quite willing not only to reply to the Japanese attack but even to make a sortie on their own account. Recognising the great strength of their opponents, Major-General Ōshima and his men quietly withdrew, taking their guns with them. On this affair being reported to Lieut.-General Katsura, he concluded that the enemy could not be well less than 10,000 strong in and about Tienchwangtai, and that therefore a larger force of Japanese would be necessary in order to cope successfully with them. At 3 p. m. of the same day Lieut.-General Nozu, commander of the First Army, arrived at Chang-chia-kau, where the discoveries made by Lieut.-General Katsura's reconnoitring parties were told him. On hearing what had happened, he at once despatched an aide to Lieut.-General Yamaji, commanding the First Division, who was at Niu-chia-tun. After consulting with this noted tactician, the Third Division, with some 50 guns in their centre, was told to set out for Tienchwangtai; the Fifth Division, acting as the Right Wing, was instructed to intercept the line of eventual retreat at Siang-chui-tai; while the First Division, as the Left Wing, was ordered to attack the rear of the enemy's right flank. These three bodies set out for their respective destinations at the same time: 7 a. m. of March 9th.

On the 5th of March Lieut.-General Katsura had left the First Battalion of the Nineteenth Regiment in garrison at Newchwang, and, after the capitulation of that town, had made the following arrangements:

1. Major-General Ōshima to lead the Advance Column, composed of two Battalions of Infantry and a battery from the Miyoshi Regiment;
2. Major-General Ōsako with the Satō Regiment (now command-

ed by Major-General Nozu, in consequence of Colonel Satō's severe wound) and the Shibano Artillery Regiment to form the Main Body; 3. The Suzuki Battalion of the Miyoshi Regiment to march southward along the River Liao, as the Japanese Right Wing, and to protect the right flank of the Main Body.

There were no special provisions made for a Left Wing, as the Fifth Division was to march on that side of the troops. The Independent Battalion of Cavalry was further instructed to keep a sharp lookout about Yingkow and Tienchwangtai, keeping as near the enemy's lines as possible. Starting at noon of March 5th, after a brief halt at Lan-chi-pao, they reached another village; on the following day the Main Body halted at Kei-nan-pu and the Advance Column at Peh-tsao-ya; finally on March 7th the whole force reached Niu-chien-tse. It was on the next day, March 8th, that Major-General Ōshima made his bold reconnaissance, with some men of the Miyoshi Regiment, as already recorded. The Satō and Aibara Regiments took up a position somewhat to the west of Niu-chien-tse, but did not attempt to make a farther advance.

Going back to the Fifth Division, we find that this body left Newchwang on March 5th, halting for the night at Tatai-tse. At dawn of March 6th camp was broken and the march began towards the south-east of Kao-kan; while the larger portion of the Division, taking the direction of Tashih-kiao, advanced towards the southern part of Laoyeh-miao. At two o'clock in the afternoon the Staff reached Kao-kan; and, on March 8th, Chin-toi-tse was made, where the troops bivouacked in battle-array. The First Division, on the other hand, after taking Yingkow on the 7th, left the First Regiment in garrison there, while, at 3 o'clock in the afternoon, the remaining forces set out for Tienchwangtai. Their various halts were made at Ta-hwang-shien, San-chia-tse and Lin-shū-kau. At this time the Third Division was east of Niu-shien-tse, to the right of the village in which the First Division had put up. To the right of the Third Division again was the Fifth, at or rather in the neighbourhood of Chin-toi-tse. The three Divisions were thus near each other and all prepared to work in unison for the reduction of Tienchwangtai.

The town of Tienchwangtai stands on the right bank of the

River Liao, and is a port whence boats proceed to Yingkow and Newchwang. The town itself is about 10 miles to the north of Yingkow, the river—here 600-700 metres broad—flowing by the southern suburb. Surrounding the town is a wide, irregularly shaped plain, dotted with villages generally lying within about 1000 metres of each other. The river had been selected by the enemy as their line of defence, and earth-works ran all along the opposite bank, each bristling with cannon. Though well on in March, the river still was completely frozen over, the ice being of a thickness sufficient to bear the weight of men, horses, and ammunition-wagons.

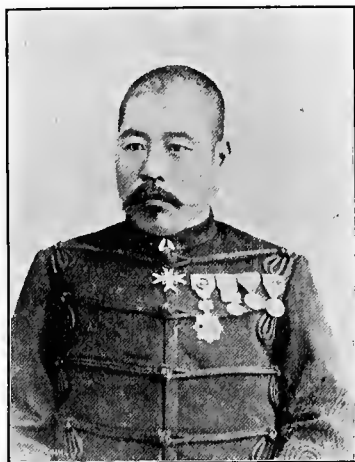
At dawn of March 9th the three Divisions began to move. The van and Main Body of the Third Division were to keep to the main road on the east bank of the Liao. The Miyoshi Regiment of the Advance Column and the Suzuki Battalion, under Major Suzuki Tokoyo, advanced in open order from the right side of the main road. The Fujimoto Battalion, under Major Fujimoto Tarō of the Aibara Regiment, advanced from the left side of the road, taking the direction of La-koh, a hamlet which lay just in front. Here the Artillery, which came up from both sides of the road, halted. The Independent Cavalry Battalion, taking an oblique course in front of the Miyoshi Regiment, was to communicate with the Fifth Division. Far to the left of the Fujimoto Battalion, forming the Left Wing, two other Regiments of the First Division were advancing. At 8 a. m. the Japanese Infantry and Artillery in the village of La-koh were perceived by the enemy and subjected to a rain of shot and shell. The battery of mountain-guns attached to the Third Division now unlimbered at the north end of the village and, together with 7 mortars and a battery of field-guns belonging to the Artillery on the opposite (night) side, began replying steadily to the Chinese fire. The Mountain Artillery of the Third Artillery Regiment, belonging to the Nishi Brigade of the First Division,—which had set out that morning at 3.30 a. m.—now came up on the left side and joined in the furious cannonade. Then the Field and Mountain Artillery of the First and Third Divisions also drew near and began firing rapidly. At this spot there were no less than 97 pieces of ordnance firing at one time, the whole being under the able command of Major-General



Kuroda Hisataka, of the Artillery. On the other, Chinese, side, there were only 20 cannon in all, and after two hours of this tremendous firing the enemy's cannon were wholly silenced. The Japanese batteries had however not only had the enemy's cannon to silence but also to drive back the troops from the right bank of the river, by the town. This was splendidly managed, the enemy being thrown into great confusion. So soon as this was apparent, three Battalions of the Seventh and Ninth Regiments advanced in open order, and on reaching the dike on the eastern bank, about 1000 metres distant, they poured volley after volley into the wavering ranks of the enemy, who replied as well as they could with their magazine rifles. Firing was now ordered all along the Japanese line, upon which the Chinese, who had evidently intended to withdraw in a northerly direction, ran in every direction helter-skelter, like a flock of sheep. A few score of the bravest only stuck to the redoubts and still offered resistance. Seeing this, the Japanese batteries threw shrapnel among them, and when these tremendous missiles began to explode in their midst even the most courageous lost heart and turned to fly. The Suzuki Battalion now sprang into the ranks of the disheartened foe, jumping down from the dike whence they had been firing. At the same time the Fujimoto Battalion, hitherto on the left, ran at full speed across the frozen river and dashed into the enemy's camp. The day was won, and victory once again smiled on the Japanese.

In the meantime Lieut.-General Yamaji had not been idle. According to his orders, Major-General Nishi Kanjirō, with the Second Brigade of Infantry, and one battery of Mountain Artillery attached to the Third Division, left Ta-hwang-shien at 3 a. m. of this day and, passing by Hei-ying-kau, crossed the Liao River. Following the bank these troops were instructed to advance on Tienchwangtai in a north-westerly direction, in order to intercept the ultimate retreat of the foe. Moreover, a Regiment of Artillery was to set out from the above-named Ta-hwang-shien at 3.30 a. m., and reached the ferry or ford known as Pai, whence the guns were to open fire. With the Fifteenth Regiment and a Battalion of Engineers, Lieut.-General Yamaji followed hard after the Artillery, taking up a station just back of the Left Wing of this

Regiment. Major-General Nishi, intending to form a juncture with the Fifth Division, crossed the river in an oblique direction, and, thirty minutes later, or at about 7 a. m., reached a spot two miles or thereabouts south-west of the doomed town. Day had already dawned, but still there was no noise nor any sign of life in the enemy's camps; indeed for a moment it was supposed that the Chinese had fled, so great was the stillness. Half an hour later, far off to the north-east, the sound of heavy firing became audible, yet the heavy mist kept the combatants shrouded so that it was impossible to discern which side had commenced hostilities. At 8 a. m. the Brigade reached a place within 2000 metres of the north-western portion of the town, and now for the first time the Chinese appeared to wake up to the nearness of the attacking forces. They began firing, but after a disorderly fashion. The Commander of the Second Regiment on this deployed his men, while steadily advancing, and the Artillery ranged their guns west of Tienchwangtai and began firing with admirable precision and deadly effect. At 8.40 a. m. the Chinese guns were *hors de combat*, and their foot-soldiers began to fall back. The Second Regiment promptly gave chase, while the Third



COLONEL MATSUNAGA.

Regiment cut off the road of retreat. The enemy were now at their wit's end, having no road left open for retreat. Scattering in all directions, the enemy fled in little bands, some going north while others ran north-west. Two Companies were at once singled out by Major-General Nishi to chase the fugitives, who tried to press through the space lying between the Second and Third Regiments. Nothing could have been greater or more wretched than the confusion of the beaten garrison. At 9.50 a. m. Major-General Nishi marched into the town; but twenty-five minutes

later he began to make way towards Shin-tun.

The movements of the Fifth Division on this memorable morning were as follow:—The Twenty-second Regiment formed the van, marching in battle array. Just as they reached the left bank of the Liao, the battle broke out fiercely in the direction of the First and Third Divisions. Over 100 cannons being fired on both sides, the roar was deafening, the very ground seeming to shake with the terrible noise. Lieut.-General Oku, the Division Commander, went ahead and, after a brief survey of the scene, ordered the Twenty-second to cross the upperpart of the stream, for the purpose of attacking the enemy's left and cut off eventual retreat in that direction. For, contrary to the usual plan, there was this time left no road open for retreat. The defeat was intended to be—as indeed it was—overwhelming, entirely destroying the strength of the Chinese Army thereabouts. The field and mountain-guns of the Division Artillery were then ranged to the east of the town, and promptly opened a heavy fire; to which the Chinese bravely replied—wounding four Japanese artillerists at the very first discharge. While the tremendous cannonade was going on, the Infantry steadily crept nearer the Chinese line, engaging in repeated hand-to-hand encounters. As the Twenty-second Regiment broke through the enemy's outer line of defence, the Chinese began to waver, being greatly cut up by the shrapnel fired into their ranks by the gunners of the Third Division. Once more the First Division charged the foe, this time in the rear. When the tortured Chinese turned to run, the Twenty-second instantly advanced at double-quick, followed hard by the Artillery. The icy surface of the stream presented a striking sight, covered, as far as the eye could see, with Japanese soldiers advancing in open order and firing rapidly at the bewildered foe. Reinforcements under Major-General Ōshima, Commander of the Ninth Brigade, now came up. The Twenty-second Regiment continued their volley-fire until their front ranks had occupied the disputed roadways, while the enemy, in terror-stricken despair, ran hither and thither over the trackless snow. The Fifteenth Regiment, which had formed the reserve of the First Division, hereupon crossed the Liao, started from the left of the Artillery ground and reached

the southern portion of the town. Tienchwangtai was wholly taken just a little after 10 a. m., or after nearly four hours of hard and sanguinary combat. A column of smoke was now seen rising ominously in the northern part of the town. A fire had, most unfortunately, broken out and the fresh breeze fanned the flames to fury. The fire sprang from one quarter to another and soon all Tienchwangtai was ablaze. Frequent tremendous explosions announced that the flames had reached the powder-magazines or piles of ammunition. The Japanese could not, under the circumstances, get into the heart of the town, while the Chinese who had concealed themselves in the houses were forced to fly by the dreadful heat, many losing their lives in the flames.

The casualties on the Japanese side were,

	KILLED AND WOUNDED.
First Division	60
Third Division	47
Fifth Division	19
Total	<u>126</u>

The Chinese losses must have exceeded two thousand. Before the conflagration occurred the Japanese had captured 20 cannon, 6000 rifles, 34,000 rounds of ammunition and 400 shells, but nearly all was lost in the flames. Twelve cannon and a number of small arms were all that were saved from the fire.

On the news of this victory reaching Hiroshima, T. I. M. the Emperor and Empress at once sent congratulatory messages to the First and Second Armies. These were respectfully replied to by Lieut.-General Nozu, on behalf of the First Expeditionary Army, and Marshal Ōyama in the name of the Second.

The reason why the enemy had so frequently attempted to re-possess themselves of Haiching may have been owing to the fact that Tienchwangtai formed their basis of supplies; for after the fall of this town the Chinese no longer thought of regaining that important citadel. The advance westwards would, after this signal victory, have been a very easy matter.

---

## II.—BRAVE MEN AND BRAVE DEEDS.

## 1.—A COURAGEOUS LEADER.

KOSHIZAKI TOJIRŌ, a First-class Sergeant of the Seventh Regiment, had been sent out on December 14th, 1894, with a scouting-party under Sub-Lieutenant Hosono Tatsu-o. When the scouts were about entering Santai-tse on the Newchwang road, west of Haiching, Koshizaki was leading. A number of Chinese Cavalry was said to be in the village, yet the bold scout made nothing of this and dashed in and among the houses, where he and his comrades made a thorough if perilous reconnaissance. When the invading Army attacked Tienchwangtai, Koshizaki acted as the leader of a small detachment, and was foremost in the first line of battle, the men marching in open order. Despite the exceptionally heavy fire of the enemy, he led his men through the hail of bullets and entered Tienchwangtai, giving chase to the defeated foe outside. Koshizaki and his men forced their way into many of the larger buildings in the search for concealed Chinese, and everywhere the Sergeant was the first to enter. Numbers of Chinese were unearthed in this way, and either shot down or driven away. In this fashion the Sergeant and his little maniple managed to take secure possession of the whole northern part of the town: a notable feat in consideration of their numbers and the desperation of the Chinese.

## 2.—A QUICK-WITTED MAN.

FOREMOST in breaking into dwellings, in Newchwang, where the enemy still lurked, was Hori Juntarō, a second-class private of the Seventh Regiment, Third Division. Hori had already frequently distinguished himself by many acts of daring. The day before the storming of Tienchwangtai (March 8th), Hori was with Kawamura Iktarō, a first-class private, the two being engaged as scouts. When they approached the houses to the west of

La-koh, Hori was attached as scout to the Left Wing and, parting from the Main Body, had to traverse an open plain. After his reconnaissance was over and on the way back, he was suddenly fired at by numerous enemies, until then unobserved. Not daunted in the least, Hori made haste to ascertain the number of these fresh foes, and finally returned, uninjured, to make a most valuable report. When Tienchwangtai was stormed, the Japanese troops had, had it will be remembered, to cross the frozen River Liao. Near the opposite bank Hori found, being naturally ahead of all the rest, a place some two metres broad where the ice had been broken through. Leaping briskly across the hole and reckless of the enemy, now at close quarters, he rushed to a fence on the bank and wrenched off a large plank. This he then laid across the aperture in the ice, and over this all the troops thereafter crossed.

---

### 3.—WILLING AID.

FUJIKI ICHITARŌ, second-class private of the Third Company, Seventh Regiment, distinguished himself as a scout at Kan-chien-pao, on the Liaoyang highway and in the street-fighting in Newchwang. In the assault of Tienchwangtai he rendered special aid to the Commander of his immediate Sub-company, thereby winning fame both for his officer and himself. The Chinese, duringt he attack on Tienchwangtai, made a most stubborn defence, their lines completely surrounding the town. On the other hand the Japanese had to fight over the frozen Liao and under a a murderous fire, without any shelter whatever. Nevertheless they had, despite the many casualties, to advance steadily, and it was here that Fujiki, by marching boldly in advance of all the rest, set his comrades an excellent example. When about 300 metres from the enemy, Lieutenant Nagai Masamoto, the Commander of Fujiki's Sub-company, received a bullet in his left elbow. The blood gushed forth in torrents and, seeing that he was rapidly losing strength, the Lieutenant despairingly called out, "Is there no one who will help me on to Tienchwangtai?"

The words were hardly spoken before Fujiki sprang to his side. Making the wounded officer rest on his own sturdy shoulder, Fujiki supported the Lieutenant across the river and so aided him that he could still give commands. Both officer and private thereafter took part in the final charge.

---

#### 4.—A DANGEROUS CAPTURE.

ONE of the foremost to reach the opposite bank of the frozen River Liao was Uchida Sakuhei, a Second-class Reservist Sergeant of the 18th Regiment, Third Division. On the bank was a strong building in which some 15 or 16 Chinese soldiers were concealed and firing on the approaching Japanese. There was only one entrance to the house and the men inside seemed determined to defend it to the uttermost. Sergeant Uchida wanted to shoot the defenders from the outside, but so strong was the place and the enemy so well hidden that this was impossible. Still it would not do to let the place go undisturbed: the hidden Chinese must be silenced or captured at all hazards. Noticing that his men showed some signs of hesitation, the Sergeant suddenly called out, "Follow me!" and ran towards the door. In an instant more this was battered down and the Sergeant and his men within the house. The Chinese were captured to a man, and this without any loss on the part of the captors.

---

#### 5.—A SERGEANT'S DEATH.

VERY gallant was the conduct of Suzuki Bunsaku, a Reserve First-class Sergeant of the 12th Company, Second Regiment, First Division, during the storming of Tienchwangtai; especially in such places where the enemy outnumbered the Japanese forces by five or six to one. Suzuki led his men from victory to victory. On two occasions he had them fire at a distance of only 45 metres from the foe, and on each occasion the volleys had a grand effect,

---

driving the hostile artillerists from their guns. Hearing the sound of heavy firing on the left wing of his Company's right flank, Suzuki wheeled his men and marched in that direction. He had the men load and aim—but the order to fire was not forthcoming, to their surprise. The fact was that Suzuki had, just at that supreme moment, been struck by a bullet in the breast. Suzuki called out for his officer, Captain Obata Tamaki, who hastened to his side. Putting his hand to his mouth to check the flow of blood and render his broken speech audible, the dying man said, "Sir, I have died in the discharge of my duty!" The words had hardly left his lips before he was dead.

\*             \*             \*             \*             \*

On this same memorable day, First-class Sergeant Okazaki Aikichi was conspicuous for his excellent command and strict discharge of duty. Every now and then he would run forward to reconnoitre the condition of the enemy, and this reckless of the bullets which showered about him. Particularly skilful was he in telling the men when and how to shoot, their fire invariably doing great damage to the enemy. Sergeant Okazaki's men were always well to the fore, and he himself the first of all. When pushing into the enemy's lines, the Sergeant showed excellent judgment in keeping the men well together and concentrating their fire. The fight was most stubborn and hotly contested, the distance between the two forces decreasing to 40 or 50 metres. At this moment a bullet hit the Sergeant in the throat. Crying loudly three times the stirring words "*Tennō Heika Banzai!*" he fell dead.

---

#### 6.—SICKNESS NO HINDRANCE.

NAKAZAWA KI-ICHI, a third-class private of the 12th Company, Third Regiment, had been suffering severely from frost-bitten feet and, on the day before the assault of Tienchwangtai, was ordered to go into hospital. But as every one was very busy at the time, Nakazawa stopped at the transport train and did not go the whole way to the field lazaret. Meeting here with an officer, he began



excitedly, "It is only for the convenience of this poor body of mine if I enter hospital. But on joining the Army of course I did not expect to survive. I cannot grudge my hand or feet to my country." These words bore the stamp of truth and were not spoken for effect. By dint of constant pleading, Nakazawa got permission to rejoin his Company, though against the better judgment of the surgeons. The forces broke camp at 1 a. m. of March 9th, and the road followed was covered with snow. From that hour till 8.30 a. m. no halt was made, and the suffering of such men as Nakazawa can be better imagined than described. Utterly exhausted he stumbled and fell at least a score of times, and there were many who expected to see him fall out of line. Yet his iron will brought him as often to his feet again. Not only did he manage to keep up with the rest, but he even fought with distinguished bravery in that day's fight, killing many of the enemy. After the battle was over his feet were seen to be in a shocking state, the blood oozing from his shoes.

---

#### 7.—PRESENCE OF MIND.

YAMAZAKI YOSHIMATSU was one of the commissariat attached to the Third Battalion of the Second Regiment, First Division. He was engaged in handling the smaller articles of the train. On several occasions he had to fight most fiercely with the enemy, who often directed their attacks against the commissariat wagons. On one occasion a sudden assault on the part of the Chinese caused much confusion, the bullets coming in a continuous stream. Yamazaki none the less stood by the horse he was leading, when a bullet suddenly struck his thigh, causing great hæmorrhage. The horse he held grew restive and began to plunge, preparatory to running away. Careless of his wound, Yamazaki held firmly to the bit. Another soldier then came up and, seeing the condition of affairs, severed the guiding rein and led the horse elsewhere. Yamazaki could no longer stand and fell to the ground. After a little while the Chinese were repulsed, on which the wounded man, hearing the shouts, asked faintly whether the

foe were vanquished or not; but not a word did he say of his own desperate plight. The wound was a mortal one and he died shortly afterwards in the field lazaret.

---

## CHAPTER XXIII.

---

### THE CAPTURE OF THE PESCADORES.

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

AFTER the surrender of the last vessels of the once-formidable Peiyang Squadron, the Japanese were supreme in the northern seas. This Squadron, long China's pride and boast, was the best part of her Navy. Yet there remained the Southern or Nanyang Squadron, and the Fuhkien and Kwangtung coast-defence fleets. None of these were at all to be feared, for they were composed principally of gunboats—the so-called “Alphabetical Fleet”—intend for river defence or working in shallow waters. Combined they could at best offer only a weak defence; but until Japan obtained some stronghold in the southern seas, she could not be considered the mistress of these waters. For these reasons the capture of the Pescadores, or Fisher Islands, was resolved upon: a tiny archipelago of not much value, but lying in the fairway between the Chinese mainland and Formosa and commanding the approaches to the latter rich and fertile island: now Japanese territory. The Fisher Islands, which take their name from the principal islet of the group, lie between 119° and 120° East Longitude and 23°-24° North Latitude. Murch trepang or bêche-de-mer—that holothurian *bonne bouche* of the people of both Empires—is there collected, while shells of great beauty are abundant. The sea thereabouts is moreover very rich in a variety of fish. In earlier days the Pescadores were notorious for their piratical haunts.

At 2 p. m. of March 6th a Mixed Detachment embarked on board the *Kagoshima Maru* and several other transports. Leaving Ujina almost simultaneously, the transports reached the Saseho Naval Station on the 9th of the same month. At 9 a. m. of March 15th, led by the *Matsushima*, the Japanese Fleet took the van, the ex-merchant steamer *Saikyō Maru* leading the transports. On the 20th, at 2.45 p. m., the Fleet and the transports reached the southern shore of Pa-chao Island, where the ships temporarily cast anchor. The idea had been to steam to the Pescadores at dawn of the following day, but this plan had to be abandoned, owing to the roughness of the weather. However the *Yoshino* and *Naniwa*, being excellent sea-boats, were sent towards the islands in question in order to reconnoitre. The storm continued in full force until the 22nd. On the 23rd the wind somewhat abated, and at 7 a. m. the ships were steaming at full speed towards the Pescadores, leaving the offing of Pa-chao-tao. Having got so far south, it was necessary to steer a northerly course in order to reach their destination. During this last day's steaming, the First Flying Squadron, which had fallen out of the line, drew near, at 9.30 a. m., the Kon-peh-tai fort, which was situated on some elevated ground north-east of Hao-chiao. This fort the Flying Squadron subjected to a fierce bombardment, the Chinese garrison stoutly replying. The engagement was quite a warm one for some time. In less than an hour, however, the Chinese guns were silenced; so the First Flying Squadron stopped firing and returned to their station. At about 11.30 a. m. the Japanese vessels drew near the coast-line of the port of Wên-liang, in the bay of Li-chon-chiao. Here they cast anchor. At noon the Flagship signalled to begin the disembarkation of the troops, and the officers charged with the superintendence of the landing (Commander Tōgō Masaji, Captain of the *Saikyō Maru*, being the leader,) ordered the vessels to lower their steam-pinnaces. Each pinnace carried a small cannon and tugged after it several cutters, on which the troops were to be ferried across to the landing. The launches collected, in the first instance, about the *Kagoshima Maru*, on which were the men of the First Battalion of the First Regiment of Reserves, thereafter to act as Advance Guard. The boats of the other transports now drawing

near, the men were promptly taken to the shore: the First, Second, Third and Fourth Companies landing in the order named. Colonel Hishijima Yoshiteru, in command of the detachment, landed at the same time. The entire force was, by dint of zeal and activity, set ashore by about 2 p. m., or in less than two hours. Shortly before the accomplishment of this task, the *Akitsu-shima* had anchored off the place chosen for the landing, and had been cannonading the Kon-peh-tai fort for about an hour. But when it was seen that the troops were rapidly approaching the shore, the hitherto silent fort suddenly burst into vigorous action and began to rain shells among the steam-pinnaces and transports, fortunately without doing any harm.

So soon as the First Battalion had made the shore, scouts were sent on to the port of Wên-liang and the villages in the neighbourhood. On questioning the natives, it was ascertained that there were no Chinese soldiers thereabouts. Commander Hishijima then ordered the First Battalion men to occupy an elevated site facing the village of Chien-shan, about 870 metres from the point where the landing had been effected. Major Iwasaki Shiki, who was in command of the First Battalion, told off Captains Yamaguchi Masaji and Nakajima Yukimasa, of the First and Second Companies, ordering them to seize the elevated ground pointed out. This was rapidly done, no enemies being found in the vicinity. So another advance was made, and this time to a second knoll about 2000 metres away. Some 300 Chinese then came running on, intending to occupy the knoll before the Japanese could reach the place. They were, however, soon dispersed by a rapid and steady fire on the part of the attacking forces. The Chinese soldiery replied to this with similar volleys, the distance between the combating forces being barely 200 metres at the time. Suddenly a reinforcement, about 150 strong, came out of a village in front and advanced at double-quick to the aid of their dispersing comrades. On seeing this, Captain Nakajima promptly made two detachments of his Company conceal themselves in a sunken or hollow road, where the Chinese would be sure to pass. As the reinforcement drew near, the ambuscaded Japanese fired one volley. This greatly in-

timidated the Chinese, who began at once to fall back on all sides, though still keeping up an irregular fire. Major Iwazaki, who was then leading the Third and Fourth Companies, felt some anxiety about the fighting in front, so ordered Captains Matsuzaka and Sakuma, of the Third and Fourth Companies, to advance to the aid of the First and Second. Captain Sakuma gave the command to fix bayonets, and, after firing a few volleys, the men made a bayonet-charge. This example was immediately followed by the other Companies, so that the Chinese broke their ground and fled precipitately. At 4 p. m. the First Battalion occupied the second knoll, nearly 3000 metres from the place where the landing had been effected. In the mean-time the Second Battalion had landed and stayed near the place where they had first gained the shore, guarding the regimental colours. When the First Battalion succeeded in repelling the Chinese, the Second began to advance, and, on seeing that the enemy were falling back on all sides, marched to the right flank of the First Battalion and gave chase to the foe. In this way they entered the village facing the second knoll and went thence on to the sea-coast. Later they returned to the knoll where the two Battalions had separated and there encamped, while the Staff Quarters of the detachment were established in the village of Chien-shan.

On the 24th, the detachment was to take the Kon-peh-tai fort north-east of Hao-chiao. It was then determined to resume the march inland and occupy Ma-kon-ching, and to this effect orders were giving for all to assemble at the encampment of the two Battalions by 4 o'clock the next morning. At 2.30 a. m. the Staff Quarters moved out of the village above-named. The first to take the route was the temporary Company of Mountain Artillery, under Captain Arai Nobu-o, and the Naval Contingent, with Q.-F. guns, under Naval Lieutenant Tajima Koretaka, Chief Gunner of the *Matsushima*. The night was very dark, yet the troops moved steadily on: at first over a wide plain much cut up with ditches in every direction, which materially hindered rapidity of movement. There was no road worthy of the name, and the dragging of the gun-carriages was a heart-breaking piece of business under the circumstances. In fact, only two miles were made after three hours of the most arduous toil. The

other bodies succeeded in reaching the rallying-ground at 4 a. m., and, 30 minutes later, all began to move forwards. The Second Battalion of the Twelfth Regiment of Reserves led the van, the Right Wing being formed by the Second Battalion of the First Regiment of Reserves. The first objective was the Kon-peh-tai fort. Foremost in the van marched Captain Kinoshita Shōzen, who was in command of the Fifth Company. As soon as he came near the fort he encouraged his men to advance rapidly. At about 6 a. m. it was noticed that some 200 Chinese had collected between the fort and the elevated ground occupied by the First Regiment on the previous day. The enemy seemed determined to dispute the road with the invading forces. On this, Lieutenant Ishii Yashirō, commanding the First Sub-company of this Fifth Company, fought most gallantly, his men sweeping down on the Chinese with the utmost fury and speedily dispersing them. At last, at 6.30 a. m., Lieutenant Ishii and his veterans dashed into the fort, whence most of the garrison had fled. And so the Kon-peh fortress, the chief stronghold of the Pescadores, was taken in something less than 30 minutes. At about the same time as the Second Battalion of the Twelfth Regiment reached the fort, the Second Battalion of the First Regiment also came dashing up. The Temporary Battery of Mountain Artillery had, prior to the approach of the victorious Fifth Company, lined up in a vegetable-field between the forts and the already mentioned elevated ground. But the range was too great for the guns, and so their cannonade did nothing more than give the Chinese garrison a wholesome fright, thus paving the way for the subsequent capture of Kon-peh-tai. The Naval Contingent had ranged two Q.-F. guns to the left of this battery on some high ground connected with the fort. These guns did much execution among the Chinese, their gunners being driven away and their cannon thereupon captured. While this was being done, the Fourth Company of the First Regiment of Reserves marched to a village south of Kon-peh-tai. The Company was further ordered to act as a cover to the Naval Contingent until such time as the seamen should have finished landing. At 6.30 a. m. the Company began to move, and on the road encountered with the fugitive Chinese, with whom they had several minor skirmishes. After

a while they captured the village, driving the foe out at the bayonet's point. This village had been the camping ground of the Ching-hai Right and Left Contingents, the local garrison being about 500 strong. Landing close by the village, a portion of the Naval Contingent then entered the Kon-peh fort.

So soon as the Kon-peh fort had definitely fallen, the scattered Japanese forces re-assembled and began marching towards Ma-kon. The Second Company of the First Regiment of Reserves led the van. While on the road the troops were fired at by a fort on Yui-wang Island, but no damage was done, and Ma-kon-ching reached in safety. Delivering a front attack, the First Company stormed the encampment of the Chinese Island Infantry Contingent. At 11.10 a. m. the Second Company dashed through the gate of the fort, intending thereupon to divide into three sections and to attack the enemy from three sides at once. But the Chinese had already fled, only some thirty men remaining on the right-hand roadside. It speaks well for their courage that these thirty foot-soldiers made some show of resistance, despite the numerical superiority of the attacking forces. Yet this resistance lasted for only a few minutes, a bayonet-charge easily dispersing the little mob. Still farther on the Company fell in with another band of Chinese, perhaps 20 altogether, near a broad place known as Shui-leh-yong. These were likewise speedily driven back. The Chinese then retreated in the direction of the north gate, or sea-coast forts. The Third Company occupied Shui-leh-ying and the Fourth the north-western end of the castle. By 11.50 a. m. the whole bourg of Ma-kon was in the undisputed possession of the Japanese.

On the same day the Naval Contingent, under Naval Commander Tanji Hiro-o, stormed a fort in the Yuan-ching peninsula, the Chinese making no effort whatever to defend themselves. About 500 of the enemy surrendered here. Two days later (March 26th), the seamen entered the forts on Yui-wang Island, where they found nothing but a letter which a native brought to them. The entire garrison had fled, and the letter stated that the forts were surrendered in to the hands of the Japanese.

During the course of the fighting, the Japanese captured 8 Chinese of either civil or military official rank, and took 47



soldiers prisoners. The privates were afterwards given their liberty, but the presumptive officials were detained.

The spoils taken by the Japanese were almost incomputably great. The first rough list gave the following result:—

18	cannon ;
2663	rifles ;
1,043,190	rounds of ammunition ;
797	casks of gunpowder ;
3173	bags of explosive powder ;
911	bags of rice, etc., etc.

A Government Office and a Military Post Office were speedily built by the victorious troops, and Rear-Admiral Tanaka Tsunatsune was selected as Governor of the islands. He did many things in behalf of the natives, and soon succeeded in winning their respect and confidence.

With the capture of the Pescadores Japan held the key to Southern China. She was undisputed mistress of the Chinese waters, and the whole great eastern littoral of the Empire was at her mercy.

---

## CHAPTER XXIV.

---

### HIS MAJESTY THE EMPEROR.

IN our enumeration of the heroic deeds and valiant bearing of the Japanese, in their late great war with China, we are constrained to make respectful reference to the noble part played by H. M. the Emperor of Japan.

It was in September, 1894, that His Majesty left Tōkyō for Hiroshima, that city becoming Head Quarters. There was no attempt at making even so much as a suitable temporary residence. One room, of about twenty mats in size, was hastily selected in one of the local barracks: unfurnished, save for a table and a chair, without any pretension to ease or comfort. In this cheerless and narrow apartment His Majesty lived for several months, working with tireless indefatigability and a spirit that was as unselfish as it was noble. Rising early in the morning, His Majesty would don the uniform of the Commander-in-Chief, nor was this uniform removed until late at night, the whole day being spent in the perusal of despatches, giving of orders, and general arrangement of the movements of the troops afield. There being an absolute lack of the ordinary conveniences of life, some Chamberlains one day proposed that a gallery should be built up beside the Chamber used by His Majesty. The Emperor was offended at the mere proposal. "Our soldiers afield," observed His Majesty, "have to live in tents or are exposed to the elements and the buffets of wind and rain. Knowing this We find nothing to complain of in the smallness of these quarters." The plan was thus relinquished, and the Chamberlains were deeply moved by His Majesty's forbearance.

Each morning, immediately upon rising, officials came who reported on the condition of the soldiers, and who had to reply to many eager and searching questions, all of which showed the profound interest taken by His Majesty in the welfare of the troops. After a hasty glance at the papers, His Majesty proceeded to Head Quarters, there to receive reports and consult on all matters appertaining to the war: a task of tremendous magnitude and importance. Fearing that such continued assiduity might injure His Majesty's health, some Court attendants once begged the Emperor to go out and take a little exercise, but were met with the reply: "Thinking how great are the sufferings and privations are of Our soldiers in China, Our discomfort should be no cause for complaint." Indeed so tireless was His Majesty that meals were often curtailed or altogether neglected. Each night the midnight hour still found the Emperor at his desk, and from early morning till after noon the work was resumed. After a hasty repast at one p. m. work invariably continued till nightfall. No one in or out of the Army and Navy worked harder or more incessantly than did the Emperor of Japan.

Nor could such labour fail to arouse enthusiastic devotion among all classes of the people. Every soldier, every sailor knew well that the Emperor was aware of everything that was going on; that His Majesty sympathised with his sufferings and privations, and constantly endeavoured to alleviate his discomforts as far and as quickly as possible. And so all were inflamed by a spirit of exalted loyalty and courage: an intrepidity that knew no obstacle in its path: a spirit that passed with a cheer for His Majesty from the lips of the dying,—that made Japan invincible and supreme in the East.

\*            \*            \*            \*            \*

Though for so many centuries a friend of Japan, the war at once severed all treaties and compacts of friendship between China and this Empire. The quondam good friends could meet nowhere except on the battle-field, amidst the roar of cannon and the iron hail of deadly missiles. Yet despite the declaration of war with China, His Majesty the Emperor of Japan felt no enmity for his foe. On the contrary, he pitied China's misfortunes and sympathised with the grief of her monarch throughout the war. One

day, on receipt of despatches announcing a fresh victory and the fall of an important Chinese stronghold, the Emperor's first words were: "How great must be the anxiety of the Chinese Sovereign!" In all the exultation of triumph, His Majesty could thus feel for his one-time ally and friend. Greater magnanimity than this could not be shown. And witness again His Majesty's prompt consent to an armistice—until that time refused except upon large concessions on the part of China—as soon as the attempt on Ambassador Li's life was known: the profound sympathy expressed in many ways for the sufferer, the Imperial messengers constantly coming and going to inquire after the wounded man's progress towards recovery. All these and a thousand other instances prove that the Imperial heart felt no rancor toward China; that the Imperial desire was *not* for the aggrandisement of Japan, but for the restoration and preservation of peace in the Orient, and the planting of the standard of civilization on the shores of conservatism and irreconcilable maladministration.

\*                     \*                     \*                     \*                     \*

One of the branches of science in which His Majesty is peculiarly well versed is that of geography, and throughout the campaign the Emperor showed a surprisingly minute and accurate knowledge of the conformation of the territory through which the Japanese troops were so triumphantly passing. The large charts of the War Department were ever at his side, and whenever the news came of a fresh victory by land or sea, His Majesty would point out the exact spot on the map long before his attendants could manage to "get their bearings." In this way His Majesty was acquainted with the exact disposition of the troops, the roads they might or should take, and the ease or difficulty of the march before them. Thanks, too, to this remarkably accurate knowledge, the Emperor would put searching and astute questions to his officers concerning the details of every proposed movement with a skill and ready judgment that were the admiration of his Staff.

\*                     \*                     \*                     \*                     \*

Most deeply appreciated by all classes of His Majesty's subjects, and particularly by the brave men of the Army and

Navy, was the profound and abiding interest shown by the Emperor in the welfare and personal comfort of the troops engaged in the war. Each day minute inquiries were made, and everything humanly possible done, and done promptly, to assure the soldiers and sailors of Japan that their August Emperor was taking the liveliest interest in, and felt the deepest concern for, their wellbeing. Whenever a great victory was announced, both Emperor and Empress sent at once congratulatory and cheering telegrams to the victors; or Imperial messengers were dispatched to assure the wearied men of the Imperial praise and satisfaction. But more than this:—From the very inception of the war, Their Majesties the Emperor and Empress were constantly devising plans to add to the welfare and insure the content of the troops, particularly by sending generous and repeated gifts of the little home-comforts which mean so much to those afield and far from friends and relatives. Tens of thousands of packages of cigarettes were paid for out of the Privy Purse; hundreds of tubs of *saké*—that ardent, sweet rice-spirit of which the Japanese are so fond—and thousands of boxes of biscuits, prepared by the best confectioners in the metropolis. Her Majesty the Empress, with the Ladies of her Court, was night and day employed in making bandages; in putting up native delicacies, and despatching them to the grateful troops afield. And when the wounded began to be brought to Hiroshima, the first to visit them was the Emperor, followed by his Imperial Spouse. He spoke directly to the wounded, in defiance of the pre-conceived and effete rules of Court etiquette; cheered and consoled those whose sufferings were great: while the Empress shed tears of noble grief over those whose injuries were mortal and whose life was fast ebbing away. To the convalescents H. M. the Emperor sent the Imperial Band, to wile away the weary hours with strains of sweet or martial music. Those of general rank always had the honour of an Imperial audience prior to their departure for the seat of war, during the course of which words of heartfelt encouragement and lofty admonition always were addressed to them. Banquets were spread for the officers about to take ship, and all above the rank of Sub-lieutenant were allowed to sit and eat in the august presence of their revered Sovereign. When the war-

ships-returned to Ujina bringing back officers and soldiers from the seat of war, His Majesty invariably sent messengers to convey the Imperial thanks for their services, and often these messengers bore gifts of value.

And so it came that one and all, officers as well as men, were profoundly touched by, and inexpressibly grateful for, the Imperial benevolence. Here was, indeed, a Sovereign for whom it was not hard to die! So each one was ever ready to sacrifice even life itself in the service of his Emperor and his country. It had been expected that the severe Manchurian winter would effectually check the movements of the Japanese troops: that their physique would not stand exposure to the rigour of a semi-arctic climate, after the mild winters and soft breezes of their own sweet land. But, imbued with such a spirit and knowing themselves fighting for such a lord and in such a cause, the men never faltered. The enthusiasm of grateful loyalty, of ardent patriotism, defied the bitter cold, the drifting snow and icy storms. The words "For the Emperor!" "For our Country!" ever gave new strength, obliterated fatigue and made the warriors invincible. On one occasion, in January (1895), a reconnoitring party had had a long march and been for hours in the snow, while a piercing wind seemed to freeze the very marrow in their bones. Fainting with fatigue and numb and drowsy with cold, some one began to call out "For the Emperor!" The words acted like an elixir: cold and fatigue, hunger and exposure, were at once and completely forgotten. With renewed vigour they resumed their toilsome march, acquitted themselves of their task, and rejoined their comrades in safety.

Instances of like nature occurred every day. The dying whispered with their last breath: "Long live the Emperor!" The wounded rejoiced in their honourable scars, won in so august a cause, for so dear, so great a Lord. And thus it was that the soldiers and sailors of Japan carried all before them. So well may Japanese essayists and poets claim that "all these triumphs are due to the virtues, the exalted spirit, of His Majesty the Emperor."

---

## CHAPTER XXV.

### HEAD QUARTERS.

#### I.—IMPERIAL HEAD QUALTERS.

IMMEDIATELY after the declaration of war with China, the Imperial Head Quarters (*Dai Hon-ei*) of both services were established within the Imperial Palace at Tōkyō. H. M. the Emperor, as Commander-in-chief of both Army and Navy, was daily present at the deliberations of the Chiefs of Department, and personally attended to the administration of everything connected with the prosecution of the War.



H. I. H. PRINCE ARISUGAWA,  
CHIEF OF THE GENERAL STAFF.

With regard to the official management at Head Quarters, the highest officer was the Chief or President of the General Staff, H. I. H. Marshal Prince Arisugawa Taruhito, under whom was a large and complete staff of military and naval men. Most unfortunately His Imperial Highness died before the War was over, on January 24th, 1895. The place of the late Prince was then taken by H. I. H. Marshal Prince Komatsu

Akihito. The Staff Officers at Head Quarters were Lieut.-General Kawakami Sōroku, for the Army; and Vice-Admiral

Kabayama Sukeki, for the Navy. Under those two chiefs were a number of officers of lesser rank, ranging from Colonel to Sub-Lieutenant. Head Quarters moreover included the Bureau of Superintendence of the Commissariat; the Bureau of Communications; the Chief Bureau of Military and Naval Sanitation; and the Chief Bureau of Field Superintendence. The Heads of these various Bureaux were,—

(1) Major-General Tera-uchi, Chief of Transport and Communications;

(2) Chief Army Inspector Noda, Chief of Field Superintendence;

(3) Chief Surgeon General Ishiguro, Chief of Military and Naval Sanitation;

(4) Lieut.-General Kawakami, Chief of the Bureau of Superintendence of the Commissariat (in addition to his other duties).

Besides the Heads of the Bureaux there were a number of Military and Naval Chamberlains and officers engaged in the Military and Naval Secret Service Bureau. Major-General Okazawa Sei was the Chief of both services. The Chief of all the officers at Head Quarters (at first H. I. H. Arisugawa Taruhito and thereafter H. I. H. Komatsu Akihito) also controlled the Adjutants' Department and the Department or Bureau of General Superintendence. The former Department discharged, with the exception of the conduct of the War, all matters connected with the administration of Staff Officers; while the latter was entrusted with the management of the gendarmierie, the troops connected with the transport service, the Sanitary Corps, the preparation of encampments and bivouacs, and the business supplying all things necessary to make the great work run on smoothly.



ADMIRAL COUNT SAIGO.



Marshal Count Ōyama Iwao, Minister of State for War, was frequently present at the deliberations and councils of the various Heads. After the Marshal had gone to the seat of the War, as Commander-in-chief of the Second Expeditionary Army, his place was, for a short time, taken by Admiral Count Saigō Tsugumichi, Minister of State for the Navy. Admiral Saigō was, in his turn, succeeded by Marshal Yamagata Aritomo. While the Marshal was still in Japan, he frequently attended the council in company with Admiral Saigō.

But as the number of troops was constantly on the increase, all of these passing through Hiroshima on their way to Ujina, where they embarked, it was deemed advisable to remove Head Quarters to the southern city. This was done about the middle of September, 1894, the organisation of Head Quarters remaining the same.

Towards the beginning of April, when peace was definitely restored between the two belligerent Empires, Head Quarters were removed to Kyōto. When the troops began to return from the front, Head Quarters were once again established in the Imperial Palace in Tōkyō. On April 1st, Head Quarters were finally disestablished.

---

## II.—HEAD QUARTERS IN CHINA.

*(Generalissimo's Department.)*

THE growth of the Armies in China kept steady pace with the development of the War, and, upon the close of the first term,—the Kinchow Peninsula, all Eastern and Central Manchuria, and Wei-hai-wei being in possession of the Japanese—a Generalissimo's Department was established, in March, 1895. This Department had immediate control of the whole Army and Navy in active service. As Generalissimo was selected H. I. H. Komatsu Akihito, then Chief of Staff of Head Quarters at Hiroshima and President of the Council. His Imperial Highness was instructed to take one part of the whole Head Quarters organisa-

tion at Hiroshima and establish a similar Department in the occupied territory. Leaving Ujina in the middle of April, the Generalissimo established himself at Port Arthur, there assuming chief command of the whole Army and Navy. The principal officers in these second Head Quarters were,

(1) Lieut.-General Kawakami, Chief of Staff of the Army and Incumbent of other offices ;

(2) Vice-Admiral Kabayama, Chief of Staff of the Navy ;

(3) Major-General Tera-uchi, Chief Superintendent of Communications and Transport ;

(4) Surgeon General Ishiguro, Chief of Military Sanitation ;

(5) Noda, Chief of Field Superintendence.

It will be seen from the above that the organisation was the same with that of Principal Head Quarters at the first establishment. The Generalissimo's Department was afterwards abolished on May 18th, all returning to the Principal Head Quarters at Kyōto.

The officers composing the Generalissimo's Department left Hiroshima on April 13th. On this day, at 2.30 p.m., H. I. H. Marshal Prince Akihito, accompanied by Lieut.-General Kawakami and Colonel Ofu, started from Hiroshima and shortly afterwards reached the temporary garrison at Ujina, where they were to embark. H. M. the Emperor, Commander-in-Chief, being concerned for the welfare of the Prince and the success of the expedition, sent Chamberlain Hirobata with a farewell message and to make inquiries. A little while before the Prince's arrival at Ujina, the Chiefs of Departments and Bureaux and other high



H. I. H. PRINCE KOMATSU,  
CHIEF OF THE GENERAL STAFF.

military and naval officers,—including Marshal Yamagata; Admiral Saigō; Count Matsukata, Minister of State for Finance; Major-General Kodama; Division Commander Yamazawa; Marquis Nabeshima; the Governor of Hiroshima—as well as many civilians of high rank, went to the Ujina barracks to welcome the distinguished and imperial officer. Military bands, drawn up along the beach, discoursed stirring martial music, and the whole seaport was in gala. A cold collation was served on the Prince's reaching the barracks, and rousing cheers given for H. M. the Emperor, the Empire, and the success of the expedition. A launch was waiting for the Prince at the jetty, on the right side of which were arranged those who had come to bid the Generalissimo farewell. More than ten transports, with the *Ikai Maru*, on board of which His Imperial Highness was to travel, carried the personale of the expedition, and these vessels were convoyed by the *Chiyoda*, *Izumi* and *Tatsuta*, all the transports and men-of-war being gaily decorated with bunting. It was a splendid sight. His Imperial Highness had permitted the Staff Officers of high rank to travel with him on the same vessel; and when the Prince and his immediate followers left the jetty an imperial salute was fired by all the men-of-war in the port. The Generalissimo and officers belonging to the new Head Quarters started for the *Ikai Maru*. the *Dai-ni*\* *Kure Maru* taking them from the jetty at just 4.40 p. m. As the Prince and his suite boarded the *Ikai Maru* another imperial salute was fired, while those officers who had already gone on board the *Ikai Maru* respectfully welcomed the Generalissimo. The Commander of every man-of-war in the harbour then paid a farewell visit to His Imperial Highness; and at 5 p. m., the Prince, after giving his final messages to Marshal Yamagata and Admiral Saigō, ordered the fleet to start.

The officers in the suite of the Prince were all such as hard connection with the new Department. These were Vice-Admiral Kabayama; Lieut.-General Kawakami; Major-Generals Tera-uchi and Tsuchiya; Colonel Ofu; Naval Captains Kakuda and Ishu-ii; Lieut.-Colonel of Artillery Murata; Infantry Lieut.-Colonel Tōjō; Engineer Lieut.-Colonel Watanabè; Lieut.-Colonel Shiba, of the

---

\* *Dai-ni* means "Second."

Artillery; Engineer Major Fukuhara; Lieut.-Commander Nakao; Captains Yamagata, Yoshimura, Utsunomiya, Oba, Osawa and Kurozawa; Naval Captains Matsumoto, Saegi and Suzuki; Chief Surgeon General Ishiguro; Chief of Field Superintendence Noda; First-class Surgeon Ochi-ai; Military Record Compiler Yokoi; and Secretary Yugawa of the Communications Bureau. As the fleet left the harbour, the *Chiyoda* led, followed by the *Ikai Maru*. Then came the *Izumi* and *Tatsuta*. At 7 o'clock the next morning they arrived at Bakan (Shimonoseki). Mr. Suematsu Kenchō, President of the Legislative Bureau, was already at Shimonoseki, and, on the arrival of the fleet, went with Vice-Admiral Kabayama on board the *Ikai Maru* and thereafter remained in the suite of His Imperial Highness. Port Arthur was reached early in the morning of April 18th.

---

## CHAPTER XXVI.

### THE MEDICAL STAFF AND ITS WORK.

#### I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

So soon as the Tonghak Rebellion in Korea had reached such proportions that apprehensions were entertained for the



CHIEF SURGEON GENERAL  
DR. ISHIGURO.

safety of Japanese citizens and their property in the Peninsula, the Government resolved, on June 4th, to send thither a Mixed Brigade in order to supply the needed protection. On June 5th Head Quarters were established, and these included a Chief Field Medical Department, to which Dr. Ishiouro Chû-toku was appointed as Chief Military Surgeon. The Department or Bureau included one surgeon, one medical officer, and one clerk. On this same day, the Ninth Brigade of Infantry, which was to be included in the Mixed

Brigade, set out, a competent medical staff following. The Sanitary Corps was also brought into order, and all things appertaining to the health of the soldiers promptly put into working action. The Medical and Sanitary Corps had, before setting out, an address delivered them by Chief Surgeon Ishiguro, wherein their manifold duties were ably explained and emphasized.

“When a military expedition is sent abroad,” said he, “the medical staff is charged with a duty far more important than ordinary. The troops also look to us with a much greater sense of our necessity. So now you, gentlemen, who have devoted your lives to this profession, ought to have a thorough appreciation of your responsibility and its glory. You have had practical experience in the South-western Rebellion and the Formosan War; you have had careful training for ten years; now let us put the result of our accumulated experience into practice. In treating the sick and wounded new and most dextrous curative methods have been discovered. It now remains for you to leave a model record for the next generation, while you are in service abroad: whether it be during the transporting of the troops across the seas or while our brave soldiers are in actual conflict. Let the medical military record of 1894–1895 shine to all future time!” Besides this the Surgeon General gave minute instructions with regard to diet, clothing, lodging, sickness, what each one should take, and some dozen other matters. A Medical Corps was added to the surgeons belonging to the Brigade, then about to start. In command of this Corps was a Captain, one Lieutenant and one Sub-Lieutenant. The Corps itself consisted of 8 surgeons, one medical officer, one paymaster, 39 non-commissioned officers and sanitary men, 71 privates, 290 stretcher bearers, these having 51 horses, 2 chests of medicals and 2 tents. An Ambulance Corps was also included, consisting of one Chief Director (a military surgeon of the second class), and the following Staff:—

Surgeons	5
Medical Officer	1
Paymaster	1
Non-commissioned officers and rank and file	50
Other soldiers	50
This Corps took with them,	
Horses	44
Medicine chests	12
Tents	4

Altogether the Ambulance Corps was able to accommodate a maximum of 200 patients at one time. Included with the actual fighting body were the Medical Corps and a Field Lazaret belong-

ing to it. In the Commissariat were the Reserve Medical Corps, a Corps whose duty was to look after the transport of sick men, and a Reserve Medical Department. The Medical Corps of each Division thereafter sent to the scene of the war, was constituted in the above explained manner. The hospital attached to each Division, the staff of which invariably set out with the Division itself, was made a garrison or military hospital, to which patients were sent in from the field lazaret. The chief military hospital was near the Commissariat Head-quarters at Hiroshima. Sick or wounded men sent back from Korea or China were first received here and after sent on to some other Divisional Hospital for final convalescence. The number of patients admitted to the Hiroshima Hospital from July 8th, 1894 to September 9th, 1896, twenty-two months in all, reached the great total of 73,000. During this period H. M. the Empress once paid a special visit to the Hospital, and personally inquired of the patients as to their condition, to the latter's unbounded gratification. Upon every divisional hospital becoming exceedingly busy, Surgeon-General Ishiguro asked the Japan Red Cross Society to send a number of workers to these places. The Red Cross was not slow in replying to this appeal and sent forward the following large body :

Physicians	42
Manager	1
Druggists	10
Male Nurses	8
Female Nurses	381
Total	<hr/> 442

Besides doing this, the Red Cross Society sent out directly, to the scene of the war, 97 physicians and 290 nurses, these being particularly engaged in looking after the sick and wounded during transportation from one place to another or back to Japan. The Red Cross therefore supplied altogether 829 skilled doctors and nurses : an excellent record.

In the carrying of the wounded from the battle-field back to Japan, ordinary transports or other special vessels were employed, in accordance with the severity of the injuries sustained by the sufferers. Certain vessels were supplied with special surgeons

and medical attendants. Of actual "hospital-ships" there were five or six only. On each of these were—

- 1 Director,
- 2-6 Physicians,
- 1 Medical Officer,

and a varying number of non-commissioned officers and privates belonging to the Sanitary Corps. The ships were further supplied with all sorts of surgical instruments and medical materials; so that they not only served as transports but as actual hospitals. In case of necessity any patient could receive proper treatment on board, and for this purpose the vessels could go to any port whatever. In each harbour visited by these ships there were temporary hospitals to receive patients sent from the front and waiting to be conveyed elsewhere. Here they occasionally waited for some time and received skilful medical treatment before going on to any of the larger garrison hospitals. These were, therefore, sanitary stations midway between the hospital ships and the garrison hospitals, and were under the control of the surgeons belonging to the harbour staff.

The Commissariat line in Korea extended for 294 miles, viz. from the landing-place of the troops on Korean soil to the confines of Manchuria proper. At several points along this long line were hospital stations for those whose wounds were of such a nature as to forbid their conveyance to a distance. The principal of these stations were at Wiju, Yongchun, Chang-jam, Phyöng-yang, Yongshan, Tehku, Chemulpho, Fusan and Kuinpho in Korea; and Funghwang-ching (Antung Province), Haiching, Taku-shan, and Siuyen-ching in China. The roads in both Korea and China being very bad and traversing an irregular and mountainous country, carts or wagons could be used in exceptional cases only, so that the conveying of sick and wounded from one place to another was a most difficult task. Moreover, during the campaign in Korea the heat was excessive. There were neither shade-trees nor springs along the road-sides, and owing to the lazy, in active nature of the Korean coolies it was next to impossible to bring up those who had fallen behind. For these reasons so many hospitals or sanitary stations had to be established along the line of the Commissariat: a vast and most arduous undertaking.



The Japanese Armies remained from first to last for fully two years in unhealthy, often fever-ridden, regions. Yet those who fell victims to epidemics or endemic diseases, were unexpectedly few in number. Among the chief disorders were dysentery, of which 5381 men sickened; cholera, with 1592 victims; and abdominal typhus, with 1118 cases. Cholera raged particularly in and about Kinchow, while dysentery was prevalent in Korea. Abdominal typhus was more or less prevalent everywhere.

With regard to the number of those killed or wounded in battle, or of those who subsequently died of their injuries, statistics are still being compiled. At all events there were no less than ten battles in which the Japanese lost above 100 in killed. The most sanguinary field was that of Phyöngyang. Here the battle raged for 22 hours, *i. e.* from 5 a.m. of September 15th to 4 p. m. of the 16th. The total loss in killed was 698. Then come the fiercely-contested fields of Kangwasae and Newchwang. The former lasted four hours only: from 1.30 p.m. to 4 p.m. of December 16th. Yet there were no less than 409 killed or wounded in this short space of time. At Newchwang, including the street-fighting, the battle continued from 10.55 a.m. of March 4th to 8 a.m. of the following day. Here 384 were either killed or wounded.

The Chinese used fully ten different kinds of rifles. Some were old fire-locks, relics of the last century; while others were light Mauser rifles of recent and excellent construction. Between these two limits were to be found eight or more different types, presenting a panorama of the history of fire-arms for the last two centuries. What kind of wounds the bullets of these clumsy weapons inflicted, is better imagined than described.

Throughout the War there was no battle or engagement in which the Japanese failed to render assistance to the Chinese wounded. This was most striking at Phyöngyang and Newchwang. In the former battle only two of the Japanese field lazarets were able to come up in time, as their progress had been obstructed by the overflow of the river. These two were thus exceptionally busy and seemed crowded to the utmost, yet they made room for the hundreds of Chinese wounded. And in treating the enemy's injured, both here and elsewhere, the strictest impartiality was observed. Chinese officers were, in accordance

with their rank, given the same treatment as that accorded to Japanese officers of like rank. The broad humanitarian rules laid down by the famous Geneva Convention were followed throughout by the Japanese ; so a passing mention of the fact is all that is necessary. The Chinese, on the other hand, exhibited the crassest ignorance of civilised warfare, and were supremely ungrateful for the kindness shown them. Knowing little or nothing of the real intentions of their conquerors, they frequently refused to be medically treated, and were not only discourteous in



SCENE IN THE COURTYARD OF A COMMISSARIAT (GARRISON) HOSPITAL ATTACHED TO THE SECOND ARMY CORPS.

their behaviour but even made frequent attacks on the Japanese Sanitary Corps and field lazarets. The Chinese wounded sent over to Japan and treated in the hospitals there were visited by H. M. the Empress, questioned as to their condition by this great lady, and nursed by the highest ladies in the land. After peace had been restored, the Chinese convalescents were sent back, together with the other Chinese prisoners, to their native land, two Japanese surgeons attending them until the last moment. Still more : when H. M. the Empress made gifts of artificial limbs

to those Japanese who had had arms, legs or feet amputated in consequence of their wounds, similar presents were given to nine Chinese.

Throughout the campaign the Japanese troops acted with the utmost kindness and honesty to the natives of the occupied or conquered territory. There was never any looting nor the least suspicion of tyrannical or overbearing conduct. The troops always paid the full market-price of whatever they bought. And so it not strange that the natives not only speedily became reconciled to the new régime but even loudly expressed their regret when the troops were ultimately withdrawn. The Japanese surgeons, with true philanthropy, did not limit their ministrations to the forces, but in both Korea and Manchuria treated sick natives in their own homes and without thought of reward. Several hospitals were established for this purposes, and everywhere medical service was cheerfully rendered for the sake of sweet charity. A little couplet that was heard everywhere during the war-months, gives an insight into the popular feeling :—

“The most fearful thing under Heaven is the yellow cap ;

The most venerable thing under Heaven is the green cap”—  
in allusion to the fact that the soldiers wore two broad yellow stripes about their forage caps, while the members of the Medical Corps had green stripes.

Towards the latter third of the month of October, 1894, the Japanese were in possession of both sides of the River Yalu, the enemy having been driven back of the Manchurian frontier. The season now began to grow intensely cold, quite beyond anything to which the Japanese had hitherto been accustomed. From this time on the troops had to do all their work and fighting in the deep snow, while they marched along often precipitous and always icy roads. Before the winter season fairly set in, Chief Surgeon General Ishiguro gave minute directions regarding the preservation of the health of the forces during the cold months. Each surgeon or member of the Sanitary Corps was provided with written instructions relating to the treatment of frost-bite, the way in which frozen liquid medicines should be made serviceable, the style of clothing to be adopted, and the rescue of those on the point of freezing to death. Those who went through the Man-

churian campaign say that the cold was beyond description by either pen or tongue. Foreign correspondents who followed the march of the victorious Armies narrate that the ink would freeze in their pens as they wrote. The report of the Chief Surgeon of the Third Division, writing from Haiching in January, 1895, is very interesting reading in this connection. He says that the average temperature at Haiching during this midwinter month was  $8.3^{\circ}$  below freezing-point ( $25.7^{\circ}$  Fahrenheit). The lowest point reached was  $+2^{\circ}$  Fahrenheit, or  $30^{\circ}$  below freezing. In Kangwasae, for example, the numerous deaths among the Japanese troops were caused quite as much by the intense cold as the bullets of the enemy. Altogether the troops suffered the utmost hardships in Manchuria; and that despite all this they went on, without faltering, from victory to victory, is greatly to their honour and to the unending credit of the Medical Corps.

We cannot close this brief record without reference to the general health of the victorious Armies. In January of 1895 cholera broke out at Talien and on board the transports. For this reason, strict investigations were made into the sanitary condition of the forces. Sanitary Committees were established at Talien, Port Arthur and Yingkow, and these made stringent rules for the two services, disinfection being everywhere insisted upon. A temporary Sanitary Department was specially established for the soldiers afield; while in Japan besides the ordinary disinfecting stations other stations were opened in all important harbours. The principal disinfecting station was on Ni Island. Here an average of 6000 men were disinfected daily. Altogether 150,000 men were subjected to disinfection, including soldiers and coolies. Everything coming from the infected ports was treated in like fashion: instruments, ships and all, particularly clothing and baggage. Every soldier's kit was covered with disinfectants or subjected to so great a degree of heat as to kill the disease-germs. And so, despite the prevalence of epidemics abroad, the diseases did not find their way to Japan.

---

## II.—VOLUNTEER LADY NURSES.

WE have already narrated the excellent manner in which the Japanese residents in Chemulpho aided the military operations of their country's troops in Korea. It was not, however, the men only who lent their willing aid; the Japanese ladies in the port also did good service as volunteer nurses, winning golden opinions for themselves. At first three ladies—Mesdames Mitsui Taka, Kawabara Asa and Uchiyama Ishi—enrolled themselves as nurses in the Garrison Hospital at Manlichang, close by the capital Seoul. The need of such nurses was very greatly felt at the time; and these three ladies were indefatigable in administering to the wants of the wounded. On September 3rd, 1894, they went on to the Garrison Hospital in Chemulpho, taking a number of wounded men with them. And there they continued to work until the 25th of the same month, to the outspoken gratitude of the sufferers.

Mesdames Satō Kotobuki, Kojima Hama, Takahashi Ren and Shimada Fuji also served in the Manlichang Garrison Hospital,—from August 25th to September 25th. At the time of the fighting at Söngwan and Asan the hospital was filled with patients, so that there was no room to receive new-comers. So these brave ladies marched to the field lazarets at the above-named places and there continued to work with matchless fidelity; nursing the sick and wounded; preparing medicines and cooking food; mending clothing; even acting as washerwomen, and in all quite regardless of their own personal discomfort and fatigue. It is largely owing to their excellent nursing that so large a percentage of the wounded promptly became convalescent.

---

## CHAPTER XXVII.

---

### THE FIELD POST.

#### I.—THE FIELD POSTAL AND SAVINGS BANK SERVICE.

IMMEDIATELY after the outbreak of the War, a Field Postal and Savings Bank Service was established under the supervision of the *Étappe* or Commissariat Department. The manner in which the service was established and carried on to a successful issue, is unique in the history of the Orient, and for this reason, if for no other, the service deserves a special chapter. The territory covered by the service was of ever-increasing magnitude; yet the number of men engaged in the work was very limited, owing to the rules affecting the work done in the rear or wake of the victorious armies. Everything was done in the most methodical and yet diligent manner. There was no hitch throughout, and the service proved an inestimable boon to the military and naval forces, keeping them in constant touch with their friends and relatives in the homeland.

---

#### II.—CONNECTION BETWEEN THE DOMESTIC AND FIELD POSTAL SERVICES.

WITH the establishment of the Field Post, the first necessity was to bring about a connection with the Domestic Postal Service, in order that everything might run smoothly. The next step was to inaugurate a Field Parcel Post, which should be as simple and

convenient as possible. And so at length the Official Field Postal Service Department was established, under the direct supervision of the Staff at Head-Quarters. The Head of the new office was Secretary Yugawa Kwankichi, of the Department of Communications. After drawing up regulations for the keeping of good working order in both services, the Field Post was made dependent upon the orders of the Department of Communications.



MR. YUGAWA KWANKICHI.

As direct despatching offices, the post offices of Hiroshima and Shimonoseki were selected in the first instance, all parcels intended for the front having to pass through one of these two. After the Japanese had occupied the Pescadores, the Saseho post office was added to the list. On the other hand, there was no definite terminus for either letters or parcels: the Army and Navy being constantly on the move. The choice of stations on the field was therefore left to the Head of the Department. The work was specially difficult in the case of

the Navy, for the men-of-war were ever on the move, here to-day and there to-morrow. At the time, moreover, the waters about Korea and Northern China were not yet free from the presence of the hostile fleet. For the sake of safety, therefore, parcels had to be sent first to Fusan and thence over-land in a roundabout fashion. The anxiety and many duties of the postal agents can be better imagined than described. At the beginning of hostilities, letters and parcels sent from Hiroshima and Shimonoseki were forwarded to Chemulpho and Fusan. After the taking of Phyöng-yang and the repulse of the Chinese by the first Expeditionary Army, as well as the great victory at sea off Haiyang Island, much of the elements of risk and difficulty was removed. Postal matter for the troops between Seoul and Fusan was sent chiefly *via* Fusan; while that intended for the forces in Chemulpho, Seoul

and Phyöngyang passed through Chemulpho and Ul-ön-tong safely and expeditiously. After taking possession of Kiulien-ching, Funghwang-ching and Antung, a new direction for the transmittal of postal matter had to be decided upon. Had all letters, etc., intended for the region between Phyöngyang and the Yalu been forwarded *viâ* Ul-ön-tong, much inconvenience would have been experienced with the overland transport. Kuinpho was therefore selected as the office for the collection and transmission of all postal matter. But now the winter season set in and the harbours of Kuimpho and Ul-ön-tong began to freeze over; and so, though there was no longer anything to be apprehended from the enemy, the Field Postal Service was greatly hindered by this severe weather and everything had once again to be sent overland from Chemulpho, until the days grew milder. Long before that time came around the Second Army had landed in the Kinchow Peninsula, Port Arthur had fallen and the Japanese Fleet was riding in the deep waters of that great harbour. Then Talien was made the chief despatching and distributing office, close by the place where the Second Expeditionary Army had landed. By this time the First Army Corps had already crossed the Motien Pass. The line of the Field Post was therefore one of great length, and communications with the extreme front were almost entirely cut off, owing to the extreme cold and frozen roads. Letters and parcels were collected at Hwayang-kau, but nothing could be forwarded to the First Army men from this point. Finally, when the route between Taku-shan and Talien was opened and the ice in the harbour of Ul-ön-tong melted, the line of postal communication was completed in its entirety.

When in January and February of 1895, the Second Army in combination with the Fleet made the memorable attack on Wei-hai-wei, all postal matter intended for that Army went direct to Yingching Bay; while that for the Fleet was transmitted in the first instance to Talien and thence forwarded direct, as at the time there was no regular service to or from Port Arthur. In the meanwhile the First Army had taken Siuyen-ching, Tomuh-ching and Haiching, the latter victory being followed immediately by the capture of Wei-hai-wei and the surrender of the Peiyang Squadron.

The gate to the Gulf of Pêchili was herewith in Japanese



possession; yet the enemy at Newchwang and Yingkow still kept up a stubborn fight. And for this reason all postal matter for the First Army in or about Haiching and Kaiping, had to be sent the long distance overland from Talien and Port Arthur. So soon, however, as the longshore ice had melted, the Japanese mail steamers were able to enter any port on the Korean littoral or that of the Liaotung Peninsula; and at each port a postal receiving office was established. All letters, etc., going to the first Army were forwarded *viâ* Talien and Takushan. Communication became much easier and more rapid, and from this time on everything went very smoothly. The full strength of the Japanese Armies being concentrated at Newchwang, Yingkow and Tienchwangtai, letters and parcels for these regions were forwarded to Yingkow *viâ* Port Arthur and Talien.

On the removal of the Head Quarters of the forces in China to Port Arthur, the Chief Bureau of the Field Postal Service went thither. The connection between the Field Post and the Imperial Japanese Post at home became henceforth more regular and better cared for. And this was very necessary at the time, for the Field Postal Service had never been so busy nor had so many demands made upon it.

After the Treaty of Peace was concluded, and Head Quarters disestablished at Port Arthur, a part of the Japanese Armies (including the Imperial Body-guard), went to Formosa, which China had ceded to Japan. The Chief Office of the Field Postal Service was thereupon opened at Keelung, the line afterwards running to Tamsui and Takow.

Although in consequence of certain provisions in the Treaty of Peace the larger portion of the troops was withdrawn from Liaotung and Korea, only small local garrisons being left, the territory covered by the Field Postal Service remained much the same as before: connecting the home offices with Wönsan, Fusan, Chemulpho, Ul-ön-tong, Takushan, Talien-wan, Port Arthur, Wei-hai-wei, and Yingkow. The service was kept up until the last garrison had been withdrawn from Shinking (Manchuria) and the Kinchow or Liaotung Peninsula. The Wei-hai-wei line, however, remained much longer in activity, and is still in operation at the time of writing.

## III.—THE WORKERS OF THE FIELD POST.

THE first thing to be done in establishing the Field Postal Service, was to unite it with the Home Post and see that the communication with the Central Department was kept up. The regulations bearing upon this connection of the two Services were drawn up by Mr. Yugawa, Chief of the Field Postal Bureau; while their enforcement was looked after by the Chief of the Military Post. As Chief Secretaries of the Military Post were installed Mr. Hagiwara Yoshinori (for the First Army), a Secretary (*kōtō-kan*) of the Department of Communications, and Professor Tanaka Sadakichi (for the Second Army), one of the instructors of the Postal and Telegraphic School at Tōkyō. The post office clerks, etc., 129 in number, were selected from among the *hannin* (third grade) officials of the Department of Communications; while 194 postmen or carriers were chosen from among those on duty at home. After the cession of Formosa, one Chief Director; 2 Inspectors; 128 postal clerks; and 235 carriers were sent to that island.

Thus the total personale of the Field Post Service during the War and the tranquillization of Formosa, was:—

First Director of Posts	1
Chief Directors	3
Inspectors	12
Postal Clerks	257
Carriers	429
Total	<u>702</u>

## IV.—THE DISTANCES TRAVERSED.

THE number of miles traversed or covered by the postal lines connected with the Field Postal Service, were:—

In Korea	610 miles;
In the Liaotung Peninsula	708 miles;

In Formosa	264 miles ;
In Formosa (by rail)	37 miles ;
Total	<u>1619 miles.</u>

---

V.—THE POST OFFICE.

OF post-offices there were 74 in all, distributed as follow :—

In Korea	9
In the Liaotung Peninsula	35
In Formosa and the Pescadores	30
Total	<u>74</u>

During the transportation of the Second Army, an unprecedented step was taken in opening a floating post-office on board the Nippon Yûsen Kwaisha's s. s. *Nagato Maru*.

The carrying of postal matter was done principally by qualified postmen, but when—as often happened—there was a lack of trained men, coolies were made do this important duty. Where the roads were good or at all convenient, carts pulled by either horses or oxen were employed. But as most of the roads in Korea, China and Formosa were mere paths and unfit for vehicles, this mode of conveyance was rarely possible. The post-offices on the Korean and Liaotung littorals kept up communication with each other by means of mail steamers. In Formosa only was there a short railway line of 37 miles.

The utmost skill was employed in simplifying and hastening the methods of collecting and distributing postal matter, letters, etc.; those forwarded to or from one detachment being always brought together in the same place. Yet as the Armies were constantly on the move, great inconvenience was frequently experienced.

The total amount of postal matter received or sent out by the various post-offices, was as follows—

Received	5,332,686
Distributed	7,066,852

The number of letters, parcels, etc., passing through the hands of each postal official, averaged 48,247.

With regard to the exchange and postal savings bank services, the amount of money exchanged was 6,053,987 *yen* and 71 *sen*; while the amount deposited in the savings banks was no less than 672,064 *yen*, 16 *sen* and 7 *rin*. These figures show how great a convenience the two services proved to the Armies afield. Being moreover entrusted with the handling of the funds used for the Armies and Fleet, we find that the Field Postal Service handled altogether six million *yen* in this way. There is no need to further emphasize the importance and excellence of the Field Post, or the skill with which the Service was conducted. It proved in every direction a boon.

---

•

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

---

### THE JAPAN STEAMSHIP COMPANY.

#### I.—THE *NIPPON YŪSEN KAISHA* AND THE WAR.

No history of the War could be called complete or even satisfactory without reference to the great part played in this memorable conflict by the *Nippon Yūsen Kabushiki Kaisha* or "Japan Mail Steamship Company." This remarkable Company originated in an amalgamation of the older *Mitsubishi Kaisha* and *Kyōdō Unyu Kaisha*. The former was established by the late Mr. Iwasaki Yatarō, one of Japan's wealthiest and most progressive citizens, and did good service in the Formosan Expedition of 1874 and the Satsuma or South-western Rebellion (1877). The business of the Company rapidly growing, from short voyages between the principal Japanese ports the steamers began to ply as far south as Shanghai, or north as Vladivostock. Success followed the new ventures, prosperity attending the Company with the steadily growing trade of Japan. Soon it was seen that the Company's fleet, though numerous, could not keep pace with the country's commercial needs; and so, in 1882, another Company was founded, under the style of the *Kyōdō Unyu Kaisha* ("Union Steam Navigation Company"). Under subsidy from the Government, the *Kyōdō Unyu* grew apace, the ships being constructed with a view to serve as cruisers or military transports in case of need.

The two Companies were now rivals, each doing everything possible to attract the good will of the public. New ships were built abroad, rates cut down to a minimum, especially in the passenger-traffic, and the number of ports visited gradually

increased until, in 1885, the disadvantages of this ruinous competition grew too apparent, and a combination was, after much discussion, determined upon. The capitals of the two Companies were made a joint concern, and in October, 1885, the *Nippon Yūsen Kaisha* was established under most favourable auspices for future success.

The beneficial results accruing from this combination were at once apparent. The carrying-trade increased rather than fell off, and the Company's vessels were sent regularly to Hongkong, Manila, then to Bombay, and finally the 7000 miles' voyage to Australia. We may note, in passing, that a regular monthly service to Great Britain, by way of the Canal, was begun in March of the present year and a trans-Pacific monthly service, to Seattle, in July. The Bombay route was opened in 1893, when the Company entered the lists in competition with the Peninsular and Oriental Company. The results have been eminently satisfactory. In 1894 when the Tonghak Rebellion broke out in Korea and it became necessary to send troops to the "still-vexed" Peninsula, the then President, the late Mr. Yoshikawa Taijirō, in the Company and Mr. Kondō Rempei, then Vice President, did much to encourage the work, and the Company supplied the Government with all the necessary transports and still managed to keep up the coast-wise voyages. With the outbreak of the war between the two Empires, the Company found that its large fleet was still too small. Ships were bought up, some of the most famous clippers of the China tea-fleet entering the Company's service; while others well known for their speed and carrying capacity, were chartered. In this way the shipping of the tens of thousands of soldiers to Korea and Manchuria was accomplished without hitch and without loss of time, the regular services being still kept up, continuously. This is certainly a most creditable showing, and high testimony in behalf of the Company's patriotic ardor.

According to statistics under date of September 30th, 1895, the Company possessed sixty-six steamships and other vessels, with a tonnage of 135,755 tons.\* Of these eleven, of 34,558\* tons in all, were the vessels entrusted to the Company for management by the Government. Besides the above, there were 24 smaller

---

\* Fractions of a ton omitted.

vessels, amounting to 655 tons,\* and four store-ships of a total tonnage of 1079.\* In the Company's offices on shore there were 379 employés, while 757 others were afloat. Since June, 1894, the Company had purchased 22 steamers, 21 of which were above 2000 tons register. From these facts can be understood how greatly the Company's trade was expanded during and immediately after the War.

The names of the chief officials of this truly great concern are as follow :—

President and Managing Director, Kondō Rempei; Vice-President and Managing Director, Katō Masayoshi.

BOARD OF DIRECTORS.

Sonoda Kōkichi      Shōda Higorō  
Nakamigawa Hikojirō  
Shibusawa Ei-ichi  
Asada Masabumi  
Morioka Masazumi.

AUDITORS.

Abe Taizō      Arishima Takeshi

To those unacquainted with names in Japan, it may be interesting to note that the above list includes some of the largest capitalists and wealthiest business-men in the Empire.



MR. KONDŌ REMPEI

II.—THE FIRST CALL FOR TRANSPORTS.

IT was on June 4th, 1894, or more than seven weeks before the actual outbreak of hostilities, that the Government directed the Company to furnish, without loss of time, ten ships for transport duty. The Directors of the Company received the order and immediately set to work, with prudence as well as enthusiasm. The necessary ships should, they affirmed, be at the port of Ujina

\* Fractions of a ton omitted.

by the specified date. It was decided that five steamers should be withdrawn from those plying along the eastern coast; three from those visiting ports on the western littoral; and the remaining two taken from the extra vessels. Telegrams were at once despatched to the captains of the steamers in question, with orders to land passengers and discharge freight at the nearest port; to take in sufficient coal and provisions for ten days; and then to rendezvous at the appointed port of Ujina. Some of the vessels called for were more than 1000 miles away from Ujina at the time the messages were despatched; yet not only were the orders carried out to the letter but the vessels foregathered in Ujina as many as three days before the appointed time. This was the first step towards sending an Army to Korea. The troops which landed at and practically took possession of Inehhōn, the gate of the Korean Capital, were borne across the Sea of Japan in these vessels. The whole transportation of troops, stores, warlike material, etc., occupied one fortnight only. That this was done promptly and without mishap is proof of the excellent organization of the Company and its splendid discipline. Without these two factors, things would not have gone so smoothly. Immediately upon the conclusion of the War, Mr. Yoshikawa Taijirō, President of the Company, died, greatly regretted by all. Mr. Kondō Rempei succeeded to the presidency, and the business was thenceforth carried on in a still more comprehensive manner, arrangements being made to open regular services between Japan and Great Britain and Japan and the United States.

---

### III.—SUPPLY OF SHIPS AFTER THE OUTBREAK OF THE WAR.

So soon as war was definitely declared between the two Empires (August 1st, 1894), the necessity for prompt transportation of troops, animals and all war-material was very great. For Japan, though an Island Empire and thus accessible on all sides, was at no time in danger of a Chinese invasion. The enemy had more than enough to do at home. And now any mistake, however trivial, might seriously effect the fortunes of Japan. In these



critical and exciting days the Company worked with wonderful skill, ardent patriotism and untiring energy. Not only did it keep up the regular service along the coasts, but it managed or controlled almost the whole of the transport service. To do this the steamers plying between the various ports of Japan were requisitioned for Government service, while other foreign vessels were hastily chartered for the regular duties in home waters. The employés of the Company both on land and afloat in these days truly laboured with giant strength and unselfish devotion to the cause. And so it came that each of the countless tasks was not only done but well and speedily done.

At the time there were in the Company's employ about 800 Japanese officials, and over 200 foreigners; if the total of the other employés be added to this—the tallymen, carpenters, sailors, and stokers,—the number of men was 4000; and if we finally add the coolies employed in loading and unloading, the whole number comes to more than 10,000.

As the Army increased and the territory occupied or subdued grew larger, still greater claims were made on the Company's energy, skill and patriotism. All ships above 1000 tons burden were now engaged in Government work, yet the number of vessels was still found insufficient, and steamers of less than 1000 tonnage had to be requisitioned. The Company then owned 44 vessels (of 69,256 tons) and two others which had been contracted for, of 5789 and 3224 tons respectively. Nearly every one of these ships was now doing Government work. Even this number, the Company feared, might be less than necessary, so nine other ships, of a total of 22,926 tons, were at once bought, and, without exception, put to Government use. Justly supposing, however, that other vessels would shortly be required, the War Department desired to have 25,000 tons and the Navy Department 18,000 tons in addition to the fleet of transports then employed. The new vessels were required of the Company, under certain stipulations, within the course of one or two months. This was a matter of the first importance and admitted of no delay; so the wires were set in motion and telegrams sent to all parts of the world for the purchase of the necessary vessels. Money was of no consideration where the reputation if not the

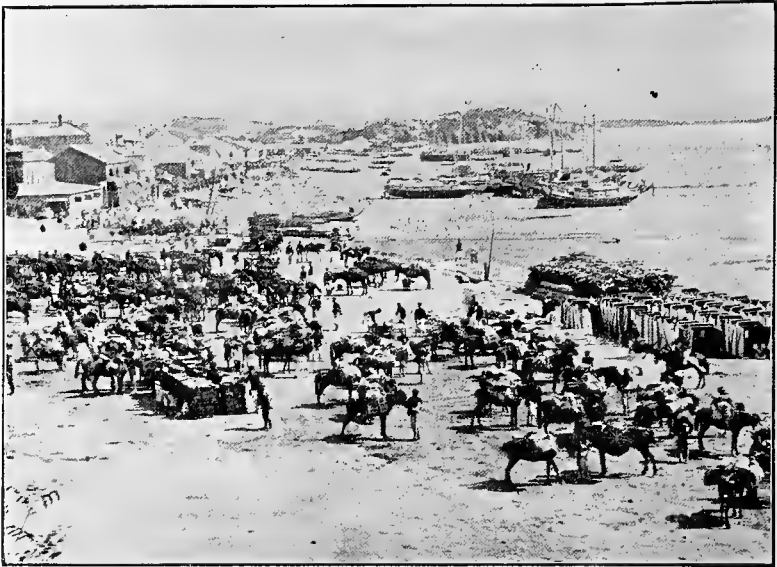
fate of the Empire was at stake. The cables carried swift replies, and the ships were brought out and handed over to the authorities well within the stipulated limit of the time. Thus 14 ships of 41,334 tons were now added to the transport service. These the Company did all possible to man promptly, but as the supply of native-born sea-faring men was far below the limit at this time, the decks and engine-rooms were filled with foreigners, while the forecastles and stoke-holes were manned by sailors and fire-men brought forward by the *Nippon Kai-in Eki-sei Kwai*, or Japan Sailors Home; and so the difficulty was tided over.

As will be seen from the above data, the total number of vessels supplied to the Government, was 59, of 134,243 tons. From other sources the authorities obtained 112,618 tons. Compared with these figures, it is clear that the *Nippon Yūsen Kaisha* did six-tenths of the whole carrying. If, however, we consider the speed of the Company's fleet and the actual number of troops sent across the waters in their vessels, we find that no less than eight-tenths of the whole work devolved on the Japan Mail Steamship Company. In other words, 160,000 out of 200,000 men went to Korea and China in the Company's steamers. Moreover, four of the finest steamers—the *Saikyo Maru*, *Sagami Maru*, *Yamashiro Maru* and *Omi Maru*—were fitted out as cruisers, being well armed with Q.-F. guns. These ships took actual part in the war. The story of the *Saikyo Maru* has already been narrated, and need not be more than mentioned here.

---

#### IV.—LANDING OF THE TROOPS AT INCHHŌN.

UPON the outbreak of the Tonghak Rebellion in Korea, the first idea of the Japanese Government was to protect the subjects of this Empire in the Peninsula. To this end the Combined Brigade had to be sent across the Sea of Japan as quickly as possible, Inchhōn being selected as the port at which to land the troops. The original intention of the authorities was to have the Navy work conjointly with the Army



LANDING OF THE FIRST ARMY AT INCHEHÖN, KOREA.

and attend to the transportation of the Brigade ; but many inconveniences arose and the Army authorities were considerably embarrassed. Under the circumstances the work was entrusted to the *Nippon Yusen Kaisha*, and the whole undertaking accomplished promptly and in a few days, though experts had declared that full a week would be necessary to effect the transportation. The landing of the troops on the other side was done so quietly, so expeditiously and without mishap, that the Army authorities expressed themselves—as indeed they might—highly pleased with the Company's discipline and zeal. To the Koreans the whole business was a revelation.

#### V.—RECONNOITRING AT WEI-HAI-WEI.

A VERY clever reconnaissance was made by the *Genkai Maru*, one of the Company's crack vessels, at Wei-hai-wei during the month of November, 1894. The enemy's famous Northern Fleet

—or what was left of it—was patrolling the harbour and its approaches, while the sea outside was exceptionally rough and boisterous. Despite all this the *Genkai Maru* managed to elude the vigilance of the Chinese vessels, stealing into the harbour successfully. After making a thorough reconnaissance the *Genkai* got out again in safety. It was both a plucky and hazardous thing to do.

---

## VI.—THE COMPANY'S FOREIGN EMPLOYÉS

### DURING THE WAR.

A GOOD deal has been said and written on the subject of the foreign employés of the *Nippon Yūsen Kaisha* and their bearing during the War. There are those who hold that it is not right for nationals of neutral countries to serve in the vessels or other employ of one or both of the belligerents; it is moreover in accordance with the dictates of International Law for a neutral to keep its nationals from leaving to take service in belligerent employ; but if—in spite of the fact that subjects of a neutral country who persist in remaining in the employ of a belligerent, lose all hope of or right to protection on the part of their native land—the employés chose to remain in belligerent service, the neutral power has no means to compel them to withdraw from such belligerent employ. Whether the Japanese are or are not at home on the sea, was satisfactorily demonstrated during the course of the war. Nor did the Company in any way endeavour to make the foreign employés remain in their service; those that stayed did so of their own free-will, as will be seen from our narrative. The majority of those entrusted with the management of the Company's ships were Japanese; and as for the foreigners it was for a time a moot point whether they were to leave the service or not. Many of the Japanese employés were thoroughly acquainted with the coasts of Japan, Korea and the Gulf of Péchili, and these officers could have readily taken the place of the foreign commanders. But the Directors were far too

generous to make, at this critical moment, any distinction between their own and the nationals of any Western land. He who had served the Company faithfully and well, who had been diligent in the discharge of his duties, must, the Company held, still be employed without distinction of nationality. So all were employed without partiality whether on long or short voyages, whether in large or small ships. At the same time the Directors told their foreign employés that they might choose for themselves: stay with the Company or resign their posts. Some felt, under the circumstances and being citizens of neutral nations, that they had better resign; or because the insurance effected on their lives would be invalidated by taking active part in the War. But Captains G. W. Conner (American), E. W. Haswell, P. H. Going (British) and J. W. Ekstrand (Dutch) positively declined to leave the service. Thereafter they worked well and were most meritorious in the discharge of their duties, to the great satisfaction not only of the Company but also of the Government. Their conduct excited many others to emulation, so much so that several of the Company's vessels were later on in charge of foreign Captains. The Directors warmly admired the indefatigable industry of these faithful men, and desire all to know that they are this day deeply recognisant of the zeal and fidelity displayed by them. It is gratifying to us to be able to make these statements.

---

#### VII.—HOW THE COAST-WISE SERVICE WAS KEPT UP.

WHEN the Government requisitioned the best ships in the *Nippon Yusen Kaisha's* fleet, there was cargo awaiting transportation in every Japanese port, and vessels were urgently needed. Of the ten steamers engaged in the coast trade, no less than eight were put into Government service, and these were just the boats plying between Yokohama and Otaru in the Eastern and the Western routes. Even in times of peace these steamships carried full cargoes and hardly met the requirements of the trade; so that this sudden withdrawal of eight vessels was very hard felt. While the Company were trying to make the deficiency good by

rapidly supplying other vessels, the Government desired to have four more ships. Then everywhere ships were at a premium; traffic and communication almost stopped between certain ports; the local merchants became greatly embarrassed and a panic threatened, a great disturbance of the country's finances being apprehended. Shares of all sorts went down with a rush, and the circulation of money was much impeded.

To relieve the situation was the imperative duty of the Japan Mail Steamship Company. They had done, humanly speaking, everything possible towards assisting the military and naval operations of the authorities; the next thing was to re-open communication and carry the long-delayed cargoes to their destinations. And there was no time to be lost: the necessity was of an urgent nature. The Company at once began buying or chartering foreign vessels right and left, irrespective of price or amount of charter-money. Telegrams were sent to Australia, Singapore, Honkong and elsewhere to buy boats promptly and send them on with all possible despatch to Japan. But as many of the chartered vessels thus obtained were flying foreign flags, they could not be taken into any except treaty ports. At first only this was done; but greater inconvenience resulting from this system, the Government, on September 22nd, 1894, ordered all local and provincial governors to permit these chartered foreign ships to enter any port whatever during the space of six months or thereabouts. This act gave much relief to the Company, who could now act with a free hand. The necessities of each port were then taken into consideration, and ships sent first to those where the need was greatest, afterwards to the others. A panic was thus averted and the sudden tremendous rise in freight was done away with, to the great satisfaction of all parties. Trade went on as before, without friction.

As the War continued the necessity for ships grew ever greater. As fast as the Company bought vessels they were taken over by the Government, so that by March, 1895, all ships above 1000 tons burthen were being employed by the authorities. The Kōbe and Ōtaru services, the principal coast-routes, as well as the service to Yokkaichi, the Ryūkyū (Loochoo) Islands, Shanghai and Korea, even the extra service to Fushiki and Hokkaidō, were

all looked after by chartered foreign steamers, 33 in all, of 76,000 tons, which was just 6,000 tons more than the tonnage of the whole fleet owned by the Company. The pressing necessity for coast-wise transportation thus compelled the Company to charter foreign bottoms, and as this had to be done with the utmost despatch anything like a thorough examination of the ships, prior to their being chartered, was out of the question. Owing to this fact, the Company suffered no small amount of inconvenience from the insuitability of many of the ships they were compelled to employ. Some were of an obsolete type, slow sailers and requiring enormous quantities of coal; others had no side hatches, so important in the loading and unloading of the Japanese freight, their absence necessitating much increased labour; the crews were, in several cases, unaccustomed to the handling of the freight, many mistakes occurring there from, not to speak of breakages and other damages, for all of which the Company had to pay. The rate of charter also went up by leaps and bounds. As first the price was 8 shillings 3 pence per ton weight; but from September the figures increased daily. Up to the end of September the Company had to pay out 2,600,000 *yen* in chartering.

From the above data may be understood the tremendous weight of responsibility devolving on the Directors of the Company, as well as the enormous outlay of money in keeping the Government operations moving while still continuing the home traffic. This could never have been effected had not the organization of the Company been of exceptional excellence, and the Directors men of ardent patriotism and tireless energy.

---

#### IX—ONE KIND OF PATRIOTISM.

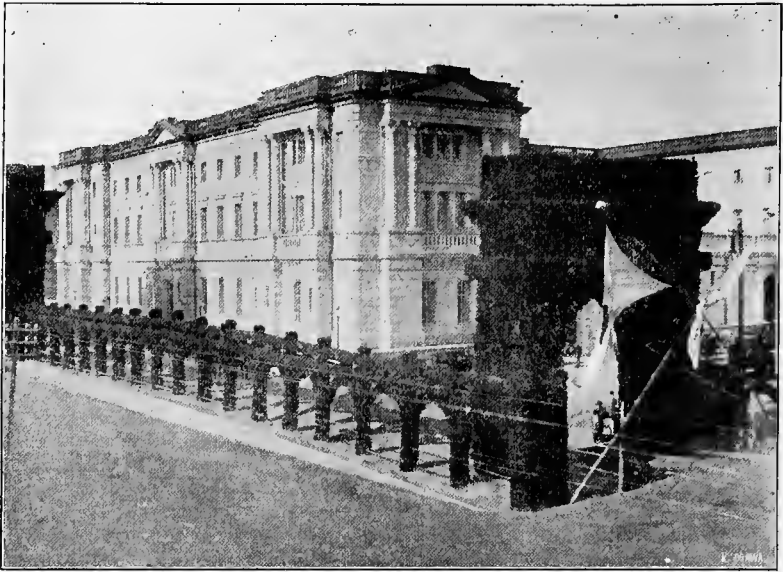
WE have already stated that the Government's demands for transports came just at the busiest season of the year. Cargo was everywhere awaiting shipment and stored in quantities in the Company's and other godowns. Worse than this, the cargoes carried by eight of the most important steamers had, at a moment's notice, to be discharged at the nearest port, the passengers

being also required to land, no matter whether their ultimate destination was far or near. It was feared, under these most untoward circumstances, that bankruptcies would ensue or a panic arise. On the contrary, however, the merchants most affected raised no outcry and made no complaint whatever, however serious their immediate loss. They simply wished the Government and Company godspeed and made light of their own misfortunes. This surely was patriotism of a very practical and noble kind.

---

.





THE NEW PREMISES OF THE BANK OF JAPAN  
(from a photograph taken on the day of opening).

## CHAPTER XXIX.

### THE BANK OF JAPAN.

#### I.—THE SINEWS OF WAR.

THE first news of the growing strength of the Tonghak Rebellion and the defeat of the Korean Government troops—a most inefficient body at that time—reached Japan towards the latter part of May, 1894. In early June China sent the first batch of soldiers to the Peninsula: an example speedily followed by Japan. This step the Chinese Government viewed with ill-concealed displeasure, and repeatedly urged the Japanese authorities to withdraw their forces. Negotiations grew daily more difficult and, as we have already narrated at length, the relations of the two Empires more strained; while the policy of China towards Korea assumed a most sinister aspect. This condition

of affairs speedily affected the money-market in Japan. Merchants grew timid and manufacturers less pushing. War seemed inevitable and everywhere were political debaters heard discussing the management of the national finances and the pecuniary preparations for the expected campaign. The upshot of these discussions was, to put it briefly, an outspoken desire to see the Bank of Japan (*Nippon Ginkō*) adopt some measures to relieve the tension of the market. Never was the importance of the Bank more clearly apparent; and never was its responsibility greater. Matters speedily reached a climax between the two Empires: a collision was no longer evitable. In a few days more came the engagement off Phungdo and the news of the Chinese defeat.

On learning privately from the authorities what was going on and the probable ultimate result of the situation, Mr. Kawada Koichirō, the Governor of the Bank of Japan and perhaps the ablest of Japanese financiers, did not hesitate to declare himself ready for any eventuality. For nearly ten years the Bank had been storing bullion and coins in its vaults; it was at once agreed that the Bank should become responsible for the larger portion of the war-expense. At the time, the sum total of convertible notes—*i. e.* exchangeable for silver—issued was not much less than 140,000,000 *yen* (Japanese silver dollars). Against this there was a specie reserve of 80,000,000 *yen* in the Bank, or  $\frac{57}{100}$  of the whole amount of notes in circulation. Therefore should it even become necessary to make a fresh issue of five or six million *yen* of bank-notes, there was no reason to apprehend any disturbance in the system of specie payment. Moreover there were easy methods of transportation, and all necessary provisions and military equipment for the troops in Korea and China could be purchased at home and thence shipped. Therefore the funds which had to be sent the front, represented merely the wages of the coolies and money for incidentals of the regular forces, which was only a small fraction of what the War would and did cost. At any rate, there was no urgent call to export a large amount of specie, nor was it thought necessary to increase the specie reserve in order to make a fresh issue of convertible notes.

Under the circumstances, therefore, the Governor of the

Bank of Japan readily assented to the proposals of the Government. From this time on the Bank was busy in providing the sinews of war and paying the bills sent in by Government order. Finding, however, that the War would last some time and the expenses incurred would be very heavy, it was plain that some other method would have to be resorted to. And so a War Loan was resolved upon.

In order to understand just how and why this loan was raised, we must hark back to the time when the necessity for such a loan had not yet become apparent. When the dispute between the two Empires reached a crisis and the War was openly declared by Imperial Ordinance, after the first engagements both on land and at sea the Japanese became greatly excited and volunteered in many ways their services to the Government, willing either to enlist or to contribute funds to the cause. Patriots everywhere held meetings, and the *Hō-koku Gi Kwai*, or "Patriotic Association", was established, amidst the greatest enthusiasm. Thousands of loyal citizens speedily had themselves enrolled as its members; and it soon became apparent that the prime intention of the "Patriotic Association" was to appeal to the people for subscription of funds wherewith to vigorously prosecute the War. The ideas of this Association met with instant and universal approval. This gives an insight into the character of the Japanese, among whom the qualities of fidelity and loyalty often replace the religious sentiment so predominant in Western nations. With the average Japanese, "Emperor and country" form a whole religion. He knows no higher quality than that of unbending loyalty: loyalty that makes light, nay, a duty of death in the right cause. And this sentiment of the people it was wise to foster; for in case of a protracted war the heat of loyal fervour might suffer some abatement, though it could never wholly pass away.

Mr. Kawada was, just at this time, recuperating at Ōsaka, his health having been affected by over-work. However, on hearing of the establishment of the *Hō-koku Gi Kwai*, he deemed it advisable to return at once to his post; for although the loyalty of the people was at a white heat, he did not believe that this sentiment could be so far depended upon as to expect that the

Association could or would be able to defray, by private contributions, the vast expenses of a great war. He thought that, even under the most favorable circumstances, the founders of the Association would not be able to bring together a sum larger than five or six million *yen*, and besides this would be a most uncertain source of revenue in defraying the war-expenses. Consequently while he admired and applauded the spirit of these patriots and even excited them to greater exertions, he was paving the way towards the issue of War Loan Bonds. And while consenting to the raising of such a loan, he was in frequent consultation with other eminent Japanese bankers, endeavoring to obtain the promise of large loans from themselves. On August 15th, 1894, the Regulations concerning the issue of the War Loan Bonds, were promulgated. This was promptly followed by the dissolution of the *Hō-koku Gi Kwai*: for the Association had no more work to do.

What the Bank now had to do was to manage the loan in such a way that the economic condition of the country should not receive too severe a shock by the withdrawal of so large a sum of money from circulation. To avoid commercial distress or any undue tightness in the money-market, it was necessary, for the time being, to discourage any fresh commercial or industrial enterprises; for if such undertakings were started at random or without proper precautions, it was obvious that a still greater drain of money would set in, to the discomfort of the whole nation. Therefore the first step taken by the Bank of Japan was to obviate the need of capital and hinder, as far as possible, the formation of new trading companies or industrial firms. The months of June and July are, in Japan, the great season for the production of raw silk; moreover in this period payments were to be made to the capital stock of all sorts of concerns started in the previous year (1893). These two months were thus a time when the need of ready money was most pressingly felt. But as the Bank of Japan promptly raised the rate of interest, this caused merchants and manufacturers to fall back on their own resources and do their best to get along without having recourse to loans. So by these varied means no great want of money was experienced, and things went along quite smoothly. Yet there was one other

matter to be considered. The issue of the War Bands being effected, a very large sum of money would thereby be withdrawn from circulation. It would have been most rash to demand the payment of the bonds in full at once. And so the bonds were made payable in several instalments. The first instalment was made only so large as to cover the first purchases of war-material in the open market. And thereafter, whenever a payment became due, the authorities first made heavy purchases in the market: everything necessary for the prosecution of the War being bought, almost exclusively, within the borders of the Empire. In this way the people got much of their money back, trade was kept from stagnation, and an easier feeling prevailed in the money-market. As the times when money for war-expenses would be needed were pretty clearly determinable beforehand, the last instalment for the first issue of War Bonds was made payable in June, 1895. The dates of other instalments were also settled, in accordance with the time in which the Government would have to make large disbursements for war-material.

Mr. Kawada, himself heartily approving the issue of the War Loan, then got a number of prominent bankers to promise assistance in the sale of the bonds. But at the outset the public, not being acquainted with the above-described methods of issue and seeing that the first issue called for 50,000,000 *yen*, the bonds bearing an interest of between 5 and 6 *per cent.*,—the public, we repeat, experienced no little anxiety, and the fear was expressed that the money-market would suffer greatly. For these reasons a panic ensued in certain quarters, the value of all kinds of bonds and stocks, with very few exceptions, falling below par. Every concern in the country had to experience this, to the no small disorder of the money-market. When, however, the manner of paying for the bonds, the long period of payment and the way in which the loan was to be raised were fully advertised in the columns of the press, people learned that the first call would be for only 30,000,000 *yen*; that there would be no pressure about the payment; that the temporary receipt for whatever had been paid on the bonds applied for, could be deposited as security, or be mortgaged, or even sold to another: at once a beneficial change took place in public opinion, and the money-market grew

easier and gradually regained its normal tone.

Hereupon the Minister of State for Finance summoned the managers of the leading banks throughout the Empire, and explained to them the manner in which the War Loan was to be floated. Without a dissentient voice the plan proposed by the Minister was approved; and this at once caused a wide-spread feeling of relief. Later on, when the bonds were definitely issued, the number of applications was very far in excess of the stipulated amount: more than 77,000,000 *yen* being applied for. This excellent showing was, of course, primarily attributable to the patriotic ardour of the nation; yet it was also greatly owing to the astute arrangements of Mr. Kawada, his colleagues and other bankers; to the division of the payment into small instalment; and finally to the fact that receipts for money paid in might be used as security or sold to other people.

Thus the first issue of the War Loan Bonds was a thorough-going success. Simultaneously came the reports of the victories at Phyōngyang and in the Yellow Sea, Japan's arms having everywhere proved triumphant. These great victories aroused much enthusiasm, promptly followed by a still easier feeling in the money-market. But in the middle of September, 1864, the War was carried across the Manchurian frontier and the Second Expeditionary Army had to be sent out; and there were many who then advocated a foreign loan, knowing that thenceforth the war-expenditure would be on a steadily increasing scale. Mr. Kawada, however, firmly opposed the raising of a foreign loan. He did not wish the nation to trust to its credit abroad, and was convinced that any load of the kind would prove distinctly disadvantageous. So there came the necessity to raise a Second War Loan. On November 22nd, 1894, the Second War Loan of 50,000,000 *yen* was floated. Again at the request of the Finance Minister, Mr. Kawada met with prominent bankers and fully discussed the matter with them. Some hesitation being visible among the assembled bankers, the Governor arose and gave utterance to the following well-chosen words:—"You have, gentlemen, undoubtedly, some reasons for opposing the second loan. But this is a critical time for our Empire. We have a large number of brave soldiers in the field and the War is being

vigorously carried on with the full consent and approval of the nation. It is therefore the nation's duty to make provision for whatever expenses may be incurred, so that the War may be brought to a glorious end. Much more is it your duty, gentlemen, who bear such well-known names and have so large a command of money. Those who stand on the highest rung of the social ladder owe a greater and higher duty to the nation than do other less favoured mortals. Such people should lead the rest with offers of money to the Government."

After this there was no hesitation whatever, all the bankers present readily consenting to sell bonds of 100 *yen* face value at 95. Yet even after the bankers had largely sent in tenders, the sum received was still found insufficient. At this Mr. Kawada sent out the Chief Cashier of the Bank, Mr. Yamamoto Tatsu-o, to urge the Imperial Court, the nobles and provincial bankers to take up the bonds. Thanks to the indefatigability of the great Bank, when the time came a sum of more than 90,000,000 *yen* was applied for. Patriotism had, once again, much to do with this gratifying result.

---

## II.—GOVERNOR KAWADA'S OPPOSITION TO A

### FOREIGN LOAN.

AFTER the first issue of the War Loan Bonds had been fully paid up, the territory covered by the First Expeditionary Army began to rapidly increase in extent. Passing through Korea, driving the Chinese Army before them, the Japanese crossed the Manchurian border and waged war with the enemy in their own land. The Second Expeditionary Army was now preparing to set out, and many things had to be purchased in this connection. Under the circumstances, the selling of a large amount of bonds, as a second loan, was unavoidable. On October 15th an Extraordinary Session of the Imperial Diet was convened, in accordance with the provisions of the Constitution. Prior to this, on September 1st, a general election had taken place, and the

Principal Headquarters had gone on to Hiroshima. The popular belief was that the Diet had been convened in order to discuss the question of the war-expenditure, and considerable eagerness was expressed to know just how much the War was going to cost and what extraordinary outlay would be agreed to by the two Houses of the Diet. This uncertainty was at once apparent in the feeling of apprehensive hesitancy noticeable in the money-market. At this juncture there were those who very strenuously insisted on the advisability of a foreign loan, and this for three reasons:—(1) There was no doubt, they claimed, that the arena of the War would steadily grow larger; in this case the need of specie-exportation would be severely felt, and the specie reserve in the Bank would be diminished, so there might be many difficulties in maintaining the system of specie payment at home. In order to avoid this eventuality, a foreign loan should be floated. (2) The War had advanced so far that an immense amount of ready money would be imperatively needed, in order to defray current expenses. To avoid ruinous pressure on the money-market at home, recourse should be had to a foreign loan. (3) Although the Empire was not yet in straits and still quite able to defray all expenditure connected with the War, yet should the War prove a protracted one, the country would be, sooner or later, drained of its resources. In that case, it might be impossible to raise a foreign loan, no matter how greatly the authorities should desire so to do. These opinions represented pretty fairly the general consensus of a few wealthy business-men, the members of the Stock Exchange, and a large clientèle of



GOVERNOR KAWADA.



general merchants. Moreover, in the Government itself there were a number of politicians who professed the same opinions, and, as the advocates of a foreign loan grew daily more numerous, there was a rumour that the question would be brought before the ensuing Extraordinary Session of the Imperial Diet, either by the Government or some member of the House itself.

Mr. Kawada, then suffering from heart-disease and over-excitement, threw himself heart and soul into the business, regardless of the injunctions of his physician. In opposition to the above views, he made the following strong appeal:—

“(1) A foreign loan is not always inadvisable. There are times when the raising of such a loan might be productive of good: as for example, when capital is sorely wanted for the development of profitable industries in the country. But the money we now stand in need of, is for the war, and not for production. Therefore should we have recourse to a foreign loan and leave the country free to rashly use funds in commercial ventures, there is no doubt that the rate of interest would fall, commodities grow dearer, the balance between imports and exports be disturbed and, in a word, the funds raised abroad be dissipated before we could use them for the legitimate purpose of the War. All that would be left us in that case would be a heavy debt to face.

(2) The attention of the whole world is now centered on the War between our country and China. Not only our military strength but also our financial standing affect the dignity of the Empire. Our arms by sea and land are going from victory to victory. If we cannot at once cheerfully shoulder the expenses of this glorious war or choose to wait till aid comes from abroad, our national prestige will be sure to suffer. Finally, though the triumph of our arms is primarily due to the exalted virtues of His Imperial Majesty the Emperor and to the bravery of our Army and Navy, still the fact that all the money spent in prosecuting the War comes from home and not from abroad, cannot fail to have a stirring effect on the spirit of those afield. Indeed, I fear that the knowledge of a foreign loan having been raised would have a most prejudicial effect on the mind of our forces.

(3) For the above-enumerated reasons I hold that a foreign loan for the purpose of defraying the war expenditure is eminent-

ly inadvisable at the present juncture. But should, through some unfortunate, unforeseen train of circumstances, financial distress be felt at home, then would it be inevitable to have recourse to a foreign loan, even if by such a course our forces should feel discouraged. Yet at present we are by no means in such financial distress. Our finances are on the solid basis of specie payment. So long as we maintain this system, there ought to be no difficulty in raising a loan as large as 100,000,000 *yen*, provided of course that the loan is managed in a proper way. Our banking system has the power of elasticity, increasing the amount in circulation, as the demand for money arises, and diminishing it when the demand therefor disappears. In the case of an extraordinary demand for money we can issue taxable notes beyond the legal limit stated in the Currency Act, which is fixed at 85,000,000 *yen*. Consequently we need have no apprehension should the demand for money become greater. My only anxiety is this: whether the specie reserve be sufficiently large or not. The Bank of Japan has, therefore, in anticipation of possible future emergency, always devoted its energies to the accumulation of specie. The actual specie reserve at present in the Bank amounts to no less than 80,000,000 *yen*, which came together not only as a result of the balance of trade but of which a part has been actually purchased. In the face by this fact, should the volume of convertible notes be increased for the purpose of covering the war expenditure, there is no cause for alarm concerning the possibility of the suspension of specie payment. I would call special attention to the fact that the greater portion of the domestic loan will be at once spent at home in the purchase of the necessary war-material; only a very small fraction of the whole sum finding its way abroad. And so, if we gather money with the one hand as a loan and pay out promptly with the other in purchasing, there is no reason why any distress should be felt in the money-market, even if several loans have successively to be floated. And although during this period the debt incurred by the Government will largely increase and the duty of paying the interest on the loans grew a steadily heavier burden, yet it is far better to have to pay this interest at home than to any foreign syndicate."

In this way Governor Kawada set forth his views emphati-

cally and clearly; and these arguments were published in and discussed by the Japanese press; while influential men were persuaded to share the same ideas. At last, about the time of the opening of the Extraordinary Session of the Imperial Diet, the Government and most of the leading politicians came to the conclusion that a foreign loan had better be avoided. When the Extraordinary Session met at Hiroshima the War Budget of 150,000,000 *yen* was promptly passed and a Domestic Loan to the extent of 100,000,000 *yen* sanctioned, without one dissentient voice. The manner in which the loan should be raised was left to the discretion of the Minister of State for Finance. Thereafter there was no more talk of borrowing money abroad. The once-powerful faction supporting a foreign loan, now had nothing more to say in favour of such a measure.

---

### III.—THE REGULATION OF THE MONEY-MARKET.

THE issue of both the First and Second Domestic War Loans was attended with excellent results, due in a very great measure to the patriotism and careful financial measures taken by the Bank of Japan. There was no longer any need for apprehension with regard to the funds necessary to carry the War to a successful issue; yet, in reality, in view of the complicated circumstances at the time, there was much danger of disturbing the state of money-market if the bonds were not floated in an appropriate manner. In order to avoid all tightness or strain in the market, the Bank advised the Government to make the bonds payable in several small instalments, as already set forth. In this way, the market was saved from any serious strain; but the Government, on the other hand, could not at any one time get a large sum of money. Consequently when the demand for money to carry on the War, grew large, the Government sometimes found itself unable to meet actual running expenses. Under the circumstances, the Bank of Japan had to make good the deficit, and loaned the Government whatever sums were needed. Moreover, whenever the funds required exceeded the income of the revenue set apart

for the purpose of making war; in each case the great Bank filled the breach, there being nothing else feasible. In this way the various sums loaned the Government, from the beginning of October, 1894, to the end of December, 1895, reached the large total of 37,000,000 *yen*.

Such is briefly what the Bank did in defraying the war expenditure. It remains to recite the meritorious services of the Bank in regulating the money-market of the country during the campaign.

At the outset of the War, Japan's foreign trade was unfavorable, imports being greatly in excess of exports; and at the same time the need of capital for many new industrial enterprises, which had just been started, was very urgent. Therefore the outlook was by no means a pleasant one. The silk and tea season had set in and the lack of ready money to carry on this important business began to be severely felt. It is the settled policy of the Bank to give the staple products of Japan the fullest possible accommodation and loan to producers on easy terms. Yet with the growing and seemingly unlimited expenses attendant upon the prosecution of the War, the Bank of Japan was compelled to call in, as far as possible, whatever loans had already been made, in order to keep a proper specie reserve and to be able to meet the demands of the Government as they came in. Thereupon the Bank, despite the usual policy, twice raised its rate of interest and laboured to make business-men cautious in their operations. The result was that business-men became very conservative, and every other bank, both national and private, became very reluctant in the matter of making cash advances, even on the strength of good security. This again had effect throughout the Empire, causing a most conservative feeling in trade. Thereafter, there were constant fluctuations in the stock-market due to the rumours of a domestic or foreign loan or the news of fresh victories; yet, on the whole, the business world suffered no violent shock and the state of the money-market was a tolerably tranquil one.

In April of 1895, the Treaty of Peace was concluded between the Plenipotentiaries of Japan and China at Shimonoseki (Bakan)—a place of historical interest in the development of New Japan.

The exchange of ratifications was shortly afterwards effected at Chefoo. It was a matter of course that the condition of trade and industry should speedily return to the state in which they had been previous to the outbreak of hostilities. And yet, strange to say, no appreciable change was noted in the public sentiment. The same prudence continued to be exercised, and bankers were as averse as ever to the making of cash advances. Merchants and manufacturers were thus unable to undertake operations that should have followed the conclusion of the War. The silk and tea season was again at hand, and once more the need of money began to be felt with increasing severity. It was patent that if these two industries were not given the fullest accommodation and encouragement, the balance of foreign trade would be heavily against Japan; and all financial operations after the war would receive a serious check. Here again the Bank adopted the policy of freely supplying productive capital, and this despite the fact that the issue of bank-notes had almost reached the legal limit, as the Bank had already advanced the Government a large sum of money. On June 27th, 1895, Mr. Yamamoto, the Chief Cashier of the Bank, called a meeting of the managers of every bank in the metropolis, including those of the Tōkyō agencies of provincial banking houses. These gentlemen he addressed, in accordance with Mr. Kawada's desire, on the subject of the future policy to be adopted by the Bank in view of the immediate needs of the national economy and finances. The



MR. YAMAMOTO TATSU-O.

speech ran as follows:—"The condition of the national finances at the close of the War and its consequences are matters of prime importance for our consideration. When the Treaty of Peace was signed, every body doubtless anticipated that the price

of commodities would go up, the money-market grow easy, new enterprises appear in rapid succession, and prosperity crown the labours of our industrial community. But just the contrary has been noted. There may possibly be several reasons for this abnormal state of things. In the first place, there is the retrocession of the Liaotung Peninsula; the difficulty, whether great or small, of tranquillizing Formosa; and the discouragement consequent upon the unsettled state of affairs in Korea. These have, no doubt, produced the present dull state of trade. Yet these are temporary causes, and not lasting grievances. Now let me put before you briefly, the real situation of the present money-market. Since the beginning of the War, vast sums of money have been required to meet the necessary expenses. Financiers were, as you all know, so dismayed by this fact that there were many who insisted upon the advisability of borrowing in the foreign market. But public opinion was gradually shaped in favour of domestic loans, and thus altogether the sum of 80,000,000 *yen* was successfully raised: 30,000,000 at first, and thereafter 50,000,000. It is easy to speak of such sums; the figures come glibly from the tongue: but in reality they represent an immense amount of wealth in consideration of the economic condition of our land. These bonds were made payable in several small instalments, the last instalment of the Second Domestic Loan falling due at the end of the present month. The Government has thus actually received, or to speak correctly will shortly receive, 80,000,000 *yen* from the nation. This has withdrawn notes from circulation and has produced as a natural sequence the present contraction in the market. Moreover capital has everywhere begun to be wanted. The silk season is close at hand. Those merchants who remained inactive or made no new venture during the course of the War, are, with the return of peace, gradually seeking to enlarge the sphere of their transactions. These may be mentioned as the reasons for the present brisker circulation of money. In the present situation, the first question, gentlemen, for us to solve is whether we are to be conservative in advancing money or to supply capital without hesitation as the demand arises. In order to arrive at a satisfactory solution, we must endeavour to ascertain what has brought about the immediate demand for money. It

seems to me that if the present strained condition in the money-market has grown out of the fact that, the rate of interest having been abnormally low, capitalists have freely invested in speculative undertakings, and that in consequence trade and industry have been expanded and the demand for money is abnormally increased, then we bankers must observe every precaution in making advances. But the present situation is a wholly different one. As I have just stated, the briskness of the market at present must be regarded as due to the fact that the War Bonds have been actually paid up; that the busy silk season is at hand; and that the season has come for the purchase of goods for sale. The War Bonds cannot, it is true, be used like money, yet they are most trustworthy certificates and the money invested in them is certain to be refunded with interest in future. Again, capital invested in the production of silk or in the purchase of goods for sale, is an investment of short duration and cannot be regarded as fixed capital. Money loaned for such purposes will return to the banker's hand within a short while. Therefore even from the standpoint of us bankers, it will be a source of large profit to freely advance money for such purposes. And from the standpoint of the nation's economic condition, the present is the time to expand our foreign and domestic trade, to open up every profitable source of industry and thereby hold in our own hands the ruling power in commerce. So, from every point of view, it is our prime duty to give liberal assistance to our industries at present. But there is once more point to which I wish to call your attention. There is an apprehension in certain quarters that in spite of the tendency at present to an over-circulation of money and despite the price of every article going up, if we still increase the supply of money and stimulate our trade, then it will encourage speculation, bubble companies will be promoted, and our whole economic society consequently suffer serious disturbance. But I do not share this opinion. According to our investigations, the sum total of paper money in circulation at the end of June of last year (1894), was 139,000,000 *yen*. To-day the amount has been ascertained to be 159,000,000 *yen*. There is thus an increase in paper currency of about 20,000,000 *yen*. From this sum, however, we should subtract the total Japanese currency circulating in Korea and the occupied

territories, which have not yet been absorbed into our actual business-circle. As a proof of this fact let us examine the total amount of deposits in the banks of Tōkyō and the Postal Saving Office. This was 62,660,000 *yen* at the end of May, 1894, of which sum 25,100,000 *yen* was held by the Postal Saving Office and 37,560,000 *yen* by the associated banks in Tōkyō. On May 30th of the present year (1895), the figures were 64,500,000 *yen*, made up of 40,000,000 *yen* in the banks and 24,500,000 *yen* in postal savings. During the whole twelve months the increase has been one of only 2,800,000 *yen*, which shows most indubitably that there is very little money in circulation. For, if the market were inflated with circulating notes this would at once be followed by a notable increase in the amount of deposits. This is, however, not the case. Again there is talk of the increased price of commodities. It is true, there is a slight advance noticeable, but this is not so much owing to an actual increase in price as it is to the great change in the relative values of gold and silver. For instance, in the 25th year of Meiji (1892), when the difference between gold and silver was not so striking as it is now, the average market-price of raw-silk—our chief and most valuable product—was 671 *yen* per picul;\* whereas up to May in the present year the average was 769 *yen*. But these values are in silver. If computed in gold, according to the rates current in the respective years, 671 silver make 476 gold *yen*, while the latter 769 *yen* come to only 379 gold *yen*. The same argument holds good with every other kind of commodities. Moreover, the rate of interest (now 10 *per cent.* or thereabouts) being so high, there is no need to fear that goods will advance in price; nor need we apprehend any speculative movement. Under such circumstances, even if we increase the present amount of issue to a much larger quantity for the time being, we need not fear that we shall impede the system of specie payment. The total amount of convertible notes now in circulation is 135,610,000 *yen*, against which the Bank of Japan has, in reserve, 65,000,000 *yen* in specie. This reserve will not be reduced to any great extent hereafter; so that although 20,000,000 or 30,000,000 *yen* of taxable notes should be issued in excess of the legal limit, there will be no possibility of

---

\* 1 Picul = 100 catties; 1 catty = about 1½ lbs.



injury to the present system of currency. And, more than all this, 80,000,000 *yen*—the first instalment of China's indemnity—will reach this country in November of the present year. It is therefore highly advisable, at this moment, to enlarge the sphere of our banking operations. For the reasons thus set forth, I hold that we business-men must, now that peace is definitely restored, seek to take the initiative in making orderly progress.

We bankers will not incur more than a slight loss if we freely make loans to various industries on generous terms; nor will the system of our currency be impaired if we increase the notes in circulation. Again, with the high rate of interest now prevailing, there is no danger of fostering speculation. It is thus, from every point of view, beneficial to the nation and to ourselves that we should keep to the principle of steady progress and give aid to commercial enterprises, thus keeping things in smooth running order. If you, gentlemen, adopt this principle, money will circulate with still more gratifying regularity, the rate of interest will fall to what it was before the War, and business will grow brisker. And then, in a few months, or perhaps a few years, the necessity may arise to stop too careless commercial undertakings, or such as are not based on sound commercial principles. This difficulty can, however, be readily met when it arises. There are those who have warned us, urging us to be on our guard and quoting in illustration the financial condition of Germany after the conclusion of the war with France. But the present situation of our country is quite different. Germany received the huge sum of 5,000,000,000 francs from France within the space of only three years, 1871 to 1873. The national debt was hastily paid off, the money in circulation suddenly increased to an extravagant figure, and consequently speculative enterprises were supported rather than discouraged. In this way, even before the three years of plenty were over, great financial distress ensued. In our own case, however, the indemnity money we are to receive amounts to not more than 270,000,000 or 280,000,000 *yen*, and even this comparatively modest sum will not be paid up until the long interval of seven years is over. Moreover as a large portion of the indemnity will be absorbed in the extension of the Army and Navy, the Government will not rashly pay its debts at the risk of

disturbing the money-market. Yet I dare not add that, when the indemnity comes in, there will be no fear of imprudent commercial enterprises as the result of an easy money-market. Sooner or later a time will perhaps come when we shall have to warn capitalists. But this will come as a phase of the successive changes in the money-market. That is to say, if a large amount of indemnity flows in, this will gradually find its way into general circulation and, easing the money-market, will help to tempt our business-men to dangerous speculation. But in its present conditions the money-market is far from being easy, for even profitable industries are cramped through lack of capital. The question demanding our urgent attention at this juncture, is how to give cash accommodation on easy terms and how to open the way for the gradual improvement of business. If, from fear of probable consequences, we now refuse to give aid to sound undertakings, it is like letting a hungry man go without food, for fear of his contracting some gastric disease. On the whole, the Bank of Japan has determined to help business run smoothly by making advances where the necessity for money is apparent and the lending justifiable. In pursuance of this policy we have recently established a branch in Hokkaidō and a sub-branch at Sapporo, where discounts and loans are effected. If what I have said hitherto were only upon my own authority as the Cashier of this Bank, I might be accused of having said too much. But there is nothing in the foregoing not directly inspired by Governor Kawada. During the progress of the War, Mr. Kawada, devoting himself to the supply of the war funds, could not, contrary to his own desire, give liberal assistance to business-men, fearing that the financial world of Japan might suffer in the case of a protracted war. Now his desire is to further the development of trade, commerce, and industry as far as possible, and thereby strengthen and increase the financial power of the Empire. This, I repeat, is Governor Kawada's most sincere wish."

Having in this explicit way set forth the Bank's aim and intentions, the rate of interest was lowered on July 12th, 1895. This example was soon followed by other banks. The market speedily resumed its former activity, and the spirit of progress made itself manifest in commercial and industrial circles. But as

the Bank had advanced a large sum of money to the Government—still needed for the war expenditure,—and on the other hand as it had given liberal assistance to the extension of various industries, it was inevitable that the volume of bank notes in circulation should be largely increased.

To the diligence and extraordinarily adroit management of the Bank of Japan is it due that the Commissariat was plentifully supplied and the money-market well regulated during the War. The chief reason for this success of the Bank's management lies in the fact that the Bank had laboured during more than ten years to accumulate a substantial specie reserve. Besides, the fact that the Government promptly spent in the open market a large portion of the money coming in from the sale of the War Bonds, may be adduced as another reason. These causes combined to produce a successful result. Compared with South-western or Satsuma Rebellion, of some 18 years ago, there was marked evidence of increased skill. In the earlier war, the national finances were rudely disturbed by the issue of a large quantity of fiat money without a proper specie reserve—and this in spite of the whole expenses attendant upon quelling the Rebellion being not more than 40,000,000 *yen*. What grand progress had been made since that time in Japanese financial operations, the history of the recent War most clearly shows. And the excellent management of the Bank and indirectly of the national finances is attributable to the wise administration of Governor Kawada, with the zealous labour and aid of the Chief Cashier, Mr. Yamamoto, and Directors Minomura Risuké, Yokura Morito, Kawakami Sashichirō; Auditors Yasuda Zenjirō, Morimura Ichizayemon and Hirose Saihei; Managers Usui Yoshihisa, Kawakami Kin-ichi and Tsuruhara Sadakichi; Vice-Manager Sudo Ryō, and others.

---

## CHAPTER XXX.

---

### THE RED CROSS.

#### I.—RED CROSS WORK IN JAPAN.

It was in the year 1886 that Japan first adopted the principles of the famous Geneva Convention, Marquis Hachisuka Mochi-aki being sent to Berne, Switzerland, as Special Ambassador, on June 5th of this year. From this time forth the principles of the Red Cross Society met with universal approval in Japan.

Yet this was not the first organisation of a similar Society in the Empire. Historians trace back the inception of such relief work to the reign of the Empress Jingō, during the subjugation of Korea by that great Sovereign. A code of martial law was drawn up on this occasion, containing provisions like the following:—“Suffer not a traitor to live. Kill not one who has called for quarter (*shizen*).” Henceforth no Japanese could kill any one, albeit an enemy, who refused to fight. Again, not many years ago, some of the Formosan islanders, belonging to an aboriginal tribe, determined upon a policy of foreign exclusion, murdered a number of foreigners, and plundered ships whenever they were wrecked on that inhospitable coast. The skulls obtained from slaughtering the unhappy shipwrecked mariners, were afterwards exhibited as trophies in their mountain homes. A number of inhabitants of Okinawa Prefecture,—otherwise the Ryūkyū or Loochoo Islands—also fell victims to the barbarous ferocity of the tribe. In fine, the Japanese Government determined to give these savages a salutary and much-needed lesson. In April, 1874, a Japanese man-of-war was despatched to the Island. On the

vessel were Vice-Admiral Saigō, in command, Staff Major-General Tani and Rear-Admiral Akamatsu. On May 2nd of the same year, the Japanese troops gave battle to the Botangs,—for so the worst tribe was called—at a place called Siemên. The savages were utterly defeated and thereupon sued for pardon, giving up their chief as hostage. On this occasion Vice-Admiral Saigo had his surgeons attend with strict impartiality to the wounded on both sides. This kindly deed having been noised among the defeated tribe, many thereafter came unhesitatingly to the Japanese troops and received treatment in the military hospital. The deed was afterwards discovered by foreigners, and highly spoken of.

During the Satsuma Rebellion, no less than 8569 wounded Imperialists received medical treatment in the temporary Military Hospital at Ōsaka. On March 31st of this year (1877), H. M. the Emperor, accompanied by Cabinet Adviser Kido, paid a special visit to the hospital. Many of the wounded burst into tears of gratitude at this unexpected evidence of the Imperial solicitude. Then T. M. the Empress and Empress Dowager, out of kindly sympathy with the sufferers, busied themselves in making lint at the Palace. This lint was distributed among the wounded at the Ōsaka and other hospitals. The example thus set was speedily followed by many ladies of rank. Viscounts



VISCOUNT SANO.

Sano Tsunetami and Ogyu Uzuru, members of the Senate,\* impatient of inaction on hearing of the sufferings of the wounded, established a Relief Society. The members desired to proceed to the seat of the war and give aid to the wounded both among the Government troops and the rebel forces. Permission to do this was begged of and at once granted by the Commander-in-chief,

\* Since disestablished.

H. I. H. Prince Arisugawa Taruhito. On receiving the desired permission, the good work, with H. I. H. Prince Komatsu as President, began on May 1st. The Society was known as the *Haku-ai Sha*, or "Philanthropic Association"; and it was the origin of the future Red Cross Society. Japan joined this noble body, as already related, in 1886; and this step was enjoined and confirmed by an Imperial Ordinance on November 15th of this year. The system of relieving the wounded become organised and was based on the most advanced European ideas. But, as we have seen, the Red Cross Society in Japan was by no means the outcome of a single day. Humanitarian ideas of this kind had been practised for centuries in the Empire.



VISCOUNT OGYU UZURU.

After the definite establishment of the Red Cross, the Society enjoyed Imperial favour and was highly esteemed by all. H. M. the Empress made a point of being present whenever a General Meeting was convened. It finally became customary for some member of the Imperial House to be present whenever any local Branch of the Society held a meeting. In October, 1888, the sum of 100,000 *yen* was contributed to the Society's funds out of the Privy Purse. A Red Cross

Hospital was subsequently established in the capital, where sick and wounded were ably treated in times of peace as well as of war. The scope of the Society growing larger, the sufferers from any natural catastrophe were thenceforth made the recipients of the Society's noble charity. By engaging in such work, the Red Cross members not only extended the principles of charity and philanthropy, but also kept themselves in constant practice and instant readiness for work in actual warfare.

\* \* \* \* \*

Two years after the establishment of the Society, its utility was put to the test. In July, 1888, occurred the fatal eruption of the volcano Mt. Bandai. H. M. the Empress at once had a band of workers from the Red Cross sent to the scene of the disaster; and these nursed and finally cured 41 of the sufferers. When the Turkish war-ship *Ertougroul*, which had been despatched to Japan with a message from the Sultan, foundered off the coast (September, 1890) of Kishū, 69 of the unfortunate crew were rescued by a German man-of-war. Five hundred were drowned, including the Captain. The rescued men were treated by the Red Cross Society at Hyōgo, remaining there for 40 or 50 days. The hospital had been used for this purpose by express order of H. M. the Empress. Upon their restoration to health, the survivors were taken back to Turkey in the Japanese war-ships *Kongō* and *Hiei*. Again, on October 28th, 1891, a most destructive earthquake did fearful damage in Mino and Owari, two thickly populated provinces. Land-slips occurred, rivers overflowed, and the destruction was widespread. On the news of the catastrophe reaching the Imperial Palace, H. M. the Empress at once had a number of physicians, women nurses, medicines and all needful medical instrument sent from the Red Cross Society to the devastated towns and villages. The Kyōto Branch of the Red Cross likewise despatched a certain number of medical men to the spot. In this tremendous earthquake 18,836 people were more or less severely wounded; while 7341 were killed outright. Most of the wounded were treated by the Red Cross, and it redounds greatly to the skill of the physicians in the Society that, out of 4600 sufferers medical treated, only 11 died of their injuries.

During the ten months of the War between Japan and China, the services rendered by the Red Cross Society were most honourably great. Nor did the work end with the conclusion of War, for there followed the campaign resulting in the subjugation of Formosa. The Red Cross physicians, medical assistants and nurses were everywhere, and everywhere indefatigable. They devoted themselves to tender nursing of the wounded, and made a most enviable record for the Society. So soon as the War broke out, all the Branches of the Red Cross made preparations to despatch, under the direction of the War Department, physicians,

nurses and medicaments to wherever they might be needed. They worked in no less than ten hospitals in Japan alone. Moreover, they nursed the Chinese wounded captives in the hospitals at Tōkyō, Nagoya, Toyohashi and Ōsaka. With regard to the work beyond the borders of the Empire, three different bodies were sent out by the Red Cross, the first detachment leaving Japan on September 2nd, 1894, or within a month after the inception of hostilities. They served both in the hospitals and on the field of battle. They were at Chemulpho, Phyōngyang, Nampho, Ul-ōn-tong, Wiju, Yongchōn, Ki-shan and Kuinpho, in Korea; and at Liushu-tun, To-ching-tse, Port Arthur, Kinchow, Taku-shan, Chintoi-tse, etc., in China. Moreover, twice—in October, 1894, and March, 1895—some five or six hundred people in the Society's service were sent on board the transport-ships attached to the Army, and there worked.

After the restoration of Formosa to a condition of comparative tranquillity, a body of workers was sent to the Island. There they did excellent work in the Commissariat Hospitals at Keelung and Taipeh. Beginning simultaneously with the War, the work of the Red Cross in this connection did not come to an end until February 6th of the present year (1896).

When the Relief Section of the Army and the Bureau of Accounts in the Navy advertised their willingness to receive contributions of all descriptions for the benefit of the troops afloat and ashore, the Society undertook to collect and transmit all offerings and contributions, through the various local Branches—and without charge—to their destination. This gave great convenience to the thousands of eager contributors, and not only strengthened the official standing of the Society, but also received aid from every Railroad and Steamship Company. It was everywhere apparent that the troops were regarded with the utmost gratitude and devotion: indeed this spirit was significant of the whole nation. But foremost in encouraging the good work by word and deed, was the Red Cross Society. On the return of the triumphant Regiments as on their starting for the seat of war, the members of the Society assembled at the various railway stations to thank in person the brave defenders of their country; while other leading members were sent to the recent seat of War



for the same purpose. The President of the Society frequently visited the wounded, including the Chinese in hospital, and made gifts of money or various little luxuries. The Ladies' Benevolent Society, under the presidency of H. I. H. Princess Komatsu, was indefatigable in making bandages and lint. Many lady members served in the hospitals. A large number of pecuniary contributions and gifts were received from both foreigners and natives; and all those were handled by the Society. And now for a short sketch of the Society's work during the War.

---

## II.—PREPARATIONS FOR THE RESCUE OF THE WOUNDED.

IMMEDIATELY after the definite outbreak of the War, the Red Cross Society held a council of its members to determine upon the regulations to be observed during the continuation of hostilities. These regulations affected the establishment of an extra Bureau of Accounts, the Management of Nurses, and many other matters. The direction of the rescue service during the War, of the manner in which the wounded should be treated, of the constitution of each body of nurses, etc., were discussed and many improvements made. Four bodies of nurses, each capable of dealing with 200 patients, were speedily brought in order. Besides the Central Council at Tōkyō, the three Branches of Kyōto, Ōsaka and Nagoya got each one such band in readiness; while the Branches in Hokkaidō, Hyōgo, Nagasaki, Niigata, Gumma, Miyagi, Ehimé and Kumamoto made ready each a corps of physicians and nurses capable of looking after 100 patients. At the time every Branch was training between 20–30 women for nurses, intending to set them to hospital-work later on. Between the end of 1894 and the first part of 1895, no less than 668 qualified nurses were, in this way, brought into service,

In October, 1894, a temporary hospital was run up beside the original Red Cross Hospital in Tōkyō; and this was intended to receive sick and wounded soldiers. For the first time, the Society despatched a band of splendidly trained nurses to Hiroshima, and they went at once to work in the Reserve Military

Hospital. Physicians, pharmacists, managers, clerks, nurses and coolies were twice sent across the sea. Afterwards, at the request of the authorities, similar bodies were sent either to inland hospitals or across the sea whenever a request came in to that effect. These nurses were of three kinds: (1) Those trained in the Main or some Branch Society; (2) volunteers; (3) members of other charitable organisations. For work aboard ship, both members and trained nurses served together, assembling from all Branches throughout the country.

The organisation of a hospital capable of dealing with a maximum of 200 patients at once, consisted of:—

Chief Physician	1
Assistant Physicians	4
Druggists	2
Matron	1
Nurses	40
Instrument-sharpener	1
Superintendent	1
Accountant	1
Clerk	1
Male Servants	2
Coolies or porters	6
Total	60

The materials required were,

6	hand-ambulances
4	tents
12	stretchers
210	sick-robos
220	beds
220	wadded coats
250	lined garments
210	single-thickness garments
210	shirts
250	girdles
800	sets of blankets
210	mattresses
210	pillows

210	pillow-cases
500	sets of bedding
50	mosquito-nets*

All the above were for the use of patients only. For the staff were further required,—

180	sets of blankets
60	mattresses
60	pillows
60	pillow-cases
20	sets of bedding
15	mosquito-nets*

### III.—RELIEF OF THE WOUNDED.

FROM the inception of the War, the Red Cross Society was most active in rendering relief to the sick and wounded ; nor did this noble service come to an end until the tranquillization of Formosa was definitely assured. The work undertaken in this direction was of such vast magnitude and so complex, that we are unable to treat of it under any one heading. This section, therefore, must be divided into the following five sub-divisions, each of which will receive special treatment :—

- (1) Work at the Inland Reserve Military Hospitals ;
- (2) Relief of Wounded Chinese ;
- (3) Work at the Over-sea Commissariat Hospitals ;
- (4) Relief on Shipboard ;
- (5) Relief of the Wounded in Formosa.

#### 1.—WORK IN THE INLAND RESERVE MILITARY HOSPITALS.

IT was on August 3rd, 1894, that the first body of nurses etc., was sent to Hiroshima by the Red Cross. These nurses thereafter

---

\* Capable of covering four beds.



WARD IN THE HIROSHIMA MILITARY HOSPITAL.

continued actively working, and, by December, 1895, the Society had sent assistants and nurses to no less than 11 Inland Reserve Military Hospitals. At the Hiroshima Hospital there was the largest number of Red Cross employés, the work there being most important. Actual operations began here on August 9th, 1894. At first the Red Cross nurses were engaged in the First Section of the Hiroshima Military Hospital, with accommodations for only 100 patients; but by the end by September, the number of nurses, patients and all else had very greatly increased. Four hundred patients could then be attended to; and the nurses for this number of sick and wounded were divided into two bands or shifts. These two bands were simultaneously engaged in work in more than half of the First Branch Hospital, simultaneously with their attending patients in the Main Hospital. Sometimes they divided these labours with the members of the Sanitary Corps; sometimes again they worked in co-operation. After this time, however, they became increasingly busy until, in November, sufficient doctors and nurses to look after 200 additional patients

were sent from the Hiroshima, Okayama, Tokushima, Yamaguchi, Shimane, Ōsaka, Kagoshima, and Kyōto Branches of the Red Cross. This new corps was engaged in one section of the Third Branch Hospital at Hiroshima. Work at Hiroshima was finally relinquished on July 31st, 1895.

Relief work at the Tōkyō Reserve Military Hospital began on January 21st, 1895. The Third Branch of this Hospital was built close beside the large Hospital belonging to the Red Cross. Later on, many temporary buildings were erected for the con-



SCENE IN THE HIROSHIMA MILITARY HOSPITAL.

venience of incoming patients, as the main buildings grew overcrowded. In order to keep pace with the demand for physicians and trained nurses, the Society was repeatedly compelled to increase its number of workers; and about fifty nurses each were sent from the Branches in Hokkaidō, Hyōgo, Nagasaki, Gumma, Ishikaya, Shimané, and Yamaguchi. Work in the Tōkyō Reserve Hospital concluded on June 31st.

At the Matsuyama Military Hospital, Red Cross relief

operations began in January 10th, 1895, and continued to June 30th of the same year. This work was undertaken by a corps sent from the Ehimé Branch of the Red Cross.

Both the Nagoya and Toyohashi Reserve Military Hospitals received assistance from the Nagoya Branch of the Red Cross. In each of those hospitals, one section was entirely in charge of the Red Cross. Work at Nagoya continued from February 28th, 1895, to June 25th, same year; at Toyohashi, from March 22nd until the same date in June.

Relief work in the Kumamoto Reserve Military Hospital was undertaken by the Kumamoto Branch of the Red Cross, aided by several nurses sent from the Kagoshima Branch. Here, as elsewhere, one part of the hospital was put in the hands of the great Society. The work began in March, 1895, and ended on June 23rd, of the same year.

The Sendai Reserve Military Hospital received a Red Cross contingent from the Society's Miyagi Branch. Beginning with May 25th, 1895, a large proportion of the patients came under the treatment of the Society's skilled workers. Relief work went on here until December 31st, 1895.

To the Kokura, Fukuoka and Marugame Reserve Military Hospitals, only female nurses were despatched, to wait on the sick and wounded. Red Cross work at the Kokura and Fukuoka Hospitals was superintended by the Society's Fukuoka Branch. The Nagasaki Red Cross Branch, in particular, sent many female nurses to Kokura. Work began at this place on March 10th, 1895, ending June 30th. At Fukuoka, the working period was from March 26th June 5th; at Marugame, from May 12th to June 30th:—all in 1895.

The above briefly-narrated facts are clearer in the following tabulated form:—

NAME OF HOSPITAL	NUMBER OF PATIENTS TREATED	NUMBER OF RED CROSS WORKERS	DAYS OF SERVICE
Hiroshima	5088	284	357
Tōkyō	2107	288	161
Matsuyama	371	32	173
Nagoya	377	41	118

Toyohashi	181	16	96
Kumamoto	849	49	109
Sendai	465	41	214
Fukuoka	—	11	102
Kokura	—	22	102
Marugame	—	19	50
Total	9438	804	1482



SCENE IN THE THIRD WARD OF THE HIROSHIMA MILITARY HOSPITAL.

## 2.—RELIEF OF CHINESE WOUNDED.

ONE of the chief and noblest features of the Red Cross is that it makes no discrimination between friend and foe: both are treated with the same tender care. China had not, and has not, joined the Red Cross; yet it was incumbent upon Japan to give relief to the Chinese wounded, whenever the latter were deprived of any further power of resistance. China completely failed to understand Japan's intentions in this direction and actually, as we have seen, fired repeatedly on those bringing succour to the

wounded and dying on the field of battle. The Red Cross Society of Japan paid special attention to the means of relief of disabled foes, and certain opinions in this matter were transmitted to the proper office. Beginning with October, 1894, when Chinese wounded were first brought over to Japan, there was some little talk between the proper office and the Society. Yet the Red Cross continued ministering to wounded Chinese until the last man was sent back to the conquered Empire—in August, 1895. Relief work in this direction was carried on in the hospitals in Tōkyō, Nagoya, Toyohashi and Ōsaka. Wounded Chinese captives were, in Tōkyō, taken directly into the Red Cross Hospital, the treatment of such patients beginning on October 16th, 1894, and continuing until January 19th, 1895. The Nagoya Branch of the Red Cross sent workers to Toyohashi, where the Chinese wounded received medical treatment in the Ryūten-ji, a local Buddhist temple, converted into a temporary hospital. At Nagoya the Chinese patients were housed in another Buddhist temple, the Kenchū-ji. Relief work in these two cities continued from October 15th, 1894, to August 12th of the following year. With regard to Ōsaka, Chinese patients were treated at the Ōsaka Reserve Military Hospital, medical assistants being sent thither from the local Branch of the Red Cross, and the good work continued here until the Chinese were definitely sent from Japan to their native land, on August 13th, 1895. We must further mention that many Chinese wounded were nursed by the Red Cross at the Commissariat Hospital at Liushu-tun, Manchuria. Very many prisoners were here rescued by the Society's nurses from a sad death. The statistics are as follow:—

PLACE WHERE CHINESE PATIENTS WERE TREATED	NUMBER OF PATIENTS CURED.	NUMBER OF NURSES ETC. ENGAGED.	NUMBER OF DAYS AT WORK.
Tōkyō	55	28	59
Nagoya	299	10	302
Toyohashi	186	6	302
Ōsaka	999	24	214
Liushu-tun*	35	—	—
Total	1484	68	914

\* The patients temporarily treated or whose wounds were simply diagnosed at Matsuyama, are not included.



3.—RELIEF WORK AT THE COMMISSARIAT HOSPITALS OVER-SEA,  
AND THE TEMPORARY MILITARY HOSPITALS.

THERE were no less than three sending of Red Cross workers to Korea and China. The first number consisted of a corps supplied with everything necessary to accommodate and treat 200 patients. This corps left Japan for Korea on September 2nd, 1894. In the Peninsula, at Chemulpho, a Red Cross Military Hospital was speedily constructed, and here large numbers of wounded and sick were most tenderly cared for during the space of one month. After this, in consequence of an order received, the Red Cross Corps went on to Phyöngyang and there served in the Commissariat Hospital. Some of the workers were later on sent to the Wiju and Inhhön Commissariat Hospitals and the Branch of the Ki-shan Hospital; also to the temporary sick-barracks at Chin-nanpho. Work was carried on in these places until April 30th, 1895.

During this period, either in or out of the various hospitals, no less than 5213 patients were treated, the localities where medical attendance was given to the sick and wounded being Inhhön, Phyöngyang, Yongchön, Wiju, Nampho, Ki-shan and one or two others. The number of days of work amounted to 390 in all. With regard to Ki-shan, only a few druggists were despatched thither, so these are not included in the above figures.

On October 19th, 1894, a body of physicians, druggists, managers, clerks and nurses was sent to Korea, taking with them everything necessary to accommodate 200 patients. These nurses constituted the second corps sent out. At first they proceeded to the Ul-ön-tong Commissariat, where they were for several months most actively employed. During this time some were sent on to Kuinpho, to work in connection with the Military Sanitary Corps. Thereafter they were instructed to go to Liushu-tun, China, where they again stayed for some time. The corps had mean while been divided into two sections, one of which was thereupon stationed at Kinchow, while the other went on to Port Arthur. They were engaged at the Kinchow Commissariat and Charité Hospitals under the local Government Office,

and well as in those at Port Arthur. Two Charité Hospitals had been erected at the expense of the Japanese Government, and here the Red Cross workers did most excellent service. The Chinese treated at these institutions in Kinchow and Port Arthur were very numerous, and loud in their praise of their benefactors. Work here was ended on May 27th, 1895. The number of patients successfully treated by the Red Cross in these places, was 6965, no less than 379 days being spent in the unselfish enterprise.

We come finally to the third sending of Red Cross physicians, nurses, etc. This took place on December 17th, 1894, when the Society sent a number of assistants to the Commissariat of the First Army Corps. No materials were taken across, as the War Department had declared these unnecessary. After reaching their destination, one-half of the workers served in the Military Hospital at Changliung, Korea. Later on they joined hands with the corps sent out first, and worked in the Military Hospital at Yongchön. The other half were distributed to among the Military Hospital at Taku-shan, China; the sick-wards at Tu-ching-tse, and Chin-toi-tse. This third corps finished its service on April 17th, 1895. Of patients 6770 had been treated, and 152 days spent in so doing. Altogether 18,948 sick and wounded were treated by these three corps sent out by the Red Cross of Japan. Among these patients were 1333 Koreans and 869 Chinese.

---

#### 4.—RELIEF WORK ON SHIPBOARD.

THE Society was early directed by the Government to send 6 physicians and 12 nurses on board the Government Military Transports. This order was carried out on September 23rd, 1894, and, from October 1st, work was begun on board the transports conveying the sick and wounded back to Japan. On December 10th this work was, in consequence of orders, interrupted, but resumed on March, 1895. The Society further despatched 100 physicians and 300 male and female nurses to serve on shipboard.

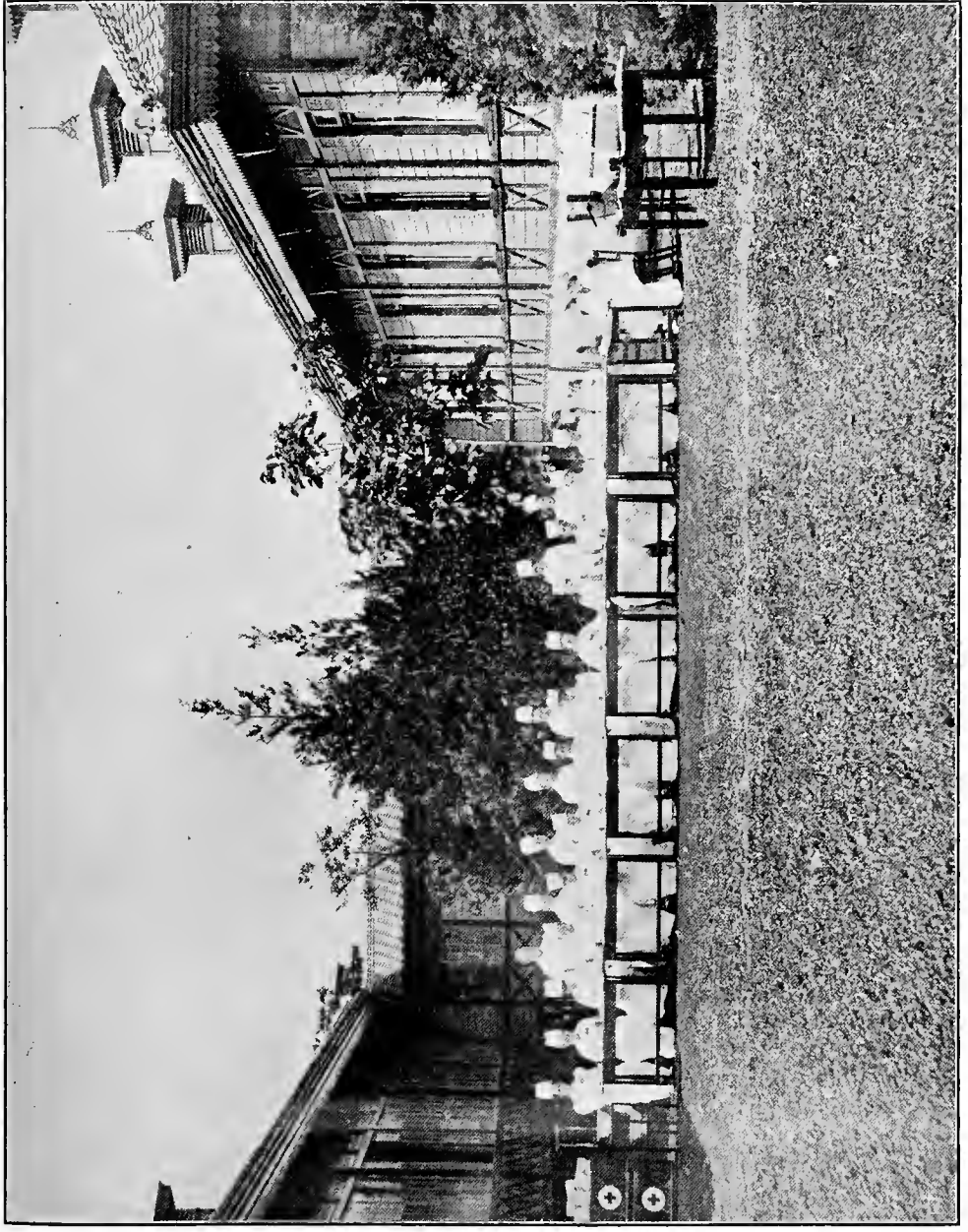
These were distributed among 100 transports, and there served in preserving sanitary measures and treating the sick and wounded until February 6th, 1896. Ujina, the port of Hiroshima, was made the basis of operations, and voyages were made thence to the Korean ports; Fongteng-shang, Shantung and Chihli-shang in China; Formosa; and the Pescadores. And in all instance the work was not confined to those invalided home, but the sick among the soldiers or ships' crews were equally administered to. The first little band sent out treated 4158 patients on ship-board, 253 of whom were promptly restored to health. Eighteen physicians and nurses worked in this connection for 65 days. The second large corps superintended the transportation of 33,964 patients, 25,108 of whom were cured. In doing this 478 Red Cross workers were engaged, their service covering a period of 478 days.

---

#### 5.—RELIEF WORK IN FORMOSA.

AN Army Corps was sent to Formosa on July 13th, 1895, in order to tranquillize the island and put a quick end to the famous "Ten-days' Republic." The Red Cross accordingly sent 55 physicians, nurses, etc. to Formosa. Ever since May 25th the workers had been employed in the Military Hospital at Keelung, and these went, later on, to the Taipeh Military Hospital. On November 11th the work came an end; and in a period of 103 days no less than 9249 patients had been treated.

It may not be amiss to briefly sum up the foregoing. The work of the Japan Red Cross Society, in connection with the War, stretched over three years: beginning in 1894 and ending in 1896. The vast number of 1600 men and women took part in this noble service. They were exposed to the chill and frost of Manchuria and the fever-heat of Formosa; yet none ever grew weary or complained of the weight of toil. They esteemed it the greatest of virtues to show their gratitude in this grand way to their country, while they did everything to convince the actual combatants of their affectionate, unselfish regard. Some fell ill while engaged



A MEETING OF THE LADIES VOLUNTEER MEDICAL AID SOCIETY AT THE TOKYO. RED CROSS HOSPITAL.



in the work; others succumbed to the contagion of disease or their own unremitting toil. Twenty-five of the whole number died either on foreign soil or on shipboard. Yet, with disease raging about them, no one ever faltered or lost courage. The record of the Red Cross in Japan is thus a most heroic one; and shows, better than perhaps aught else, that the Japanese have qualities which we foreigners can only admire and would do well to imitate.

---

#### IV.—CHARITABLE AND PATRIOTIC ENTERPRISES.

WITH regard to the conveyance of gifts made the Japanese Army and Navy either by their own countrymen or friendly foreigners, the donors were requested to pay the cost of freight, etc., the goods thereafter being conveyed to a place appointed by the military or naval authorities. This reason prevented many people from making the gifts they desired to offer, simply because they were not in a condition to pay for the carriage. So soon as this was brought to the notice of the Society, it was resolved to act as a go-between or conveyancer of the gifts made; thus at once giving the people every opportunity to show their esteem for the troops afloat or afield and enlarging the scope of the Society's noble charities. To this effect, the Directors consulted with the various railway and steamship companies; as well as other forwarding agencies, and made some special contracts. A method was thus devised by which presents could be forwarded to the troops without the donors having to pay for carriage; and this method at once received the official sanction of the Military Relief Bureau and Naval Paymaster's Department. The matter was thereupon brought to the notice of all local Branches of the Red Cross, and the news soon spread everywhere. Upon the work actually beginning, it was pushed forward with extraordinary zeal by the Main Office and local Branches of the Society.

Following this means of conveyance, the people, with patriotic zeal, began at once to prepare all sorts of gifts for those fighting or about to fight the battles of the nation. In a very little while the

amount of these free-will offerings grew enormous, prompt carriage to their destination becoming wholly impossible. This gave rise to considerable regret and dissatisfaction, the people being at their wits' end as to what to do. Here the Red Cross stepped into the breach, and successfully solved the problem, to the unlimited gratitude of all concerned. But in January of 1895, the number of places to which gifts were forwarded having greatly increased in the meantime, the Authorities were, unaided, able to serve the convenience of the donating public. The Red Cross therefore was no longer compelled to carry on this branch of its multifarious work ; and the Society's conveyance of gifts ended on January 20th. During the months in which the Society had been charged with this duty, 49,981 parcels were conveyed to the forces afield, and 6781 parcels to those afloat. These figures give some idea of the magnitude of the undertaking.

But this was not all. The Society moreover entertained the troops on the way to the front whenever any railroad terminus was reached, and saw that all were kept in the best of humours. With equal generosity, the troops were speeded on their journey to the front, or welcomed in triumph on their return. Here the work of the Red Cross was of immense practical good ; and as the members did everything with the utmost patriotic ardor, they were utterly successful in this as well as in all their other enterprises.

When the Army Divisions gathered from various part of the Empire and were borne by rail to Ujina, members of the Red Cross—by special permission of the military and naval authorities as well as of the railway companies—greeted the passing troops at all the larger stations, much being done to ensure the comfort and happiness of the travellers. Upon conferring with the various Inland Branches, the Red Cross Society determined to have committees sent to each station at which the trains halted, there to entertain the soldiers in the most generous and cordial manner. Each committee moreover included physicians and nurses, ready to serve in case of sudden sickness on the road. Hot water and tea were served to all, with gifts of cigarettes, towels, various eatables, and many other useful things. The members of the committees in each place made a point of being

at the station whenever a train passed through. In some localities excellent dinners were provided for all, with gifts too numerous to mention. In this way the parting soldiers were made to feel the nation's love and esteem, and so each one started with the resolve to do his uttermost.

Similarly, whenever Japanese men-of-war or other vessels taking part in the conflict, put into any Admiralty Port, the local Red Cross Branch

sent its members on board to greet the brave crews and make gifts of various kinds. The Navy was thus quite as hospitably treated as was the Army. In May, 1895, the victorious troops came home, to be fêted by the grateful nation. Triumphal arches were reared, the school-children turned out *en masses* and the Red Cross associates gave the troops a glorious welcome at every station. It was one long continuous triumph, from Ujina to Sendai. Again,

when the garrisons left behind in Korea, Port Authur, Wei-hai-wei and elsewhere returned to their native land, the same thrilling scenes were re-enacted. The members of the noble Red Cross vied in their eagerness to give the war-worn veterans a memorable home-coming.

At various stations, 2370 patients came under the treatment



H. I. H. PRINCESS KOMATSU.



of the Red Cross, and physicians and nurses were sent out from Tōkyō and many local Branches.

V.—LADIES' VOLUNTEER AID SOCIETY.

H. I. H. PRINCESS KOMATSU convened, on August 8th, 1894, a general meeting of the Ladies' Volunteer Nursing Society, of which Her Imperial Highness was the President. At this meeting it was consulted what steps the members should take in order



VISCOUNTESS NIREI.

to best serve the nation's interests; and the resolution was arrived at that the members should make antiseptic bandages and present those to the Army and Navy. Despite the great heat of this summer month, the President and many members thereafter met almost daily in the rooms of the Tōkyō Red Cross Hospital, and there worked indefatigably in the preparation of bandages. Towards the beginning of September enough had been made for 13,000 patients. In December of the same year, Surgeon-General Ishiguro sent in a request for a

quantity of "packet bandages.\*" Work beginning on January 9th, despite the great cold the ladies assembled daily at the Red Cross Hospital, and soon had 15,000 packet bandages prepared. Viscountess Nirei, one of the most assiduous members, served as manager of the nurses and male assistants, at the Hiroshima Reserve Military Hospital, sent out by the Red Cross. She stayed at the Hiroshima Military Hospital for several months, beginning with September, 1894. On the other hand, in May,

\* *Hōri Ko-tsutsumi*, a special kind of bandage prepared according to a secret formula.

1895, Marchioness Nabeshima, Countess Ogasawara, Viscountess Tanaka and Viscountess Uramatsu, together with 10 other ladies of rank, served as nurses in the Tōkyō Military Hospital, much of their time being given to the treatment of Chinese patients. Nor were the members in the provinces less idle. The ladies of the Hokkaidō Branch forwarded 1000 each of rolled bandages and safety pins. Moreover they took a share in waiting on the wounded in the Tōkyō Military Hospital. The members of the Shizuoka Branch, at the instigation of their local President (Madame Komatsubara, wife of the Governor of Shizuoka), presented several thousand bandages, long shirts and a goodly sum of money. The Kumamoto ladies erected a factory for the manufacturing

of bandages for the Kumamoto Military Hospital. Here several tens of thousands of bandages of various material and all sizes, were produced. The ladies also helped the trained nurses sent down from Tōkyō, and rendered efficient service in the sick-wards. In Gumma Prefecture, Mrs. Kōno, wife of Colonel Kōno, founded a Society under the style of the "Takasaki Officers' Families' Volunteer Medical Aid Society." Many hundred antiseptic bandages were made by the zealous members, and forwarded in due course to the Red Cross Head Quarters.



MARCHIONESS NABESHIMA.

These bandages were intended for the use of the Military Hospital at Takasaki. Turning to the Niigata Branch, whose President was the wife of the provincial Governor, we find the ladies similarly engaged in making lint and bandages, thousands of which were produced. The members of the Tokushima Branch—numbering about 10 in all—made common cause with the trained assistants sent out, and served most faithfully, often in a menial capacity, in the Hiroshima Military Hospital. The President of this Branch was the wife of the local Governor, Mr.

Murakami. The Hyōgo Branch, which had 34 members on the rolls, under the presidency of the wife of Governor Shūfu of this prefecture, went day and night to the Kōbe Station to meet the trains carrying the troops. In this manner they manage to do a vast amount of good, being able to attend on the spot to those in need of careful medical treatment, or who had been taken ill while on the road. And even in those districts where there were no organised Branches, the local ladies gladly assisted in the nearest Military Hospitals, irrespective of their not belonging to any Aid Society.

---

VI.—RELATION BETWEEN THE RED CROSS OF JAPAN  
AND OTHER COUNTRIES.

WHEN the news of the outbreak of the War reached Europe, the Central Office of the World's Red Cross Society, at Geneva, at once forwarded a sum of money to the Japanese Society, in order to aid the good work. Moreover this Central Office sent word to the various Red Cross Societies in Europe and America, advising that the Japanese Society should be made the recipient of gifts of money or other necessary things. This advice was promptly adopted and, one after the other, the various Red Cross organisations of many lands hastened to give Japan tangible proof of their sympathy. From the Central Office came a gift of 719 *yen* 42 *sen*; from the Dutch East Indies was sent 1971 *yen* 96 *sen*; while the Austrian Red Cross presented 1775 *yen* 20 *sen*. The Russian Society forwarded the necessary materials for the accomodation and treatment of 25 patients. Germany sent in 12 boxes of fine surgical instruments. Three other boxes were forwarded from the French Society.

The Red Cross of a belligerent may claim the assistance of similar organisations in neutral Treaty Powers. This point has been clearly determined. But though Japan did not take advantage of this clause, the Red Cross Societies of the above enumerated nations hastened to follow the suggestion made by the Central Office, and sent free will offerings to the sister Society in Japan.

This is something which redounds to the credit of all concerned, and will long linger in the memory of the Japanese. From the month of October, 1894, the Red Cross of Japan sent regular reports on the work done to the Central Council at Geneva. These reports were as regularly reproduced in the publications of the Central Society, and thus the work of the Red Cross in Japan became known the world over. The Japanese reports were translated in the Red Cross Transactions of France, Germany, Italy and Spain. Journals and magazines published in Europe and America made numerous excerpts from these reports, though, unfortunately, not always without mistake. Finally it was a great honour to Japan that her Red Cross extended its noble charities to the Chinese, albeit that Empire was without the pale of the Society. But more than ever did it become apparent in this War that the Red Cross implies universal brotherhood and the broadest charity.

---

#### VII.—INCOME AND EXPENDITURE.

WHEN the War began, the funds of the Society were small. There being thus some reason to apprehend a lack of money, a circular was sent out on August 3rd, 1894—the second day after the declaration of hostilities—calling upon all to contribute to the good cause. The loyal ardour of those at home increasing with the spread of the War, gifts of money and many other things continued to pour in until after the first tranquillization of Formosa. In all, 75,401 *yen* 65 *sen* 9 *rin* was contributed by Japanese and foreign sympathisers; while 292,277 gifts in kind (of 371 different descriptions) were made by 45,826 individuals and 305 Societies.

At first, neither at the Society's Head Quarters nor among the local Branches was there a sufficiency of money to work with, and, towards the end of May, 1894, the lists showed 55,061 members, from whom the sum of 145,000 *yen* was expected. But the patriotic zeal of the people caused them to become enrolled in the Society by thousands; some days showing several hundred new

members at once. On April 30th, 1896, the total number of members was 201,011, whose contributions for one year reached the large sum of 538,223 *yen*. Contributions from outside amounted to 75,400 *yen*, as we have seen; and to this must be added the generous donations of the Imperial Family. And so the work went on without a hitch; nor was the lack of money ever felt.

The expenditure of the Society during the War months, was as follows:—

	<i>Yen</i>
Cost of medical treatment	210,692.82
Cost of fêting the troops	21,406.49
Cost of collecting gifts, etc.	7,644.23
Cost of carriage, correspondence, visiting the sick and the expenses of those engaged in the work, in- cluding sundry expenses	} 147,587.49
Total	<hr/> 386,971.40

So soon as the Society's funds had reached a flourishing condition, still more energetic steps were taken to demonstrate the Society's three great principles: honour to the brave, loyalty to the country, and charity to all men. And with this resolve, the Red Cross of Japan surely won for itself immortal fame.

---

#### VIII.—THE IMPERIAL FAMILY AND THE RED CROSS.

FROM the outset, H. M. the Empress has taken the liveliest interest in the welfare and spread of the Red Cross in Japan. On the outbreak of the War, Her Imperial Majesty, eager to alleviate the sufferings of the wounded, set to work with the palace ladies to make bandages. Six thousand bandages were sent from the Imperial Household to the Society, on October 13th, 1894. These precious gifts were most gratefully received and distributed among the various Naval and Military Hospitals. Hearing of this, a number of French Red Cross ladies in the fair Republic sent a box of bandage-making machinery to H. M. the Empress, thus evincing their sympathy with the Imperial bene-

volence and toil. On January 31st the box was handed over to Society, with instructions to make a through test of the machinery and compare it with that made in Japan.

On December 25th, 1894, T. I. H. Princesses Tsune and Kane gave each 100 *yen* to the Red Cross fund. And on October 30th, 1895, an Imperial Edict was pronounced, praising the Society—to the heartfelt gratitude of the members. The words ran:—"During the War of the 27th and 28th years of *Meiji* (1894-1895), you rendered great assistance to the Military Sanitary Corps, and did your duty well. We herewith express Our deep satisfaction with your work." Again, on November 1st, 1895, H. M. the Empress sent the following Imperial message to the Red Cross:—"During the War of the 27th and 28th years of *Meiji*, you conjointly assisted in restoring many wounded Japanese and Chinese to health. You further rendered efficient aid to the Sanitary Corps in the Army and Navy; thus showing the spirit of charity towards all. We admire this greatly."

It is hardly necessary to add that the Imperial interest thus shown in the working of the Society, has done much towards stimulating the members to renewed and still greater philanthropic effort.



WIFE AND SON OF THE GOVERNOR OF  
TOKUSHIMA PREFECTURE.

#### IX.—THE GOVERNOR'S WIFE.

MRS. MURAKAMI MASU-KO, the wife of the local Governor of Tokushima Prefecture, is about forty years of age. This refined woman from childhood has been marked for her virtues. Feeling that she owed a duty to her country, when the clouds of war gathered over it, she made up her mind that, in the capacity of a

Hospital nurse or employée, she might be truly useful. With this lofty, unselfish purpose she went to Hiroshima, where she made her petition to the Red Cross Society to be allowed to enter the service; but as she could not be qualified for any special work, she offered to do whatever might be required. On the consent of the Society being obtained, Mrs. Murakami was taken into the Reserve Military Hospital. Here she assisted in attending to the patients, giving medicine, sweeping or washing up the floors, and washing the patients' clothes. Her example was infectious, the other nurses displaying even greater energy and diligence than before. This lady's third son seems to have caught his mother's spirit, for so greatly did he desire to take some active part in the War that he actually enrolled himself as a coolie, and thereafter engaged in severe manual labour without a thought of regret. Count Saigō, Minister of the Navy, heard of this young man's admirable spirit, and obtained for him a better post in the Commissariat at Kinchow. Only such a mother could have given birth to such a son.

---

X.—MISS IWASAKI YUKI-KO,

THE Third Branch of the Hiroshima Military Reserve Hospital was filled to overflowing with soldiers stricken with epidemic diseases of the worst type; so the nurses on duty there had to disinfect themselves. To this Branch the Kyōto Red Cross had despatched a body of fifty assistants, including physicians, nurses, etc., and these superintended five wards containing 40 patients each. Among the nurses was a young girl, eighteen years of age, named Yuki-ko\*. Her father, Iwasaki Fusajirō by name, was native of Sogabé village, Tamba Province. Miss Yuki joined the work in November, 1894, and laboured most faithfully and untiringly for several months. But, most unfortunately, she contracted abdominal typhus and

---

\* *Yuki* means "snow"; *Ko*, literally "child", is a polite suffix to female names, like our own "Miss".

despite tender care fell a victim to the scourge on April 25th, 1895. The father was at once sent for, and, when he came, the Superintendent of the Hospital had the Manager, Mr. Shimizu, speak to the bereaved father of his daughter's death. "It may be", said Mr. Shimizu, "that you feel bitter grief at the death of your daughter; but let me tell you that she died like a soldier at his post: for in nursing epidemic patients there is quite as much danger as on the field of battle. I can thus say, with justice, that she died for her country; and this thought should give you joy in your grief." "Sir," replied the patriot, wiping away the tears that in spite of him rolled down his cheeks, "long ago I served my country, though in an unimportant way, by offering what money I had to my then feudal lord. But now I am old, and only second headman of my village; nor am I able to offer my poor services to my country. Moreover I have seven children, all young, and none of these could go with the Army. This reflection has been a pregnant source of anxious regret to me. But now that I hear my daughter, in a small way, has been so blessed as to serve our country, my dearest hope has been fulfilled. Have no fear that I shall grieve over my daughter's death!" The by-standers could not keep back the tears on hearing these noble words, while the father recovered his composure and remained thenceforth dry-eyed. His calm fortitude seemed to them more touching than loud lamentation would have been.



MISS IWASAKI YUKI.



## CHAPTER XXXI.

### THOSE AT HOME.

#### 1.—MRS. SATŌ.

THE following unburnished facts, revealing in their utter simplicity the character of the women of Japan, are not without interest and instruction, proving, as they do, that the qualities of true womanhood are not limited to what we have been

pleased to call our higher civilization, but that these eminent attributes glow in the hearts and shine in the actions of women here, thus proving them to be worthy mothers and companions of the island heroes whose virtues we extol.



MRS. SATŌ.

Colonel Satō Tadashi was the Commander of the 18th Regiment, Third Division, and it was he who led the fierce attack at the battle of Phyōngyang with a portion of the Wōnsan troops. Mrs. Satō Nao-ko, wife of the gallant Colonel, has long been noted for her superior capacities and sagacity. After the departure of her husband for the

seat of war she not only continued the instruction of her children and carefully superintended all her domestic affairs with the utmost prudence and economy; but she was so moved with compassion and patriotism that she determined to do all in her power to alleviate the suffering of those soldiers who were wounded while fighting under her husband, and also to meet the dire

necessities of those wives and families of non-commissioned officers and men, whose husbands might be disabled or killed.

With economic heroism she went to the Toyokawa river with the women, to wash cotton cloths which they made into bandages. At one time she sent a letter enclosing twenty-two *yen* with condolences to the families of forty-four men who had sacrificed their lives for their country.

The men were from Shizuoka and its vicinity, and to the editor of the *Shizuoka Min-yū*, a local paper, she wrote,—

“Dear Sir,

The gentlemen mentioned in the accompanying list were brave soldiers who honorably died for their country while fighting under my husband. Though their death is so meritorious that we must rejoice, still the hearts of those they have left must be filled with grief because their beloved have died far from home, in a foreign land. I hope you will mercifully condole with them in their sorrow by showing due sympathy. I shall be greatly obliged if you will do me the favor of distributing this small and totally inadequate sum among the survivors of these deceased patriots.

Yours truly,

Satō Nao-ko.”

On another occasion Mrs. Satō sent a contribution to 18 families in Aichi whose men had fallen on the battle field. This sum was intrusted to the Aichi Branch of the Red Cross Society. These contributions continued until November. Since then this honorable and self-sacrificing lady has given the sum of seventy-five *yen* to one hundred and fifty families in the prefectures of Aichi and Shizuoka, whose soldier-boys had given their lives for the glory of their country. The Red Cross Society took charge of these gifts and their distribution.\*

---

## 2.—THE MOTHER OF GENERAL NOZU MICHITSURA.\*

THE lady of the late Lieut.-General Nozu Shige-o became the

---

\* These and all other paragraphs marked with an asterisk (\*), were penned by the late Mrs. A. V. R. Eastlake.

foster-mother of the present famous officer, as she adopted him when a boy. She is well advanced in years and suffering from lameness, but still vigorous and noted for her good sense.

She gave a parting entertainment and dinner at the Sanryokutei, a famous restaurant in Shiba Park, Tōkyō, to several soldiers who were about leaving for their posts of duty. The lady herself was attended by Mrs. Nakagawa, the wife of Captain Nakagawa Taka-o, and Mrs. Kōno, the wife of Lieutenant-Colonel Kōno.

While the enthusiastic conversation about the war was at its height, the old lady turned to these her companion guests and said:—"I have heard, my dears, that your sympathy for your absent husbands is so great that, on account of the inconvenience and discomforts of their military life, you have been depriving yourselves of your usual food, and are also wearing fewer articles of dress recently, despite the colder weather; and that this is the cause of your palor and distressed appearance. Now I would not necessarily blame your conduct, but, really, I think I may say that it will not be conducive to the happiness of your husbands to receive information of your unhealthy condition; nor do I think such self-immolation can be estimated as beneficial or for the good of your country. You are perfectly justifiable in refraining from wearing gaudy or attractive dresses; but your health is of the utmost importance both for the comfort of your husbands and the education of your children: is it not so? As for me, no hope attracts, no admiration impels, but I know that my son, Michitsura, is anxious about my health, and therefore, notwithstanding my disabled foot, I take a walk every day from Shiba Park to Shimbashi."

The two younger ladies felt abashed at their own shallow evidences of true loyalty to their absent warriors, and were convinced of the wisdom of this friendly advice, and promised they would obey the suggestions of the venerable lady.

It is said, that, despite her failing eyesight, this dear old lady spun with her own hands the silk to make a new coat for the General to wear in the cold weather, and when the *haori* was finished had it forwarded to the camp in the Liaotung Peninsula.

## 3.—PATRIOTISM OF A POOR WOMAN.\*

FROM the report of the Tōkyō Military Hospital, we quote the following ;

“ A woman having heard that wounded soldiers were sent to this place in order to hasten their convalescence and complete their recovery, started out at an early hour every morning to gather edible sea-weed, until at last she had accumulated one hundred sheets. These she sent to us, to show, as she said, her desire to return even if only one ten-thousandth part of the favors she had received from her dear country.”

The facts are thus :—This grateful woman lived by the cave on Enoshima, in great penury, with her husband and five little children ; but upon hearing that wounded soldiers were near, at the Kugenuma Hospital, spent every leisure moment, going out in the early dawn, to gather this sea-weed, that she might thus in her humble way do something to give vent to the burning patriotism that filled and inspired her whole nature.

“ I love thee, my country, O that thou must know !  
But how much I love thee I never can show.”

## 4.—MAJOR-GENERAL NOGI'S FAMILY.

DURING the absence of Major-General Nogi, his family lived with the utmost frugality, grudging any but the most necessary expense. The money thus saved was divided among the families of such poor people as had lost husbands or fathers in the war. The families thus assisted were in Tōkyō and Kanagawa, Yamana-shi, Gumma, Saitama and Nagano Prefectures. To each bereaved household was given 50 *yen* a month from September, 1894, until March, 1896. On another occasion a gift of 138,000 cigarettes was made by the Nogi family to those natives of Tōkyō and the above-enumerated prefectures who were at the seat of war. So at home as well as abroad, the members of the house of

Nogi deserved the thanks of their fellow-citizens and their country.

---

5.—A LOYAL HEART.

FURUKAWA TOKICHI, a native of Tsu, in Miye Prefecture, was a soldier in the Third Division. His family consisted only of his mother and himself, yet it was hard work to get enough to live on.

Under the circumstances, he received permission to return to his



MRS. FURUKAWA.

home before his actual of military service was over. When the war began, he was

recalled. But being so greatly anxious about his mother and what she would do in his absence, he appeared to hesitate. On this,

his loyal mother sternly said: "The great duty of serving one's country cannot be put off for the sake of the lesser duties of one's

home. Though I should die of starvation,

you dare not hesitate. You must not think of me but of your country, our country!" Tokichi was powerfully stirred by these words and sprang up at once to go, although the hot tears coursed

down his cheeks. All through the war he distinguished himself by his excellent conduct.

---

6.—A FAMOUS SWORD.

THE late Miyoshi Hyo-emon was a man of considerable fame, having been one of the chief vassals of the feudal lord of Hisai, Province of Isé. His grandson, Miyoshi Osamu, was a soldier in the Third Division, stationed at Nagoya. On war with China being announced, Miyoshi expected that his Regiment would soon be sent to the front; so he wrote to his grandmother, still resident in Hisai, to tell her all about it. Mrs. Miyoshi Kini-ko, the grandmother, was delighted with the news, and wrote as follows in

reply:—"Now is the time for a soldier to win fame. Never worry about affairs at home, but devote all your energies to serving His Imperial Majesty and our country." She sent at the same time a famous sword that had for centuries been in the possession of the Miyoshi family, and added: "You have often asked me to give you this, and I have as often refused. But now I send the great weapon to you. Wear it and use it well, for the honour of our family and your own fame."

---

## 7.—MRS. CAPTAIN KITAGAWA.

ON the outbreak of hostilities between the two great Empires of the Far East, Captain of Engineers Kitagawa was away from Japan, prosecuting his studies in Germany. Gin-ko, or "Silver," Kitagawa, the Captain's wife, in default of seeing her husband off to the War, resolved to do something herself even if very little, to help on the great work. So she dismissed all the servants and reduced her household expenditure to a minimum, saving all she could to devote her money to the one purpose. After some thought, she concluded that the most practical thing she could make and offer to the soldiers afield would be warm mittens, to protect their hands from the severe cold. Her own mother was very sick at the time and needed constant attendance; moreover "Silver" had to do the whole household work unaided. But by dint of denying herself sleep and rest she managed to knit no less than 530 pairs of fine fleecy-lined mittens. These she then sent to the Red Cross Society for distribution. The mittens were of most excellent and durable make, so that her patriotic labour kept many a hard-worked soldier from having frost-bitten hands.

---

## 8.—A LOVING MOTHER'S SON.

MORIGUCHI RISUKE, a second-class private of the Seventh

Company, 19th Regiment, Third Army Division, suffered on the march through Korea very greatly from dysentery, and had finally to enter the hospital attached to the Commissariat at Haisan. On becoming slightly convalescent he was to be invalided home; but he begged most earnestly to be permitted to follow after the Main Body of the forces, hoping to catch up with his Company. To his request the surgeons replied: "There is no place in which you could pass the nights while on the road, and it would be difficult if not impossible to get enough food to live on. In your present weak condition any attempt of the kind would probably have a fatal result." "But this," cried the brave fellow, "is of course nothing more than what I expect! So I beg you to let me go in search of my Company." Seeing that his mind was made up, the surgeons reluctantly gave the desired permission, and Moriguchi set out. Not knowing either the road or where his Regiment was, the subsequent journey was one of continual hardships and exceptional difficulty. At last, after a weary march of more than one hundred miles, he came upon a Japanese camp at Chongju, on October 13th. Here, to his own overwhelming joy, he found his Commander. So great was his satisfaction that he could not speak, and the tears rolled down his wan cheeks. Contrary to all expectation, the journey while fatiguing had not killed him, and he subsequently took part in every battle of the Third Division, acting his part both bravely and manfully. On his departure from Japan his mother, who had been ill, did what she could to conceal the ravages of her sickness, and saw him off with noble and encouraging words. Much of his bold determination was due to this Spartan mother's spirit. Yet alas! before the brave son could return in triumph, the mother had died, and he might no longer see her face or hear her loved voice.

---

9.—A PATRIOT FATHER.

NAVAL Surgeon Kimura Sōsuké was the Chief Surgeon of the West Coast Fleet. When the War broke out, the father,

Kimura Kyūtarō, an old man, was confined by illness to his bed. On receiving orders to join the Fleet taking part in the expedition, the son was apprehensive that the shock of the news would prove fatal to his sick father. So, when he started, he simply told the old man that he had to leave suddenly on Government service. But, to his great surprise, the sick man said, with strange excitement, "Our country has engaged in a great war. I, weak as I am, long to be up and at work, and am greatly grieved that I can do nothing. I lie here praying constantly for the success of our arms. But you were born a *bushi* (knight, or of the military class); and having studied medicine you are employed in the Navy of this our Empire. Why are you not on board your ship? Why should you shirk your duty? Why aren't you at work healing our brave seamen and soldiers?" His voice grew louder and angrier as he spoke, so that the son told him the whole truth, to the old gentleman's intense satisfaction. Embracing his son, the dying father said, "Now I know that you are indeed my own brave son. I am very near death and cannot expect to see you again. But go and do your duty!" Bathed in tears the son left; and before long the sad news of his father's decease reached him.



ASSISTANT NAVAL SURGEON  
KIMURA.

---

#### 10.—A SOLDIER'S MOTHER.

WE vouch for the accuracy and authenticity of every anecdote narrated in this brief history of the Great War. And particularly with regard to the stories told in this chapter we have exercised the greatest caution in obtaining the exact facts. Many of these tales are at best of a homely nature, yet they give a true insight not only into the home-life and surroundings of the men who won the battles, but also into the *raison d'être* of Japanese invincibility throughout the conflict with China.



Miki Masu, the mother of Miki Chōkichi—a private of the First Company, 18th Regiment—was, in 1894, just 55 years old. By nature an earnest patriot and loyalist, the mother had trained her son to share her views and be as good a citizen as herself. On July 3rd, 1894, she left her native village of Toyoda, in Shizuoka Prefecture, in order to get to Toyohashi, where her son's Regiment, the 18th Infantry, was stationed at the time. The journey was undertaken in the hope of seeing her son once more before he started for the seat of war. In this Masu was successful, and while she was talking with her son, Sub-Lieutenant Tanaka Jisai, one of the subalterns of the First Company, happened to pass by. Chōkichi at once called her attention to the young officer and said that he had received many favours at his hands; that the Sub-Lieutenant had taught him many valuable things since he, Chōkichi, had joined the Regiment. Hearing this the good dame was most eager to get speech with the officer, who readily consented to talk to the mother of his pupil. She was delighted with the condescension of the Sub-Lieutenant, and addressed him thus:—"I have to thank you, Sir, most heartily for the kindness you have shown my son. The Regiment is, I can told, about to leave for Korea, in consequence of the political troubles there. I came here to get my son to come home for a day or so, as there is something I wish to ask of him. But my son tells me that it would not be well to go home even for a short period. So now I am come to talk face to face with my boy. My husband died when my son was only three years old. There are only the two of us in the family: he and I. Before joining this Regiment my son had married; but I have sent his wife back to her parents' house, where she will stay during Chōkichi's absence. Nor need he worry about me, as some relations will take good care of me. A soldier should have no cause for fretting about matters at home when once he has entered the Emperor's service. If he has, he is liable to make mistakes in the execution of his duty. The soldier must do his duty manfully and faithfully, and take care not to put his parents or fellow-villagers to the blush. I have just told my son that, as he has been brought up only by myself and never had a thorough education, he should be very careful of his conduct and not get laughed at for having been reared by

a widow. I have also told him that, as this expedition is for the honor of his country, he must fight gallantly ; and that when he is in battle he must be quite ready and willing to die for his Emperor and his native land. I expect to hear that he has distinguished himself. Besides all this I have added that it would be an inefaceable disgrace for his mother and fellow-villagers if he should ever play the coward. This is the only thing about which I feel at all anxious. But, thanks again to you, Sir, Chōkichi seems to be fully instructed in the duties of a loyal citizen and good patriot. So now I have nothing more to say to him or ask of him. Please, Sir, continue to instruct my son as you have done heretofore." This little speech evidently came direct from the mother's heart, and moved the young officer to admiration. With reiterated thanks the loyal dame parted from the officer and her son, and returned to her village home with a mind at rest.

Chōkichi was indeed careful to profit by his mother's patriotic advice. From first to last he did his duty in the most gallant style, frequently earning the praise of his superiors. And at the end of the war he came back uninjured to Japan, leaving a most enviable record in the Regiment.

---

## CHAPTER XXXII.

### BRIEF NOTICE.

#### I.—LIEUT.-GENERAL KAWAKAMI.

FREQUENT mention has been made in preceding chapters of Lieut.-General Kawakami, who played so important a part at Head Quarters as Vice-Chief of the General Staff, next to H. I. H. Prince Arisugawa. In addition to his other numerous duties he was Head of the

Commissariat Department, took the lead in planning the movements of troops abroad, attended to all that was necessary in case of the few accidents that occurred, and brought the War in less than a year to a most successful issue. The success attending his efforts was due to his intimate knowledge of the Chinese and their ways, as well as to his thorough acquaintance with the qualities and capabilities of the Japanese forces on land and at sea.



LIEUT.-GENERAL KAWAKAMI,  
VICE-PRESIDENT OF THE GENERAL STAFF.

In the 22nd year of the present period of Meiji (1889), Lieut.-General Kawakami became Vice-President of the General Staff; and at once set about enlarging its scope. At home he was indefatigable in the management of military affairs, and, in particular, brought the Commissariat to a high state of efficiency. In 1893, from March to July, he travelled, in company with a few Staff Officers, through Korea and China, incidentally visiting all places of importance and acquainting himself with everything of strategic value. Of what value his investigations were, the subsequent War amply demonstrated. As soon as China sent troops to Korea, it was he who had a Japanese Brigade despatched thither. And, of course, in the ensuing War—as must ever be the case with an expeditionary campaign—a very difficult thing was to keep the Commissariat in proper working order, so that the troops should lack for nothing. This great task was most satisfactorily accomplished, thanks to the Lieutenant-General. On the whole, one cannot speak in terms of too high praise concerning his labour prior to and throughout the War.

---

## II.—MR. SUEMATSU KENCHŪ.

THE first belligerent act, as we have seen—an act as unavoidable as it was regrettable—was the sinking of the transport *Kowshing*, then flying the British flag, by a Japanese man-of-war. It will be remembered that, before the *Naniwa* fired the fatal shot, the Japanese signalled for the Captain and his foreigner officers or men to leave the ship; and the instant the Europeans sprang from the sinking vessel into the waves, the *Naniwa* lowered a boat and rescued all. However, owing to a misunderstanding and ignorance of the true facts in the case, considerable excitement was hereupon felt and expressed in England; and, for a time, the relations between that great nation and Japan were much strained. A British man-of-war, then at Nagasaki, requested the Governor of Nagasaki Prefecture to see that the Captain and survivors of the *Kowshing* should be sent on board; for that

purpose the man-of-war should go on to Saseho. Many telegrams were sent to and from Japan in this matter, and finally Mr. Suematsu Kenchō, President of the Legislative Bureau, was sent to Saseho as representative of the Government. The situation was a critical one and demanded a cool and able statesman. Mr. Suematsu made all speed for the Admiralty Port, reaching Saseho before the advent of the British war-ship. After consulting with the British officers and thoroughly discussing the matter, it was made evident that Japan had by no means exceeded her powers in firing on and sinking the *Koshing*, and that everything had been done to secure the comfort of her Captain, officers and crew. The matter was thus concluded with satisfaction to all concerned, and Japan emerged from it with no loss of prestige.

Again, when the battle of Phŷngyang was close at hand and all Korea in a tumult, the Koreans were seen to be hesitating whether they should espouse the cause of Japan or that of China. The representatives of the various Powers in treaty with the Peninsula moreover frequently expressed views opposed to those of Japan. The situation was, once again, one of vital importance and fraught with danger to Japanese interests. Mr. Suematsu was then sent to Seoul; and by his arguments and skilful policy not only earned the good-will of the local foreign Ministers or Consuls, but also caused Korea to declare in favour of Japan. On his return he mapped out a most excellent policy for Japan to pursue in the Peninsula, his advice proving of great value.



MR. SUEMATSU KENCHŌ.

On the opening of the Extraordinary Session of the Imperial Diet at Hiroshima, Mr. Suematsu, as Government Delegate, was

on the spot to answer all questions brought forward in connection with Japan's intentions concerning the War. And after the Session had closed, Mr. Suematsu was again despatched to Korea on important business, on the completion of which he was instructed to follow in the Generalissimo's suite to Port Arthur. While here all diplomatic matters connected with Head Quarters were attended to by him.

When Li Hung-chang and the other Peace Ambassadors came to Shimonoseki, it was resolved by the Japanese that, in case of a failure of the negotiations, Mr. Suematsu should make terms on the field of battle. Fortunately, however, the Treaty of Peace was concluded, and Mr. Suematsu enabled to return to Port Arthur without his services being called into requisition. Thus from first to last the President of the Legislative Bureau was one of the prominent figures in the War; and his efforts were attended with unvarying success.

---

### III.—PRESIDENT KAWADA.

WE have already devoted a chapter to the work of the Bank of Japan; yet in "HEROIC JAPAN" Mr. Kawada's name should have special mention, by reason of that great financier's fidelity and loyalty to this Empire during the War months. For several years Mr. Kawada has been suffering from heart-disease, and just at the time of the outbreak of hostilities his condition was such that rest and recuperation were imperatively demanded. The beginning of the War was, however, as a trumpet-call to him. He at once left the health-resort where he had been staying, and, proceeding directly to the capital, threw himself heart and soul into the management of the War's finance. The attendant excitement was greatly injurious to him physically, for he was frequently taken with fainting-spells while engaged in discussion or at his desk. One day, at the conclusion of a most important interview with the Minister of Finance, he fell down in a dead faint. His disease having reached so alarming a stage, he was repeatedly urged to retire from active life, his physicians emphasizing the

necessity of such a step. But to all such representations he replied:—"It may be possible for a man to forget the excitement of business when he has definitely retired into private life; but with my public responsibilities, I could never forget it. Until I resign my post for good and all, I cannot stop working. And now the Empire has reached a crisis in its history, while yet I have not been able to do one-half of what I wish to perform. At such a moment I cannot possibly resign my post for simply physical weakness. My first desire is to die in harness for my country." The physicians made no further attempt to shake his resolution, and thereafter, though staying in Kyōto or Ōsaka, he came up to Tōkyō whenever the Government had any financial question needing discussion, rendering throughout most able and efficient aid. On one occasion he visited Head Quarters at Hiroshima, and was received in audience by H. M. the Emperor, who graciously commended his diligence and self-abnegating labour. Thereafter, peace having been restored, Mr. Kawada spoke to some friends as follows:—"There is something inexpressibly awing about the dignity of the Imperial Presence. On the occasion of my audience, when His Majesty so graciously deigned to speak favourably of my poor merits, I shook with gratitude, nor could restrain my tears. I then thought that if my trivial labour had even in the smallest degree helped to lessen His Majesty's anxiety for the country, I should esteem it a high privilege to die for such a master. With this resolve, thenceforth I did more and better work than before. Indeed, so absorbed was I as to almost forget whether I was sick or not. But indeed I did not expect to see this day." Such was the spirit influencing the statesmen and financiers of Japan; and such was the spirit, the *Yamato-damashii*, which led the troops from victory to victory. And are we then not right in styling this brief summary of the War, "HEROIC JAPAN"?

---

IV.—MR. YOKOI TADANAO.

IN the War Department there is a Bureau for the of Compilation of Historical Records; and in this Bureau was and is Mr. Yokoi

Tadanao, one of the most eminent and fluent scholars of the day, and a poet of high order. Shortly after the War had begun, Mr. Yokoi wrote a number of military or war-songs, for which suitable and stirring music was composed by the Toyama Military College, under order from the Chief of Staff, H. I. H. Prince Arisugawa Taruhito—who greatly admired Mr. Yokoi's work. We append a prose translation of some of the most popular. In a few weeks the songs were in every body's mouth, the Japanese being exceedingly fond of music; and long before the War had been concluded, the songs might be heard from one end of the Empire to the other; particularly the first.

1.—Vanquish and chastise China! She is our enemy; not only ours but also the of peace in the Far East. China is haughty, rude and scorns our rights. So she must be quickly vanquished and chastised. Conquer China and chastise!

Vanquish and chastise China! Conquer and beat back her soldiers! They are those who help that China which contemns our rights. Though they be innumerable, yet are they but an undisciplined mob, knowing nothing of war and with no military skill. Though their weapons be strong and keen, the Chinese are ignorant



MR. YOKOI, OF THE BUREAU OF RECORDS,  
WAR DEPARTMENT.

of their use. They are no more than picture-weapons. Were not their weak war-ships sunk off Phungdo; and were not China's troops quickly defeated in the battle of Sōnghwan? Such ships, such men, can never stand against our arms. We shall take China's fortresses whenever we attack, and win the victory as often as we met her troops on the field. So vanquish China's soldiers! Conquer and chastise them!



2.—On to Peking! In olden time China was the land of wise men and sages. Now the world has changed; the years have rolled by; and China has retrograded. Though the people call the country the “Middle Kingdom” or “Celestial Empire”, yet are they in a state of savagery. These names are inconsistent with the facts. Nor can the clouds obscuring the Oriental sky be rolled away until China’s ignorance is enlightened. Now is our opportunity to plant the Sun-flag on the walls of the Castle of Peking, where that Flag may shine upon the people’s darkness and illumine their ignorance. This is the duty of Great Japan: a duty enjoined by Heaven. Then press on, till the Imperial Army is within Peking! On to Peking!

3.—“The Hero.”

Lie in a grove o’ergrown with tall grasses if you fight on shore; or in a tomb beneath the waves if you war at sea! This was the spirit of the heroes of yore, of those Japanese who gave their lives for our country. Life is fleeting, but fame is immortal and goes down to future generations. Grudge not this brief life; raise a monument to yourself! It is the duty of every one to sacrifice life for Emperor and Empire. So be patient under hardship, and ever march on fighting. Never let the enemy look upon your back! It is the greatest of shames to receive a hostile bullet in the back. March gallantly on, and never turn to look back. Be faithful and true, even if the body falls. Thus shall you be famous, even among those of remote future ages, as the “Protectors of Asia’s Peace.” Go on, ye heroes! go on!

4.—“The Imperial Will.”

The War is waged not only for the independence of Korea, but also to assure permanent peace in the Orient. This is the Imperial desire. All must let this thought sink deep in their hearts, and so vanquish the enemies of peace, ever pressing forwards. Wherever a military flag is seen, there is the seat of our great Emperor; so no matter how far away from the Imperial Presence, you are still close beside His Majesty and must strive to earn the Imperial approval. Obey unhesitatingly the commands of your superiors, as coming from the Emperor in person. Go through fire or water, or through an iron hail, if you are so bid. With such a spirit, there is nothing too great for you to achieve.

His Majesty is waiting, and there are "Golden Kite" medals for those who win merit in the War. Strive to win this mark of Imperial favour. Establish the peace of the Orient; do your duty; and, mindful of the Imperial Will, return in triumph to Japan.

---

V.—MR. TAKASHIMA KAEMON.

FROM very ancient times there has been in China a system of divination by a series of broken or whole lines—a sort of grammancy of the highest antiquity. The *Yih King* (Japanese pronunciation, *Eki Kyō*) which treats of this system, is one of the most famous and perhaps least understood of all the Chinese Classics. In Japan, the great expounder of the system is Mr. Takashima Kaemon, a sketch of whose busy and essentially philanthropic career, may not be out of place. Mr. Takashima has been, from a period prior to the present era of Meiji (began 1867), a most zealous adherent of Western civilization, and has consistently favoured its adoption in the country of his birth. In 1870 he built the first railway connecting Yokohama with Kanagawa, afterwards offering the plant to the Government. In the following year he established a large school in Yokohama, attended at one time by fully 700 students. Instructors were engaged in England, Germany, France and one or two other countries. His services in this direction were so striking that he received a reward from the Government (a set of silver wine-cups), with a well-deserved letter of commendation. In the same year, 1871, Mr. Takashima set about lighting Yokohama and Tōkyō with gas, the works being



MR. TAKASHIMA KAEMON.

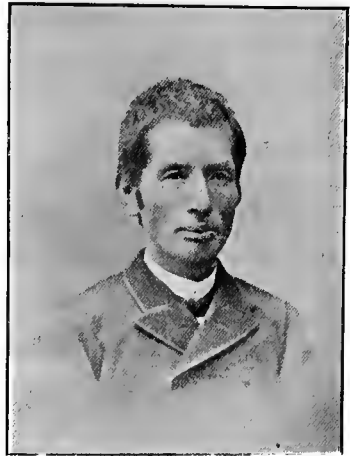
completed on March 19th, 1874. T. I. M. the Emperor and Empress thereupon paid a visit to the works, with which they expressed themselves much pleased. An Imperial Decree speedily followed, stating that "the establishment of gas-works was a labour without precedent. The system of lighting would thereafter be adopted in the Imperial Household." From his youth Mr. Takashima has been an ardent student of the *Eki* divinatorial system, and has often predicted future events with astonishing accuracy. At the Congress of Religions in the World's Columbian Exhibition, at Chicago, many volumes of his great work, "*Takashima Eki-dan*", were distributed among the leading religionists there assembled. The book had been done into English by his friend Mr. Sugiura Shigétaké.

On the outbreak of the Tonghak Rebellion, Mr. Takashima made a most remarkable divination. Hearing that the Chinese Government was attempting to carry things with a high hand, he foretold, by means of his system, (1) that war with China was inevitable; (2) that Japan would win, a series of victories beginning in the month of August; (3) that the final interference of three European Powers was inevitable. This exact divination was published at the time in the *Kokumin* and *Hōchi Shimbun*, two of the leading Tōkyō dailies. During the advance on Phyōngyang, Mr. Takashima foretold that the assault would be successful from the north side of the bourg; and the Hyōnmu Gate, the capture of which determined the fate of the town, was, it will be remembered, actually on the northern flank of the castle. When the Peace Embassy reached Bakan, Mr. Takashima divined, on April 9th, 1895, that the two Empires would conclude a Treaty of Peace, after consulting without reserve. And as, in the words of the *Eki Kyō*, "three uninvited guests would come", so Russia, France and Germany interfered and brought about the retrocession of the Liaotung Peninsula, the indemnity payable by China being, in return, increased by 30,000,000 taels.

---

## VI.—MR. DOKURA SHOZABURŌ.

HONOURABLY instrumental in bringing this brief history of the War before the public, has been Mr. Dokura Shozaburō, a native of Yoshino, Nara Prefecture. Ever willing to contribute pecuniarily to a patriotic undertaking, the list of his benefactions is a long and most reputable one. He was the firm friend of the late Dr. John Neeshima (or Nijjima), the founder of the great Doshisha College at Kyōto, to the maintenance of which he has contributed large sums. Many students there educated have found in him a most unselfish patron. Mr. Dokura has further exhibited his philanthropic patriotism in building roads, establishing schools, assisting business-men in industrial or productive enterprises, and in sending students abroad for the further prosecution of their studies. Since succeeding to the paternal estate, Mr. Dokura has, in these various ways, paid out a sum estimated to be not less than 2,000,000 *yen*. Not only was he the life-long friend of Dr. Neeshima, but he is also the hospitable entertainer of many Americans connected with the Dōshisha work, by all of whom he is most highly esteemed. In this quiet, unostentatious way he has done untold good to many people, and for this—if for no other reason --we are pleased to make this brief record of his noble deeds.



MR. DOKURA SHOZABURŌ.

## VII.—H. I. H. PRINCE KITASHIRAKAWA YOSHIHISA.

THE late Divisional Commander of the Imperial Body Guard, General Prince Kitashirakawa, was a soldier to his finger-tips,



H. I. H. THE LATE PRINCE KITASHIRAKAWA YOSHIHISA.

and one of the kindest and most affable of the Imperial Family; universally esteemed and beloved. Prior to the present period of Meiji, the late Prince's history was a checkered one; but after the Restoration his excellent qualities were soon apparent. On December 3rd, 1874, then holding the rank of Major, he left Japan for Saxony, where he matriculated at the Staff College, attending also several other military schools at the same time. His Imperial Highness was a favourite while in Germany, and often an honoured guest of the great Kaiser, Wilhelm I., who took much interest in his studies. The Prince devoted himself principally to strategy and ballistics, especially during his sojourn at Spandau and Berlin, his private instructor being the late Major Jochen. In June, 1877, the Prince returned to Japan. In December,

1893, he was promoted to the rank of Lieut.-General, and thereafter entrusted with the command of the Sixth Division (November, 1894). In January, 1875, he was given chief command of the Imperial Guard, the flower of the Japanese Army. On April 9th of the same year he set out with the Guard for the Liaotung Peninsula, it being then thought that the War would continue. But the Treaty of Peace being concluded, the Prince went with his command to Formosa which, though ceded by China, had still to be brought under Japanese authority. Liu, the leader of the once-famous "Black Flags," was then in the Island, doing everything to stir up the natives to revolt and armed resistance. The Imperial Guard left the Peninsula in May, and speedily landed in Formosa, at once putting an end to the ridiculous little "Formosan Republic" started by Liu and a few of his adherents. After a toilsome campaign extending over several months, the Island was completely subjugated, and insurrection at an end for the time. But the Formosan climate being of a peculiarly trying nature to those unaccustomed to it, the Prince and many hundreds of the Imperial Guard were stricken with disease, abdominal typhus being the most prevalent disorder. Despite his indisposition, the Prince was indefatigable in his endeavours to restore order. When all had grown quiet, there was no longer any necessity for the presence of the Imperial Commander. He returned to Japan; but only to die!

There were many amiable as well as heroic traits in the character of the late Prince. He ever evinced great anxiety that peaceable citizens should not be confounded with unruly mobs, and that no harm should be done to the lives and property of such men. This was a task of great difficulty, as the Japanese were still unacquainted with the Formosan dialects. On one occasion, while on the march, the Division halted at the town of Chung-kong, where the Prince heard of the illness of Major-General Kawamura. This at once aroused the deep sympathy of His Imperial Highness, who sent a Staff Officer to make inquiries. The next day the Prince forwarded numerous gifts to the Major-General, and was about setting out on horseback to pay a visit in person, when the welcome news came of the General's convalescence. While in Taipeh-fu, the heat was excessive: the thermo-

meter often reaching 95° and even 97°. None the less the Prince began his work at dawn and continued without intermission until 6 or 7 in the evening. In the room adjoining the Prince's was the managing department of the Staff, and never did the Prince rest from his work until the officers there were through with their labours. The Chief Staff Officer felt much anxiety on the score of the Prince's personal discomforts and inconveniences. In one corner of the room where the Prince passed his time, the Chief Managing Officer had a dais, six feet square, raised. This was covered with straw-matting, over which a blanket was thrown, so that His Imperial Highness might enjoy some degree of comfort. But the Prince was not at all pleased with the arrangement, and said: "It is quite foreign to my desires to rest in ease on a couch during such a campaign, while my brave soldiers have no comforts whatever." So blanket and couch were removed. The Prince invariably wore the same white linen summer uniform. This had, since the landing of the troops, gradually lost its original color and become begrimed with dust and dirt. While on the march, however, it was impossible to make a change. On reaching Taipeh-fu it was specially proposed that a messenger should be sent to hire a laundryman within treaty limits, in order that the Prince's uniform might be washed. But to this His Imperial Highness strongly objected. "Look at your own uniforms," said he; "although once clean, are they not creased and soiled? I do not wish to be better treated than my attendants. If my uniform must be washed, let one of the soldiers do it." This was done, the result being of course anything rather than satisfactory. But in this fashion the Prince lived and worked.

His Imperial Highness left Taipeh-fu at 5.30 a. m. of July 29th (1895). It was an oppressively hot day, the thermometer standing at 94°. Despite his recent indisposition and the great heat, the Prince ventured to march with the troops. During the preceding night dysentery had set in; but the Prince kept his growing sickness a secret from everybody. No one suspected his real condition: not even his immediate attendants or physician. It was noticed, however, that the Prince could eat no dinner. At 3.35 p.m. the Division reached the camp at Tongtse-yien when a heavy rain began falling, accompanied by loud claps of thunder.

Hitherto His Imperial Highness had never minded the state of the weather; but now he at once ordered an attendant to bring his rain-coat. This was the first intimation those about the Prince had of his illness. From this time on the malady assumed a malignant form, and to it the brave, kindly Prince succumbed shortly after his return to Japan. And so the War had claimed two near relatives of H. M. the Emperor as its victims. It was a victory dearly bought.

---



## CHAPTER XXXIII.

---

### THE TREATY OF PEACE.

#### 1.—THE SHIMONOSEKI TREATY.

THE Chinese Government showed a desire to arrange a peace and thus put a stop to the, to them, disastrous conflict, not long after the battle of Phyōngyang and the naval engagement off Haiyang. Mr. Detring, of the Chinese Customs Service, was despatched to Japan to arrange for peace; but not being armed with plenipotentary power nor even possessing the necessary credentials, the Japanese authorities very properly refused to see or have anything to do with him. After this abortive attempt, Chang Ying-hwang came on January, 30th, 1895, stating that he held plenary powers. On his authorization being subjected to official scrutiny, it was found to be wholly insufficient; and so, despite repeated protestations and petitions for a hearing, Chang was compelled to return to China. China's duplicity in this matter gave no small fresh umbrage to Japan, and made the final terms on which peace was concluded more stringent than they would otherwise have been. Japanese victories followed hereupon in rapid succession: Wei-hai-wei fell, and the vessels of the Peiyang Fleet still above water, surrendered. Newchwang, Yingkow and Tienchwangtai were taken in rapid succession, and there was no longer any hope of stopping the Japanese advance on Peking. So China had to send her greatest man to sue for peace. On March 19th, 1895, the famous Viceroy Li Hung-chang came, with his son, Lord Li, and the

high-rank officials Lo Pao-lu, Wuh Ting-fang, and Ma Chên-cheong, accompanied by a numerous suite. To confer with these dignitaries the Japanese Government sent the Premier, Count Itō Hirobumi, and Viscount Mutsu Munemitsu, Minister of State for Foreign Affairs, to the port of Bakan or Shimonoseki. These two Ministers were furnished with plenipotentiary powers. On March 20th the first meeting of the Plenipotentiaries was held at the Shumpanrō, the largest hotel in the port. This had been decided upon beforehand as the place of meeting. Here the authorisations and papers of the Plenipotentiaries were mutually examined and found satisfactory. This was all that happened at the first meeting. At the next gathering, on the following day, the Chinese delegates requested an immediate armistice. Japan replied to this by stating that she would consent to an armistice under the following four conditions:—(1) Taku, Tientsin and Shanhaikwan, with all their fortifications, should be delivered up to Japan;—(2) the garrisons at these places should hand over to the Japanese troops all their weapons and war-material:—(3) The Tientsin-Shanhaikwan railway should come under Japanese control;—(4) China should defray the expenses attendant upon keeping Japanese troops in her territory during the armistice. To this the Chinese Plenipotentiaries replied that Japan's demands were excessive; they begged that Japanese troops should not be sent to Shanhaikwan and Taku, and that an armistice should be acceded to without delay. Counts Itō and Mutsu however positively refused to moderate their demands, so that Li Hung-chang and his colleagues were put to great confusion. Finally they requested a delay of two or three days, during which they might communicate with the Central



H. E. COUNT ITŌ,  
MINISTER PRESIDENT.

Government at Peking. For a day or so, therefore, the meetings were discontinued. At the third meeting, on March 24th, the question of an armistice was laid aside, and it was agreed that the articles of a Treaty of Peace should at once be discussed. On the way back to his lodgings, Li Hung-chang was, most unfortunately, attacked by a madman, who shot at and wounded the great Viceroy in the face. This at once changed the whole situation, as, for the time being, further meetings were out of the question.



H. E. VISCOUNT MUTSU,  
MINISTER OF FOREIGN AFFAIRS.

Public feeling in Japan ran very high and everywhere the deepest sympathy was expressed with the sufferer. H. M. the Empress made lint and bandages with her own hands and sent them to the wounded ambassador; while the most skilful physicians and surgeons in the Empire did all they could to assure and hasten convalescence. H. M. the Emperor, out of sheer pity, consented to a truce of twenty days' duration, without conditions. Deputations were sent to the Viceroy, and everything was done to show the people's heartfelt regret at what had occurred.

The condition of China at this time was one of the utmost discouragement. Disaster had followed upon disaster, and the Empire seemed utterly helpless. As, under the circumstances, it would have been most injudicious to let the days pass without doing anything towards effecting the restoration of peace, it was decided that Lord Li, the son of the Viceroy and one-time Ambassador at Tōkyō, should continue the meetings. After two gatherings had taken place, on March 30th and April 1st, word came from the Chinese Government that Lord Li was to act with his famous father. While yet all was undecided, Li was rapidly convalescing and, on April 3rd, repaired to the council-chamber. On this occasion he merely expressed his profound gratitude for the un-

conditional granting of the truce. The fourth regular meeting was held on April 6th, when the Japanese Plenipotentiaries for the first time announced the terms on which peace was obtainable. Unless the Chinese representatives promptly acceded to the terms, no peace could be effected. The Chinese replied that they would give a positive answer in a few days. Count Itō then remarked that Staff-General Aoki had informed him that many of the Chinese troops appeared wholly ignorant of the existence of the truce, and that a Japanese messenger on his way to the Chinese camp, though carrying a flag significant of his mission, had been fired upon by the Chinese. Why, asked the Count, was it that proper information had not been conveyed to the troops? To this the Chinese Plenipotentiaries replied that, owing to the absence of telegraphic facilities, it was extremely difficult to send intelligence to the front. They would, however, at once despatch an urgent telegram to the Central Government, requesting that the forces in Manchuria be informed with all speed of the state of affairs, and advise the utmost caution. This meeting caused considerable embarrassment to the Chinese Envoys, and they retired in no small confusion.



H. E. VICEROY LI HUNG-CHANG.

On April 7th Japan formally acknowledged the plenary powers conferred upon Li Ching-fong. On the following day Lord Li called upon Count Itō, in order to make official announcement of his new rank. With him went Wuh Ting-fang and Lo Pao-lu. Speaking with much hesitation, Lord Li and his coadjutors requested a prolongation of the term within which a decisive answer should be given by China. The next day (April 9th), Count Itō invited the Chinese Envoys to his lodgings, and there urged an immediate answer:—"If you keep putting off the day and using ambiguous

words in replying to our claims, the date on which the truce comes to an end will pass without any conclusion having been arrived at. And in this case, I beg leave to assure you, I shall order the troops to advance without a delay of so much as half a day. This done, no matter how earnestly you may desire another truce, I shall positively refuse. I beg to inform you of this determination, by way of advice." To this Lord Li replied: "I shall tomorrow accompany H. E. Li Hung-chang and we will bring you a definitely affirmative or negative answer." The next meeting

was held on the morrow, April 10th,—this being the fifth council—and the talk lasted for more than two hours, or until 4.30 p. m. The Chinese Envoys still seemed unable to come to any conclusion, and asked for another postponement of two days. To this the Japanese Plenipotentiaries consented. Viscount Mutsu was absent on this occasion, owing to severe indisposition.



LORD LI, SON OF LI HUNG-CHANG.

On the 14th, Wuh Ting-fang called at Count Itō's lodgings, and again, a little later, Lord Li and Mâ Chên-cheong. They begged for another day's grace. One day

later, the 15th, the sixth regular meeting was held, the conference on this occasion lasting for fully five hours. Matters had reached a climax, and the strain was intense on all the negotiating parties. Many visitors this day in particular called at the lodgings of the Chinese Envoys. The upshot of the conference was, after the Chinese had done their best to get Japan to moderate her terms, that the emissaries of the vanquished Empire finally submitted and agreed to the demands of the Japanese Plenipotentiaries. On the morrow, Mr. Itō Miyōji, Chief Secretary to the Cabinet; Mr. Nakada Takanori, Secretary of the Department of Foreign Affairs; and the two Chinese, Lo Pao-lu and Wuh Ting-fang, held a council at the Shumpan-rō, their deliberations lasting from 10 a.

m. to 2 p. m. The questions consulted referred principally to the subsequent ratification of the new Treaty of Peace. April 17th the seventh and last meeting was held. Beginning in the early forenoon, the Plenipotentiaries finally affixed their seals to the Treaty at 2 o'clock in the afternoon. And so the Treaty of Peace was definitely concluded. At 3.30 p. m. of the same day, Li Hung-chang left Shimonoseki for China, the Japanese Ambassadors starting for Hiroshima on the next day. The *Yaeyama*, one of the smaller Japanese war-ships, conveyed Count Itō, Viscount Mutsu and their respective suites to Ujina, the harbour being



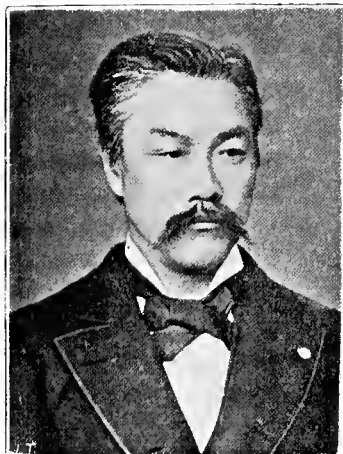
MARQUIS TOKUDAIJI.

reached at 4 p. m. the same day. On arriving at this port, the two Plenipotentiaries were heartily welcomed by Marquis Tokudaiji Sanetsune, Grand Master of Ceremonies; Marquis Kuroda Kiyotaka, President of the Privy Council; Marshal Count Yamagata; Admiral Count Saigō Tsugumichi; Count Matsukata, Minister of State for Finance; Viscount Hijikata Hisamoto, Minister of the Imperial Household; and many military and naval officers as well as officials of the Household. Besides these, numerous representatives of the prefectural Court of Justice, the local Government and the Red Cross Society had assembled to greet the two great Ministers. As the Plenipotentiaries mounted the jetty, the *Yaeyama* fired a



VISCOUNT HIJIKATA.

salute and a fine band in attendance struck up the national anthem. After a short period of rest, Count Itō and Viscount Mutsu entered a carriage provided by the Imperial Household, and drove rapidly to Hiroshima. Here they at once repaired to Head Quarters and were received by H. M. the Emperor in audience. What had been concluded was then verbally reported to the Imperial auditor, who listened with intense interest. An Imperial Edict relating to the Treaty of Peace was thereupon handed to them for immediate promulgation—and the first chapter of the new Treaty of Peace was over.



COUNT MATSUKATA.

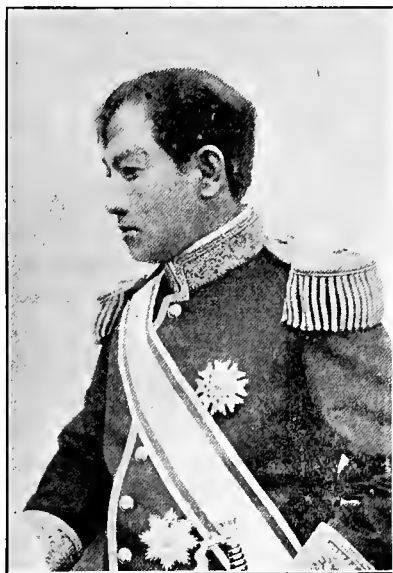
## II.—THE IMPERIAL SANCTION AND EXCHANGE OF RATIFICATIONS.

It had been arranged that the Treaty of Peace concluded at Bakan on April 16th should be ratified at Chefoo, China, on the 8th of the following month. Mr. Itō Miyoji, Chief Secretary of the Cabinet, was appointed Plenipotentiary for this purpose, and was instructed to be in Chefoo on the above mentioned date. May 1st, at 4.20 p. m. Mr. Itō left Saikyō (the popular name for Kyōto), accompanied by Mr. Nishi, a Counsellor of the Foreign Department, and Messrs. Tatsui Raizō, Henry Satoh, Narahara



COUNT KURODA.

Chinsei and Ishiwara Nabezō as secretaries and interpreters. The party boarded the *Yaeyama* on the next day, May 2nd; and at 5.30 p. m. the man-of-war left Ujina. Castle Island was passed at 8 p. m. of May 3rd, and Wu-shan or "Black Mountain" Island on the 4th. Drill was this day had on board the *Yaeyama*, the gunners using blank cartridges. On May 5th, at 5 p. m., the man-of-war anchored in the fine harbour of Port Arthur. Mr. Itō went on shore and had a secret conference at the Generalissimo's Quarters with H. I. H. Prince Komatsu and Lieut.-General Kawakami. At nightfall, May 6th, the Plenipotentiary and suite went on board the *Yokohama Maru*, an ex-merchantman, and steamed at once for Chefoo. Early the next morning the anchorage was made; and Envoy Itō at once sent Messrs. Satō and Tei on shore with a letter directed to the local Taotai, Liu Hanhwang: the letter to be handed in through the courtesy of the United States Consul. As soon as the party landed, the officers of the U. S. *Machias* and H. B. M. *Edgar*, bearing greetings from their respective Admirals, made



MR. ITŌ MRYŌJI.

ceremonial calls. Subsequent visitors were Messrs. Beadon (Vice-Commissioner of the Chefoo Customs); Parkhill (Harbour-master); Reed (American Consul at Tientsin and Chefoo); and Donnelly (U. S. Vice-Consul). At the same time as Envoy Itō sent his letter to the Taotai, he and his party were welcomed by Li Fu-chwêng, the Taotai's Secretary, and Translator Lu Yong-ming. Mr. Itō gave the Chinese to understand that he would not land until he received an answer to his letter. It then appeared that the Chinese Plenipotentiaries, Wuh Ting-fang and Lien Fang, who



had arrived from Tientsin at 10 p. m. of the foregoing day, were waiting to receive the Japanese Envoy and his suite. A suitable place of meeting had, it was announced, been selected, as well as lodgings for the Japanese Envoy.

At 2.30 p. m. a small steamer, the *Chien Fong* carrying Translator Lu Yong-ming and Li Fu-chwêng, brought the Taotai's reply and letter of welcome. Envoy Itō thereupon landed with his suite at 5.30 p. m., entered the sedan chairs provided, and all were quickly borne to the Beach Hotel. The streets through which the Japanese party had to pass were most carefully guarded, several tens of foot-soldiers lining either side of the way. Moreover a cordon of police-constables kept the public from approaching too near. Indeed, throughout the brief sojourn of the Envoy and his suite, every member of the party was constantly attended by a special guard, and the roads along which the suite passed were always most carefully patrolled. At the lodgings of the Japanese were Secretary Li Fu-chwêng and a guard of twenty or thirty soldiers, on duty day and night.

Immediately after landing, Mr. Itō sent for the Chinese Plenipotentiaries Wuh Ting-fang, and Lien Fang, the first meeting being opened at once. Preliminaries over, Mr. Itō paid an official call at the *Kang-yin-tao*, or "Official Residence", but nothing definite was arrived at. Meetings were held in both the forenoon and afternoon of the next day, May 8th, the Japanese Envoy urging promptitude with great energy, while the Chinese Plenipotentiaries were evidently most reluctant to fulfil their part of the contract. Point after point was brought forward and urged, Mr. Itō evincing growing impatience at the tardy conduct of the Chinese. When not in actual conclave, messengers kept constantly going to and fro between the contracting parties. In the meanwhile the *Yokohama Maru*, joined by the just arrived *Higo Maru*, got up steam and made ready to start at a moment's notice. There was a strong feeling of excitement and apprehension, in which foreigners shared as well. Messengers were constantly hurrying between the American Consulate and Mr. Foster's. As the hours passed the strain grew momentarily greater, but finally, late in the evening—between 9.30 and 11 p. m.

—ratifications were exchanged and the Treaty of Peace definitely established.

It had already been determined that Envoy Itō and suite should at once start for Port Arthur on the conclusion of the work; so at 3 a. m. of May 9th, the Japanese left their lodgings, under escort of an efficient guard. Li Fu-chwêng represented the Chinese Ambassadors, and accompanied the party from the wharf to the *Yokohama Maru*. At about 5 a. m. the *Yokohama Maru* and her escort, the *Higo Maru*, weighed anchor and steamed out of the harbour. As they did so the Sun-flag was hoisted over the Customs building, while fire-crackers sputtered a noisy farewell, in accordance with Chinese ideas of friendship. When Envoy Itō and his party were seen to board their steamer, the officers and crew of H. B. M. *Edgar* saluted the Japanese with loud cheers, to which the Japanese replied with profound bows. There were, at the time, in the harbour no less than nine Russian men-of-war, besides the Flagship *Pamiat Azova*; further two torpedo-gunboats and one torpedo-boat. Of other nationalities, these were one French, two German, two British, one American and one Italian warships. The Russian men-of-war had changed their paint and cleared for action; moreover they kept up a kind of mock-fight by firing blank-cartridges, the whole surface of the sea thereby being covered with a pall of smoke. The German and French war-vessels more or less followed the example set by the Russians—and all this because of the presence of two small Japanese ex-merchantmen. The civil and naval officers representing the United States and Great Britain, on the other hand, were eager to show every courtesy to the Japanese. The British Admiral Fremantle, in particular, called on board the *Yokohama Maru* so soon as he returned to Chefoo in the Flagship *Centurion*. Envoy Itō was on shore when the *Centurion* came in, and received Admiral Fremantle with great cordiality. A conversation ensued which lasted for some time.

Envoy Itō and suite had avoided travelling to Chefoo in a Japanese man-of-war, and came unostentatiously in the *Yokohama Maru*. This caused much favourable comment. It was at first supposed that the Japanese Fleet would visit the harbour, and it was evidently for this reason that the Russian, French and Ger-

man war-ships prepared for action. But the only Japanese ship that put in an appearance, was the little *Higo Maru*, a trading vessel like the *Yokohama Maru*. So all the bluster and bellicose preparations of the three dissenting Powers went for nothing.

Six hours later, at 11 a. m., the *Yokohama Maru* reached Port Arthur, the *Higo Maru* following in her wake. Mr. Itō at once landed and went to Head Quarters, where he had immediate audience of H. I. H. Prince Komatsu Akihito, to whom he narrated the course of events. His Imperial Highness now first learned, with much gratification, of the ratification of the Treaty of Peace, several important modifications having been made before the respective Plenipotentiaries had affixed their seals. But when the *Yokohama Maru* entered the harbour nothing had been done to give Mr. Itō and his party a suitable welcome. This was due to the fact that it was believed the ratification had been postponed. On hearing, however, that the exchange of ratifications had been definitely effected, there was a general feeling of joy. At 4 p. m. H. I. H. Prince Komatsu give a banquet to Envoy Itō and suite on board the *Ikai Maru*. H. M. the Emperor was cheered to the echo, while the healths of Envoy Itō and his party were drunk with enthusiasm in bumpers of champagne. A British officer being among the guests present, the health of H. M. Queen Victoria was drunk with honours, the band in attendance discoursing sweet music the while. At the conclusion of the banquet, Envoy Itō and his suite took leave of the Generalissimo and returned to the *Yokohama Maru*. His Imperial Highness accompanied Envoy Itō to the head of the gangway. On the pier beside the steamer the highest civil, military and naval dignitaries were drawn up in line, and repeatedly cheered the parting Envoy. As Mr. Itō gained the deck of the *Yokohama Maru* cheer after cheer rang across the still waters of the harbour, the bands afloat and on shore swelling the flood of joyous sound. Again, as the *Yokohama Maru* moved off, her bow pointing towards Japan, the cheers broke out anew. H. I. H. Prince Komatsu mounted the bridge of the *Ikai Maru* and gazed intently at the parting vessel. On Envoy Itō and his suite bowing their final adieus in the direction of the *Ikai Maru*, the Prince took off his hat and waved it in token of farewell. Preceded by the *Yaeyama*, the steamer then left the harbour, reaching

Ujina without mishap on May 12th. Without stopping here the party went on to Hiroshima, thence by rail to Kyōto, where they arrived at 11.30 a. m. of the following day. Repairing at once to Head Quarters, Envoy Itō had audience of H. M. the Emperor, narrating all that had occurred. An Imperial Edict had already, on May 10th, sanctioned the articles of the Treaty of Peace—and so the great War was over.

*“Plaudite amici!”*



## APPENDIX A.

---

### THE TREATY OF PEACE.

His Majesty the Emperor of Japan and His Majesty the Emperor of China, desiring to restore the blessings of peace to their countries and subjects and to remove all cause for future complications, have named as their Plenipotentiaries for the purpose of concluding a Treaty of Peace, that is to say :

His Majesty the Emperor of Japan, Count Ito Hirobumi, Ju-ni-i, Grand Cross of the Imperial Order of the Paulownia, Minister President of State, and Viscount Mutsu Munemitsu, Ju-ni-i, First Class of the Imperial Order of the Sacred Treasure, Minister of State for Foreign Affairs ;

And His Majesty the Emperor of China, Li Hung-chang, Senior Tutor to the Heir Apparent, Senior Grand Secretary of State, Minister Superintendent of Trade for the Northern Ports of China, Viceroy of the Province of Chihli and Earl of the First Rank, and Li Ching-Fong, Ex-Minister of the Diplomatic Service, of the Second Official Rank ;

Who, after having exchanged their Full Powers, which were found to be in good and proper form, have agreed to the following Articles :

#### ARTICLE I.

China recognizes definitively the full and complete independence and autonomy of Korea, and in consequence, the payment of tribute and the performance of ceremonies and formalities by Korea to China in derogation of such independence and autonomy, shall wholly cease for the future.

## ARTICLE II.

China cedes to Japan in perpetuity and sovereignty, the following territories together with all fortifications, arsenals and public property thereon :

a)—The southern portion of the Province of Fêng-Tien within the following boundaries :

The line of demarcation begins at the mouth of the River Yalu and ascends that stream to the mouth of the River Anping ; from thence the line runs to Funghwang ; from thence to Haiching, from thence to Yingkow, forming a line which describes the southern portion of the territory. The places above-named are included in the ceded territory. When the line reaches the River Liao at Yingkow it follows the course of that stream to its mouth, where it terminates. The mid-channel of the River Liao shall be taken as the line of demarcation.

The cession also includes all Islands appertaining or belonging to the Province of Fêng-Tien situated in the eastern portion of the Bay of Liaotung and in the northern part of the Yellow Sea.

b)—The Island of Formosa, together with all islands appertaining or belonging to the said Island of Formosa.

c)—The Pescadores Group, that is to say, all Islands lying between the 119th and 120 degrees of longitude east of Greenwich and the 23rd and 24th degrees of north latitude.

## ARTICLE III.

The alignments of the frontiers described in the preceding Article, shall be subject to verification and demarcation on the spot, by a Joint Commission of Delimitation, consisting of two or more Japanese and two or more Chinese Delegates to be appointed immediately after the exchange of the ratifications of this Act. In the case the boundaries laid down in this Act are found to be defective at any point, either on account of topography or in consideration of good administration, it shall also be the duty of the Delimitation Commission to rectify the same.

The Delimitation Commission will enter upon its duties as soon as possible, and will bring its labors to a conclusion within the period of one year after appointment.

The alignments laid down in this Act, shall, however, be maintained until the rectifications of Delimitation Commission, if any are made, shall have received the approval of the Governments of Japan and China.

#### ARTICLE. IV.

China agrees to pay to Japan as a war indemnity, the sum of 200,000,000 Kuping Taels. The said sum to be paid in eight instalments. The first instalment of 50,000,000 taels, to be paid within six months, and the second instalment of 50,000,000 taels to be paid within twelve months, after the exchange of the ratifications of this Act. The remaining sum to be paid within six equal annual instalments, as follows : The first of such equal annual instalment to be paid within two years ; the second within three years ; the third within four years ; the fourth within five years ; the fifth within six years, and sixth within seven years, after the exchange of the ratification of this Act. Interest at the rate of 5 per centum per annum shall begin to run on all unpaid portions of the said indemnity from the date the first instalment falls due.

China shall, however, have the right to pay by anticipation at any time any or all of said instalments. In case the whole amount of indemnity is paid within three years after the exchange of the ratification of the present Act, all interest shall be waived and the interest for two years, and a half or for any less period if then already paid shall be included as a part of the principal amount of the indemnity.

#### ARTICLE V.

The inhabitants of the territories ceded to Japan, who wish to take up their residence outside the ceded districts, shall be at liberty to sell their real property and retire. For this purpose a period of two years from the date of the exchange of the ratifications of the present Act, shall be granted. At the expiration of that period those of the inhabitants who shall not have left such territories shall, at the option of Japan, be deemed to be Japanese subjects.

Each of the two Governments shall, immediately upon the exchange of the ratifications of the present Act, send one or more Commissioners to Formosa to effect a final transfer of that Province ; and within the space of two months after the exchange of the ratifications of this Act, such transfer shall be completed.

## ARTICLE VI.

All treaties between Japan and China having come to an end in consequence of the War, China engages, immediately upon the exchange of the ratifications of this Act, to appoint Plenipotentiaries to conclude, with the Japanese Plenipotentiaries, a Treaty of Commerce and Navigation and a Convention to regulate Frontier Intercourse and Trade. The Treaties, Conventions and Regulations now subsisting between China and European Powers shall serve as a basis for the said Treaty and Convention between Japan and China. From the date of the exchange of the ratifications of this Act until the said Treaty and Convention are brought into actual operation, the Japanese Government ; its officials ; commerce ; navigation ; frontier intercourse and trade ; industries ; ships and subjects, shall, in every respect, be accorded by China the most favoured nation treatment.

China makes in addition the following concession, to take effect six months after the date of the present Act :

1st.—The following cities, towns and ports, in addition to those already opened, shall be opened to the trade, residence, industries and manufactures of Japanese subjects, under the same conditions and with the same privileges and facilities as exist at the present upon cities, towns and ports of China :

- 1.—Shashih in the Province of Hupeh.
- 2.—Chungking in the Province of Szechüan.
- 3.—Soochow in the Province of Kianghsu.
- 4.—Hangchow in the Province of Chekiang.

The Japanese Government shall have the right to station Consuls at any or all of the above named places.

2nd.—Steam navigation for vessels under the Japanese flag for the conveyance of passengers and cargo, shall be extended to the following places :

- 1.—On the Upper Yangtze River, from Ichang to Chungking.
- 2.—On the Woosung River and the Canal, from Shanghai to Soochow and Hangchow.

The Rules and Regulations which now govern the navigation of the inland waters of China by foreign vessels, shall, so far as applicable, be enforced in respect of the above-named routes, until new Rules and Regulations are conjointly agreed to.



3rd—Japanese subjects purchasing goods or produce in the interior of China, shall have the right temporarily to rent or hire warehouses for the storage of the articles so purchased or transported, without the payment of any taxes or exactions whatever.

4th—Japanese subjects shall be free to engage in all kinds of manufacturing industries in all the open cities, towns and ports of China, and shall be at liberty to import into China all kinds of machinery, paying only the stipulated import duties thereon.

All articles manufactured by Japanese subjects in China, shall, in respect of inland transit and internal taxes, duties, charges and exactions of all kinds, and also in respect of warehousing and storage facilities in the interior of China, stand upon the same footing and enjoy the same privileges and exemptions as merchandise imported by Japanese subjects into China.

In the event of additional Rules and Regulations being necessary in connection with these concessions, they shall be embodied in the Treaty of Commerce and Navigation provided for by this Article.

#### ARTICLE VII.

Subject to the provisions of the next succeeding article, the evacuation of China by the armies of Japan, shall be completely effected within three months after the exchange of the ratifications of the present Act.

#### ARTICLE VIII.

As a guarantee of the faithful performance of the stipulations of this Act, China consents to the temporary occupation by the military forces of Japan, of Wei-hai-wei in the Province of Shantung.

Upon the payment of the first two instalments of the war indemnity, herein stipulated, this place shall be evacuated by the Japanese forces, provided the Chinese Government consents to pledge, under suitable and sufficient arrangements, the Customs Revenue of China as security for the payment of the principal and interest of the remaining instalments of said indemnity. In the event no such arrangements are concluded, such evacuation shall only take place upon the payment of the final instalment of said indemnity.

It is, however, expressly understood that no such evacuation

shall take place until after the exchange of the ratifications of the Treaty of Commerce and Navigation.

## ARTICLE IX.

Immediately upon the exchange of the ratifications of this Act, all prisoners of war then held shall be restored, and China undertakes not to ill-treat or punish prisoners of war so restored to her by Japan. China also engages to at once release all Japanese subjects accused of being military spies or charged with any other military offences. China further engages not to punish in any manner, nor to allow to be punished, those Chinese subjects who have in any manner been compromised in their relations with the Japanese Army during the war.

## ARTICLE X.

All offensive military operations shall cease upon the exchange of the ratifications of this Act.

## ARTICLE XI.

The present Act shall be ratified by Their Majesties the Emperor of Japan and the Emperor of China, and ratifications shall be exchanged at Chefoo, on the 8th day of the 5th month of the 28th year of Meiji, corresponding to 14th day of the 4th month of the 21st year of Kuang Hsü (May 8th, 1895).

In witness whereof, the respective Plenipotentiaries have signed the same and have affixed thereto the seal of their arms.

Done at Shimonoseki, in duplicate, this 17th day of the 4th month of the 28th year of Meiji, corresponding to 23rd day of the 3rd month of 21st year of Kuang Hsü.

---

COUNT ITO HIROBUMI. [L.L.]

*Ju-ni-i ; Grand Cross of the Imperial Order of the Paulownia ;*

*Minister President of State ; Plenipotentiary of  
His Majesty the Emperor of Japan.*

## HEROIC JAPAN.

VISCOUNT MUTSU MUNEMITSU [L.L.]

*Ju-ni-i First Class of the Imperial Order of the Sacred  
Treasure ; Minister of State for Foreign Affairs ; Plenipotentiary  
of His Majesty the Emperor of Japan.*

LI HUNG-CHANG [L.L.]

*Plenipotentiary of His Majesty the Emperor of China.  
Senator Tutor to the Heir Apparent ; Senator Grand Secretary of  
State ; Minister Superintendent of Trade for the Northern  
Ports of China ; Viceroy of the Province of Chihli  
and Earl of the First Rank.*

LI CHING-FONG,

*Plenipotentiary of His Majesty the Emperor of China.  
Ex-minister of the Diplomatic Service of the  
Second Official Rank.*

---

## APPENDIX B.

### JAPANESE TEXT OF THE WAR SONGS.

#### No 1.

#### UTE YA KORASE YA !

*Ute ya korase ya Seikoku wo! Sei wa mikuni no ada naru zo!  
Tōyō heiwa no ada naru zo! Uchite tadashiki kuni to seyo!  
Mikuni no kenri wo samataguru, Gōman burei no teki wo ute!  
Tōyō heiwa no gi wo shiranu, Mōmai gwanko no teki wo ute!  
Ute ya korase ya Seikoku wo! Ute ya korase ya Shina-hei wo!  
Mikuni ni hamukō Shina-hei wa, Mikuni no kōgi wo besshi suru,  
Seifu wo tasukuru jaku-hei zo!*

*Sono kazu ikani ōku tomo, Ōmune ugō no yakara nomi.  
Buki no katachi wa sorō tomo, Egakeru bijin ni kotonarazu.  
Hōtō-oki no kaisen ni, Kano gunkan wa kudaketari;  
Seikwan eki no rikusen ni, Kano guntai wa yaburetari.  
Kakumo kudakuru gunkan to, Kakumo yabururu guntai wa,  
Tatoe iku man aritote mo, Ikadeka ware ni atarubeki?  
Ute ya korase ya Shina-hei wo!*

#### No 1.

#### UTE YA KORASE YA !

*Allegro.*



## Chorus.

## No. 2.

## PEKIN MADE.

Shina mo mukashi wa seiken no, Oshie aritsuru kuni naredo,  
 Yo wo kae to shi wo furumama ni, Shidai ni kaika no atojisari.  
 Kuni wa Chūka to hokoredomo, Kokoro no yaban wa hanpirei.  
 Somo mōmai wo yaburazuba, Waga Tōyō no yo wa akeji.  
 Toki koso kitare, iza kitare! Toyo-saka noboru Hinohata wo;  
 Pekin no shiro ni oshitatete, Mumyō no yami wo terasu-beshi;  
 Kore zo nani ofu (ō) hinomoto no, Sumera Mikuni no tsutome naru,  
 Sumera mi-ikusa kisoi tsutsu, Susume ya susume, Pekin made!

## ON TO PEKING!

March.

The musical score is written in G major (one sharp) and 2/4 time. It consists of eight staves of music. The first four staves are marked with a forte (*f*) dynamic, and the last four staves are marked with fortissimo (*ff*). The melody is primarily composed of eighth and sixteenth notes, with various accents and dynamic markings throughout.

No. 3.

## MASURAO.

Waga masurao wa yama yukaba, Kusamusu kabane umi yukaba,  
 Mizuku kabane to mukashi yori, Chikaite Kuni ni tsukushikori.  
 Jinsei wazuka gojū nen, Inochi oshinite yorozu yo no,

*Na wo kegasu-beki koto ya aru, Iki aru kagiri susu miute!*  
*Kimi ni sasaguru inochi zo ya! Kuni no homare wo masumi zo ya!*  
*Teki no yadama wo se ni ōna! Omote wo mukete susumi yuke!*  
*Susumi susumite, kaerimizu! Taorete yamanu tamashii wa,*  
*Tōyō heiwa no shugo-jin to, Sue no yo kakete matsuraren.*  
*Susume ya, susume, masurao yo!*

## No. 3.

## THE HERO.

March



Chorns.



## No. 4.

## EIRYO.

*Satekono tabi no tata/ai wa, Tada Chōsen no tame narazu;*

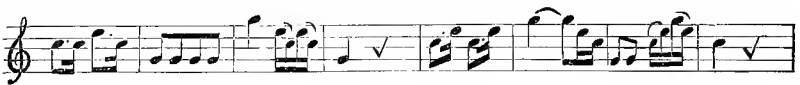
*Tōyō zento no anei wo, Hakarase tamō eiryō nari.*  
*Eiryō no hodo wo kashikomite, Kono mokuteki wo toguru made,*  
*Kimi no ontame Kuni no Tame! Heiwa no ada wo tairage yo!*  
*Gunki no moto wa Sumeragi no, Gyokuza no mae ni hitoshiki zo!*  
*Kenagi ni hataraki Eikan ni! Azukaru koto wo kokorogake!*  
*Mata jōkan no meirei wa, Kashikokoi Chokugo to fukijūshi.*  
*Suikwa no naka mo dangwan no, Ame ya arare mo itō nayo!*  
*Kono seishin dani tayumazuba, Ikanaru koto ka narazaran.*  
*Kogane no tobi mo kumoi yori, Kagayaku isao wo matsu naran.*  
*Toku-toku susumite, kō wo tate, Gaika wo sōshite kaeru-beshi!*  
*Tōyō heiwa no kiso wo tate, Eiryō wo yasunji tatemasure!*

## No. 4.

## THE IMPERIAL WILL.

The musical score consists of six staves of music. The first staff begins with a treble clef, a 2/4 time signature, and a key signature of one flat (B-flat). The melody is written in a simple, rhythmic style with eighth and sixteenth notes. The score concludes with a double bar line and a repeat sign.





---

## APPENDIX C.

---

### THE PORT ARTHUR STORY.

(Taken from the *New York Herald* of December 18th, 1894.)

WASHINGTON, DEC. 17.—Fuller information concerning the reported massacre of Chinese by the Japanese troops after the fall of Port Arthur was received by the Japanese Minister, Mr. Kurino, this morning from Mr. Mutsu, the Minister of Foreign Affairs at Tōkyō. Mr. Mutsu says in his dispatch that the Government is not yet in possession of all the facts about the alleged atrocities, but that many details have been ascertained. What is known to Mr. Mutsu, as stated in the cable message, follows :

Many of the Chinese soldiers at Port Arthur and from the outlying fortifications taken by the Japanese, discarded their uniforms, and it is now known that almost all of the Chinese in plain clothes who were killed there were soldiers in disguise. The inhabitants of Port Arthur quitted the place before the engagement. A few remained, however, having been armed under orders to resist the Japanese by firing on them. This they did, and in the confusion of the fight it was impossible to distinguish them from the Chinese soldiers.

The Japanese Army entering Port Arthur was greatly excited by the sight of the fearfully mutilated bodies of the Japanese prisoners, some of whom had been burned alive and some crucified. Notwithstanding this, the discipline of the army was maintained. A number of Chinese prisoners were taken and were kindly treated. The wounded (Chinese and Japanese) who could be moved are on their way to Tōkyō, and will arrive in a few days. Other information received at the Legation indicates that atrocities were perpetrated on Japanese prisoners at Port Arthur prior to the fall of that Chinese stronghold. It is said that not only were some of the Japanese captives crucified and others burned at the stake, but their dead bodies were so horribly treated that the tales of Indian massacres in the early days on the frontier pale in comparison.

Minister Kurino places no faith in the stories of a three days' butchery by the Japanese soldiers, and he thinks that the full details will show that women and children were not killed by his countrymen. In the absence of more explicit information, he accepts the official statement received to-day from Mr. Mutsu, believing that the investigation which is now going on will disclose that the supposed inhabitants who were killed were Chinese soldiers disguised as civilians, who resisted the Japanese, as Mr. Mutsu says, after the victorious troops had entered the town. At the most, he believes that nothing more will be shown than that some of the Japanese soldiers undertook, in their excitement over the spectacle of the mutilated bodies of their comrades, to revenge themselves on the Chinese soldiers with whom they had come in contact; but he is confident that if such a thing occurred it did not proceed to any greater length. So far as the reports of atrocities are concerned, a gentleman who is familiar with Chinese history said this morning that Chinese had never been invaded by a civilized nation without a great deal of butchery. The Allies, in 1868, and the English and the French, in their wars with China, had shown no quarter whatever.

No information has been received in Washington with regard to the report that Kang Chang has been appointed an Ambassador to negotiate for peace with the Tōkyō Government. Chang was a member of the Tsung-li Yamên, or Chinese Board of Foreign Affairs, but was dismissed at the beginning of the present hostilities for endeavoring to bring about a settlement of the Korean affairs. He is the head of a great Chinese family, a man of the highest ability, and has been spoken of as the successor of Li Hung-chang. It is stated at the Japanese Legation here that a better man could not have been selected for the delicate mission with which he is said to have been intrusted.

An official telegram was received by Miss Clara Barton, president of the American Red Cross Society, to-day from the Japanese Legation.

To correct erroneous statement that the Red Cross had been rejected by Japan, the Japanese Minister volunteered to ascertain the facts from his Government, and received the following message:—

*Tokyo, Dec. 16. 1894.*

KURINO, WASHINGTON :

Nov. 28 after the fall of Port Arthur, a Chinese steamer had some men on board, who stated that they belonged to a so-called private

Red Cross Society of Tientsin, and asked that the wounded Chinese should be delivered to them for treatment at Tientsin. They produced certification from Li Hung-chang and some of the foreign consuls. Our military authorities replied that, while they appreciated the philanthropic spirit which prompted this action, the Chinese wounded were prisoners of war, and could not be allowed to be taken to their own country, which was hostile to Japan, even though the request was made through the good offices of the consuls of neutral powers. They added that the Japanese field hospital would care for the wounded Chinese, for which course it had abundant facilities, and requested the Chinese vessel to leave the harbor within a specified time.

MURSU,

*Minister for Foreign Affairs.*

---

## APPENDIX D.

---

### THE EXTRAORDINARY SESSION OF THE IMPERIAL DIET.

NOT long after H.M. the Emperor had gone on to Hiroshima, an Imperial Edict was issued summoning an Extraordinary Session of the Imperial Diet, the Session to be held in Hiroshima on Oct. 19th, 1894. Despite the great distance of this city from Tōkyō, the members of both Houses made haste to assemble by the appointed day; for it was well known that the subject of the war-expenditure and the issue of the Domestic War Loan Bonds would be discussed.

On October 18th H. M. the Emperor opened the Session in person, repairing for that purpose to the large building temporarily chosen to represent the House of Parliament. The Speech from the Throne was read by the Minister President of State, and, in a few well-selected words, set forth the purpose of the Session and urged the members of both Houses to show their patriotic zeal in the nation's behalf. On the same day the Government Representatives gave each House a number of important subjects for immediate discussion; while the members of the Upper House answered in suitable and respectful terms to the Speech from the Throne. The next day Count Itō, Minister President of State, addressed the Upper House. He showed, in a most excellently prepared argument, how the declaration of war with China had been unavoidable, the diplomatic correspondence immediately preceding the outbreak of the War being laid on the table for the perusal of the members. Two or three very important propositions were finally brought before the members.

The Lower House replied on this day to the Speech from the Throne, the loyalty and devotion of the members to the Imperial Will being clearly set forth in the reply. The election of Committees was then proceeded to. On the following day the Upper House did not assemble, but the Lower House met at one o'clock in the afternoon.

Minister President Itō, with two other Ministers of State, was present, Mounting the rostrum, he made the following remarks:—

“Gentlemen: Since the commencement of the War, His Majesty the Emperor has been most concerned for the welfare and condition of the nation and its interests; and it is for this reason that His Majesty has come hither to Hiroshima. The present Extraordinary Session of the Imperial Diet has been summoned in order to discuss several matters of vital importance, bearing upon the War. Our soldiers have been successful at Sōnghwan and Phōngyang; our Navy has carried all before it in the Yellow Sea. You and I, gentlemen, must feel profoundly grateful to those who have so well fought the battles of Japan. At the same time we must make up our minds to carry this war to a successful issue, no matter how great the cost. I have already had laid on your desks the propositions I wish to have discussed. Gentlemen, you have listened to the Imperial words and commands. Now it is your duty to show your devotion and obedience, giving your whole strength to this. It is my earnest wish that you will do your bounden duty promptly, and that the interests of the Empire may not be jeopardised by any measures you take”.

At the conclusion of the Premier's remarks, several members expressed a desire for a Secret Session, with closed doors, as they wished to put some questions about the propositions laid before them. Others again opposed this idea. But Count Itō definitely put an end to the discussion by declaring that he did not intend to reply to questions concerning the War and the diplomatic matters connected therewith. This was, he declared, something quite beyond his powers.

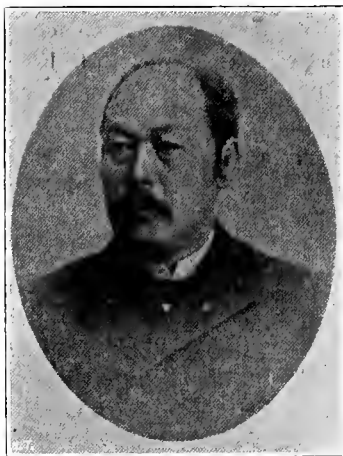
Mr. Watanabé Kunitaké, Minister of State for Finance, then mounted the rostrum and spoke to the subjoined effect:—

“Gentlemen: In obedience to the Imperial commands, I have had put before you certain propositions connected with the War Budget. You will acknowledge that the War was unavoidably declared, and



MR. WATANABÉ KUNITAKÉ,  
MINISTER OF FINANCE.

that we are justly waging it in order to establish the peace of the Orient. As a consequence, no matter how costly the War may prove, we may not withdraw until complete success has been achieved. In this we must, as always, uphold the dignity and honour of our country. Our forty million brethren have determined to do this, and indeed I need not say it to you, for there is none, I firmly believe, who does not share the same belief. With regard to the necessity for a large expenditure, I need not speak here: for you well know how and why it is that the money is demanded. I shall therefore not enter into particulars, but content myself with hoping that you will be very faithful, discuss the propositions with zeal, and pass your resolutions with promptitude and despatch. In this way I trust you will let the world know that, in the War with China, we are all actuated by the same spirit".



MR. KUSUMOTO MASATAKA.

On this some two or three members again attempted to put questions relating to the diplomatic management of the War; but the Premier still refusing to discuss such matters, the questions were not pressed by the members. The next thing was to discuss the main objects of the Extraordinary Session: the pecuniary management of the War, the Extraordinary Budget, and the raising of a Domestic

War Loan. These matters were entrusted for investigation to nine chosen committee-men and the Order of the Day was settled.

Later on Mr. Abé, Chairman of the Budget Committee, made the following report as the result of the Committee's labours:—"We have held meetings both yesterday and to-day. The proposition laid before us is a very simple one; yet as it concerns our achievement of a victory over China, we have investigated the matter with the utmost care. As diplomatic secrets are involved, we have had to hold secret consultations; and now I have to tell you that we are agreed in this matter. We, the members of the Committee, on the strength of the report made us, earnestly hope that the Budget will be passed at once; thus freeing H. M. the Emperor from anxiety on this score

(*applause*). Finally we trust that the discussion will be brought to a prompt conclusion and that every member, to the last man, will give his unqualified consent (*applause*)”.

Mr. Misaki Kamenosuké, a prominent Liberal, thereupon arose and said,—“As the War Budget has already been carefully scrutinised by the Committee, I move that it be adopted by an unanimous vote”.

There was no one who objected to this, and when Mr. Kusumoto Masataka, the President of the Lower House, rose to put the resolution, it was adopted unanimously with applause and loud cheers. After a little pause, the other Government bills were similarly passed without dissent.



MR. YOSHIKAWA AKIMASA.



MR. MATANO TAKU

On the 21st of the same month, the Upper House met, and the Government bills entrusted to a Committee of nine members nominated by the President, Marquis Hachisuka Mochi-aki. After a short interval, during which the Committee examined the bills, the House re-assembled at one p. m. Viscount Tani, Chairman of the Committee elect, then made a short report on the Extraordinary Budget connected with the prosecution of the War. “The Committee,” he explained, “are quite satisfied with the answers made our inquiries by the Government, and we have concluded to ad-

vises the adoption of the Budget. I hope, my Lords, that you will follow our lead.”

Marquis Daigo then rose and proposed that the vote should be unanimous and the Budget passed without discussion. This met



with the approval of all present, so that when the vote was put there was not one dissentient voice. Thereafter the bills relating to the pecuniary management of the War, the Special Expenditure, and the regulations affecting the floating of the Domestic War Loan, were passed without a word of dissent. It was no time to weigh pros and cons or to indulge in party-feeling; the glory of the Empire was at stake, and every member was inspired by the desire to drop all personal or partisan considerations in the nation's behalf. And so this Extraordinary Session of the Imperial Diet lasted no more than four days!



MARQUIS HACHISUKA MOCHI-AKI.

The closing ceremony was held on the following day. The members assembled at 11 a. m., the various Ministers of State—Counts Itō and Saigō, Messrs. Watanabé, Yoshikawa, etc., taking their official seats at the same time. Mr. Matano Taku, Secretary of the Imperial Household Department, then handed the Imperial Decree declaring the Session ended, to the Minister President, Count Itō. With a profound bow the Premier took the document, which he proceeded to read aloud in a clear, resonant voice.

Marquis Hachisuka then received the Decree, as President of the Upper House—and by 11.10 a. m. the Session was over.



TRIUMPHAL ARCH OF EVERGREENS.

## APPENDIX E.

### 1.—THE EMPEROR'S HOME COMING.

*(Adapted from the Japan Mail.)*

NEVER did Tôkyô wear a gayer appearance and never were all classes more thoroughly represented in the vast crowd that surged through the streets than on Thursday, May 30th, 1895, when His Majesty the Emperor, so long absent from his Imperial city, returned to the metropolis, crowned with the laurels of a victorious war. No matter how great the friction between political parties and the Cabinet, no matter how deep-seated the dissatisfaction on account of the inevitable retrocession of Manchuria, all hearts had ever shown unswerving loyalty, and prompt obedience to the Emperor's will. His Majesty's indefatigable labours, frugality, and actual discomfort while at Hiroshima, for so many months the Head-Quarters, had created a profound impression on the minds of the people, with whom "fidelity to the Imperial House" has ever proved a watchword potent to still all storms. The kindly interest expressed in the

welfare of those engaged in the War, the frequent visits to Hospitals and the sick and wounded, the numerous Imperial donations of those little comforts and luxuries that mean so much to the soldier or sailor far from his native land—all these things will remain indelibly impressed on the memory of the present generation and be the boast and pride of its descendants. The days to elapse before the Emperor's return had been eagerly counted, and as one postponement followed another the people's heart grew sick with hope deferred, and an ugly, though of course wholly baseless, rumour began to be circulated. Even when the *Official Gazette* announced that His Majesty would positively arrive in Tōkyō at 2 p. m. on the afternoon of May 30th, there were still many who doubted, or rather feared, that the date would again be postponed. But when the telegrams began to pour in telling of the Imperial progress from city to city and of the joyous enthusiasm of the people along the route, all doubt was removed; and so on this day all Tōkyō turned out to give the revered Sovereign a right imperial welcome-home.

The tone of the Japanese press at this time, may be seen from the following paragraph translated from the *Nichi Nichi Shimbun*:—“His Imperial Majesty has caused the national prestige to be enhanced not in the sphere of war alone, but also in that of foreign policy. While the war was still in progress, His Majesty elevated the position of the Empire among the nations of the world by causing to be exchanged new treaties with England and the United States, while those with Italy and Belgium have also received the signatures of the respective Plenipotentiaries. More than this, His August Majesty has been pleased to complete successfully the exchange of the ratifications of the Peace Treaty with the Emperor of China. With respect to the friendly advice of the three Powers, His Majesty, on the one hand, caused his Ministers to pursue a course consistent alike with honour and with peace; while, on the other, he displayed great wisdom in preventing other Powers from interfering with the settlement of the issues between Japan and China. In this way, a national disgrace has been avoided, while, at the same time, an opportunity has been given to the nation for nourishing its resources. In short, His Majesty's object is unquestionably to bid the nation be united and wait for a future opportunity. It is our earnest hope that our countrymen will lay to their hearts the instruction contained in the four Imperial Rescripts, and by strengthening the foundations of the Empire strive to repay a ten-thousandth part of the great obligations they

owe to their illustrious Sovereign. May His Majesty's life be preserved for years without number."

There were triumphal arches erected along the broad avenue leading past the Houses of Parliament (*Saiwai-chō*), at Shimbashi, and facing the Sakurada Gate, constructed by the municipality of Tōkyō. Work was not finished on these striking and gigantic structures until late on Wednesday afternoon (May 29th), but everything was in readiness early Thursday morning, the finishing touches being given shortly after daybreak. Long before 10 in the forenoon, the route to be followed by the Imperial cortège was packed close on either side with a mighty concourse of people. All traffic was suspended for several hours before the appointed time, and the streets were patrolled by hundreds of gendarmes and police-constables. The weather was everything that could be desired, though somewhat too hot for comfort. A strong breeze did spring up a little before noon, but this was provocative of one of those dust-storms for which Tōkyō is unfortunately famous. Nearly every avenue leading to Shimbashi was densely crowded with people, dressed in their best, all desirous of seeing the Imperial cortège. But the throng was so great and the eagerness of the people so intense to get as near as possible to their goal that the united strength of the police and gendarmes proved, in most cases, powerless to keep more than a small avenue open. Noblemen jostled with commoners, and lackeys from the Palace shouldered past simple country folk that had come up to the city to catch a glimpse, even if a distant one, of their victorious Emperor. About noon the main avenues about the Shimbashi terminus were closed to further passage, except in the case of officials. No trams were running, and the vast multitudes near the station preserved a decorous silence as impressive as it was unusual. Lining the canal, and either side of Shimbashi the throng was tremendous, the police often being compelled to strike with their scabbards or the flat of their swords. The four or five front rows of onlookers were made to crouch on the ground, so that the less fortunate behind them might get a chance to see what was going on; and it must be said that most exemplary patience was exhibited on the part of the constabulary. At half-past one the space about the station presented a most striking picture, with the Imperial carriage all red and gold, drawn up before the exit, and mounted Lancers waiting in serried ranks for the signal that the train was sighted. The great arch just in front of the station was very

imposing ; on either side waited the Guard of Honour, and in the rear of the troopers were the carriages of those who were to follow in the cortège. To the left stood another vast multitude of people, who had taken this position of vantage and waited patiently there since early in the morning. Inside, the station was no longer the somewhat dingy place it generally is. All the pillars and cornices were wreathed in evergreens, mingled with pinks and roses, nasturtiums and jasmines, while the ceilings and walls were hung with curtains of crimson, white and purple, and hundreds of flags. To the right, and in the waiting rooms were the Members of the two Houses of Parliament, all the Cabinet Ministers in Tōkyō and members of the Privy Council ; while the platform was taken up by other high dignitaries of State, the *personnel* of the Imperial Household, and the Kyōdōdan Band, in gala uniform. Elsewhere were officers of rank belonging to both Army and Navy, and members of the Tōkyō Municipality, headed by Mayor Kimura. The utmost decorum reigned, through every one was visibly in a fever of expectation. At last the long-expected train, consisting of the Imperial car, eight or nine first-class carriages and two baggage-vans, drew slowly into sight. In the train were Staff Officers Noda, Ishiguro, and Terauchi ; Chief of the Railway Bureau, Mr. Matsumoto ; T. I. H. Princes Komatsu and Kan-in ; Generals Yamagata, Oyama, Nozu, Kawakami ; Ministers of State Itō, Saigō, Hijikata ; Vice-Admiral Itō, etc. etc. As it entered the station the band struck the solemnly impressive strains of the national anthem, which had an instant echo in the loudly audible stir and bustle outside. The engine drawing the train bore the Imperial crest on either side, while the whole fore part was decorated most prettily with evergreens. Just in front of the boiler a dwarfish pine had been affixed, and on one of its branches was perched a hawk, stuffed so as to appear as if just alighting. The Imperial and national flags were crossed behind the pine, while the naval and military flags were displayed at the rear of the engine. Every head was bared as the train drew slowly up, the music of the band enhancing the charm of the whole scene. After a few minor functionaries had alighted, the Premier, Count Itō, appeared, and following him came T. I. H. Princes Komatsu and Kan-in, and then H. M. the Emperor, dressed in an unostentatious military uniform and looking unusually well. His Majesty walked with a brisk step, preceded by Masters of Ceremonies Itō Yukichi, and Niwa Ryonosuke ; and was immediately followed by Counts Yamagata, Saigō and Ōyama, the last

named in particular beaming with friendly smiles. Viscount Hijikata, General Nozu, Vice-Admiral Itō, and nearly a dozen Chamberlains brought up the rear, with a score or two of other notables. The Imperial State Carriage was at once entered, His Majesty responding as he passed out of the station to the profound salutations of the assembled dignitaries. As His Majesty entered the carriage the band stationed outside began playing the national anthem, and every head was bared reverential salutation. The stillness of the whole was remarkable: the feeling of the people was evidently too deep for words. But as the cortège began to move, the pent-up excitement of the multitudes manifested itself in waving hats and handkerchiefs, and before the bridge was reaching the whole concourse was rending the air with cheer upon cheer, stirring cries of *Tennō Heika Banzai!* *Teikoku Banzai!* coming from tens of thousands of patriotic throats with a thunderous roar such as Tōkyō had never heard before.

Another great outburst of enthusiasm occurred as the Imperial Cortège passed the Rokumei-kan—where there was a fine floral display with a suitable inscription—and entered the evergreen arch upon which so many time and labour had been expended. In the open space before the Nijū-bashi and the Imperial Household Department day fireworks had been going up for a long time, and as the cortège entered the broad sweep leading to the historic bridge, sheaf after sheaf of rockets filled the air with fantastic smoke, balloons, and symbolic paper figures. The embankment here was packed with



COUNT HIGASHI-KUZE.

human beings, and the wonder is that there was so little injury done: for in such crowds the sentiment of selfishness is predominant and there is very little of that fellow-feeling supposed to make men "wondrous kind." Inside the station, waiting to meet and greet the Emperor, besides those already enumerated, had been H. I. H. Prince Arisugawa Takehito; Count Kuroda, President of the Privy Council; Viscount Enomoto; Count Higashi-kuze, Vice-President of the Privy Council; President of the Supreme

Court, Miyoshi Taizo ; Generals Kurokawa and Yamaji ; Officials of the Imperial Household, the Army and Navy Departments ; Princes Kono-e, Nijo and Tokugawa ; Marquises Hachisuka, Daigo and Tokugawa ; Counts Goto, Ogi, and many others of the highest rank.

The Imperial Cortège was formed as follows :—

- (1) Mounted Police Inspectors.
- (2) Squadron of the Imperial Cavalry Guard.
- (3) Masters of the Ceremonies Itō and Niwa ; Vice-Graud Master of Ceremonies Sannomiya ; and Viscount Hijikata, Minister of the Imperial Household. All in open carriages.
- (4) Cavalry Guard.
- (5) Grooms, outriders, etc., attendant upon the Imperial Coach of State.
- (6) The Imperial Carriage, surrounded by mounted Chamberlains ;
- (7) T. I. H. Komatsu Akihito and Kan-in Kotohito ; Minister President Count Itō Hirobumi, Minister for War Count Ōyama ; Military Inspector General Count Yamagata ; Lieut.-General Nozu ; Commander-in-chief of the Navy, Vice-Admiral Ito ; Vice-President of the Central Staff, Lieut.-General Kawakami ; Chief of the Inner Palace, Yamaguchi ; Court Physician Dr. Ikeda ; Secretary of the Imperial Household, Matano ; Private Secretary to the Minister of the Imperial Household, Nagasaki ; Private Secretary to the Minister of Home Affairs, Sakurai—and many others, all in open carriages.



MR. ITŌ YUKICHI.

- (8) Two Court and two Military Chamberlains with seven Adjutants, all in carriages.
- (9) Rear Guard of Cavalry and Mounted Police Inspectors.

Along the south side of the Hibiya Parade Ground—now nearly covered with official buildings of imposing architecture—were assembled the officials of the Tōkyō Municipal office, the District or Ward officers, and members of the Red Cross Society. Here there were two triumphal arches. The larger of these was over 300 feet long and more than 100 feet high. The approaches were shaped like huge

gates, 40 feet high by 20 broad, a 33 foot gallery connecting these with the main arches. On the tops were electric lights of 1200 candle-power, surrounded by Bengal lights. Flags and banners were floating everywhere. Some bore the inscription "Honour to the Imperial Dignity," others, "Enlightenment of the Nation." These lovely arches had been built by private subscription, the Government having nothing to do with the matter.

All along the route were various corporations and guilds, dressed in gala costume and bearing flags with patriotic inscriptions; nearly all the schools of the metropolis, public as well as private, were represented, particularly noticeable being the elegantly dressed pupils of the Nobles' Girls School and the Female Normal School, besides deputations from the various metropolitan clubs and exchanges. Indeed all Tōkyō was *en fête*. Most attractive were the decorations along Ginza, the approach to which showed two huge flags mounted on tall crossed poles surmounted with great gilt balls. Another gaily decorated place was the 119th National Bank, from the windows and roof of which thousands of lanterns were suspended. The lanterns bore the Imperial and national standards on a white ground, the front being inscribed with ideographs reading *Teikoku Banzai*. Numerous parasols also, pretty though very flimsy, were modelled after the Imperial Standard, with a border of naval and military insignia. Going up Ginza and toward Nihombashi, the scene was striking, all the houses displaying flags and lanterns in every available place. Some of the flags were of exceptional beauty: gold brocade, or hand-painted on satin, with huge tassels of gold cord. It was evident that the people had entered heart and soul into the occasion. Everything was practically over by three o'clock in the afternoon, as the Imperial train had arrived promptly on time. But the people had evidently resolved to make the whole day a holiday and so the streets were filled with the crowds until long after dark. Fireworks were let off opposite the Imperial Palace until after nine p. m. On the whole, the day was most memorable, and the home-coming of His Majesty the Emperor was celebrated in a manner worthy of the occasion. We may add that the enthusiasm of the crowds was not evoked by the passage of the Emperor only. Field-Marshal Yamagata and Ōyama, Count Itō, and Viscount Mutsu also received ovations at various points.

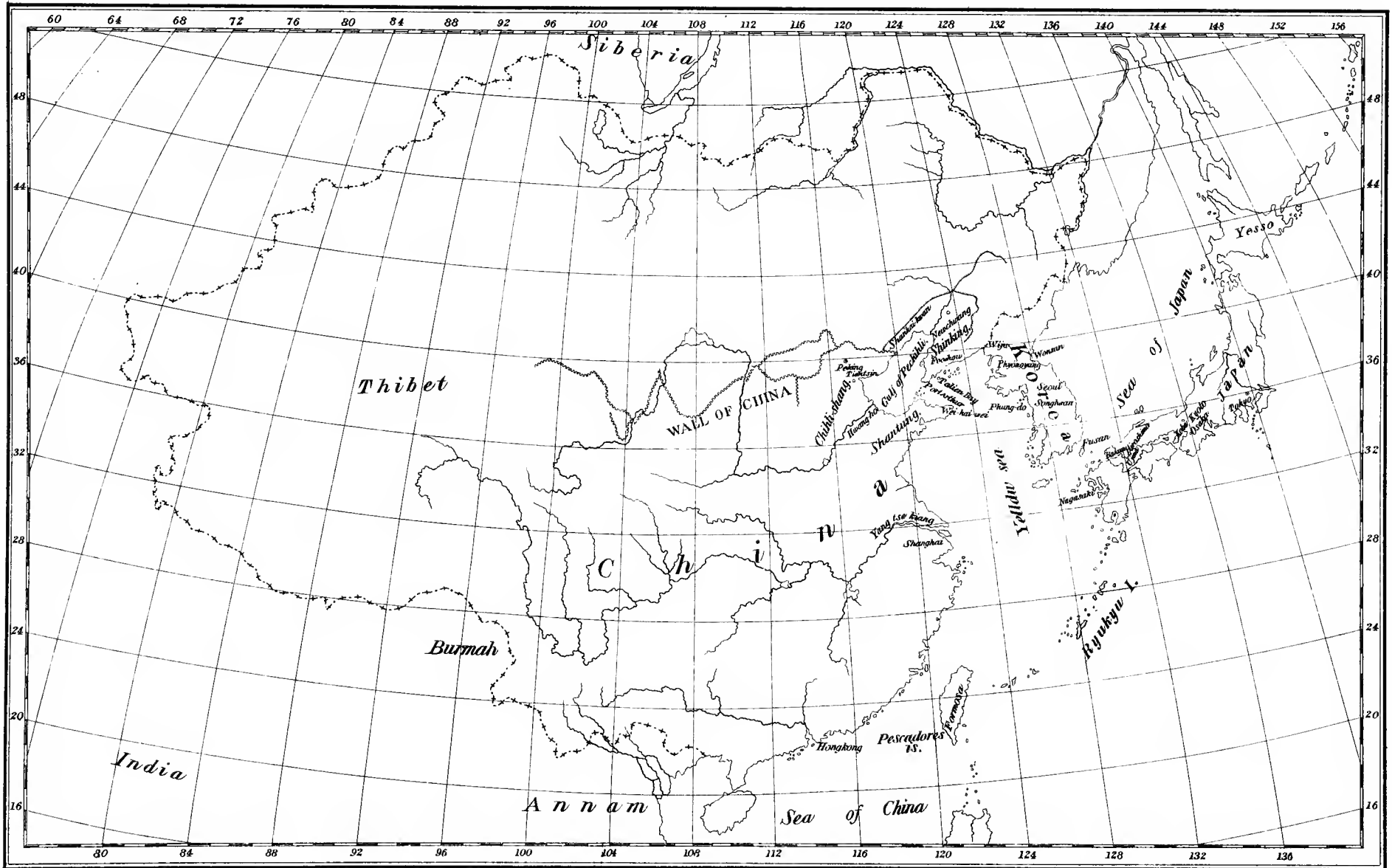
---



## 2.—RETURN OF H. M. THE EMPRESS TO TOKYO.

HER MAJESTY the Empress returned on May 31st to Tōkyō, following the same route and arriving at the same time as His Majesty the Emperor on the preceeding day. The streets were again crowded and the greatest enthusiasm prevailed, the progress of the Imperial cortège from Shimbashi to the Palace being greeted everywhere with tumultuous cheers. It is noticeable that then for the first time had Japanese crowds begun to open their lungs as the Sovereign passed. The most complete silence, decorous and reverential, used invariably to be preserved, but bursts of cheering have at length become the rule. "Banzai" is an excellent form of shout. It has a fine full sound, and a man finds no difficulty in putting his whole voice into it. But though the people have readily adopted this innovation from the West, the Emperor and Empress retain the traditional attitude of dignified calm. Throughout the drive from the train to the Palace, each of the Imperial personages, obeying the same rule, gazed steadily at the line of troops presenting arms, and took not the slightest ostensible notice of the cheering crowds. The dominant colour of the Empress' costume was mauve—an essentially gay costume well suited to the occasion. Several carriages of Chamberlains then came, Count Kuroda following last of all in a most unassuming carriage. Count Itō sat on the front seat of one of the Court carriages, facing two ladies-in-waiting, with whom the Premier kept up a laughing conversation, as though the whole pageant were a pleasant picnic winding up an interval of holidays. On the nights of the 30th and 31st alike Tōkyō was illuminated, but the former day was differentiated from the latter by a magnificent display of fireworks.

---



Map I.

JAPAN AND CHINA.



Map II.

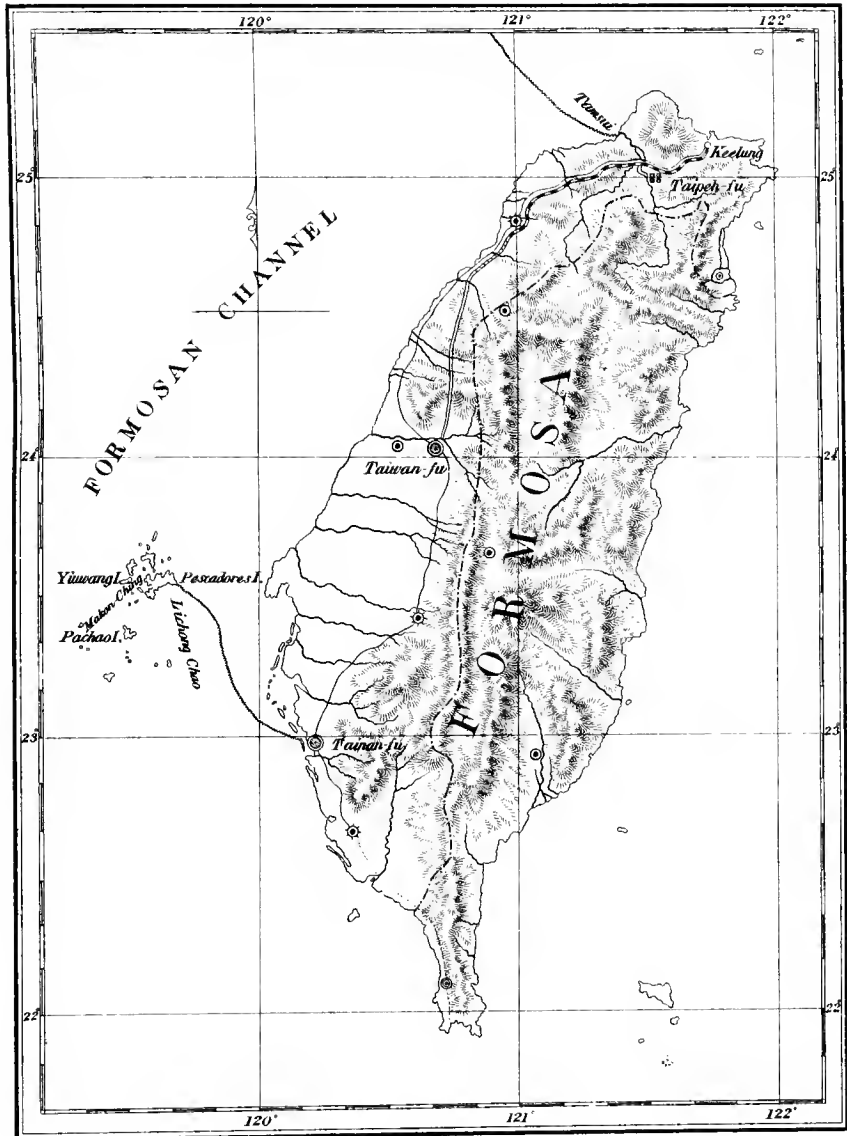
KOREA.



Map III.

SHINKING (FENG TIEN).





Map V.

FORMOSA.